THE FIRST Tome of the Palace of Pleasure contayning store of goodlye Histories, Tragical matters, & other Morall argumentes, very requisite for delight and profyte.

Chosẽ and selected out

of diuers good and commendable Authors, and now once agayn corrected and encreased.

By VViliam Painter, Clerke of the *Ordinance and Armarie.*

Imprinted at *L*ondon
In Fleatstrete by Thomas
MARSHE.

1575

To the Reader.

NOthing in mine opinion can be more acceptable vnto thee (friendly Reader) then oft reading and perusing of varietie of Hystories, which as they be for diuersitie of matter pleasaunt and plausible, euen so for example and imitatiou good and commendable. The one doth reioyce the werie and tedious minde, many times inuolued with ordinarie cares, the other prescribeth a directe pathe to treade the tracte of this present life. VVherefore if in these newes or nouelles here presented, there do appeare any thing worthy of regarde, giue thankes to the noble Gentleman to whoune this booke is dedicated, for whose sake onely, that paine (if any seme to bee) was wholy imployed. Inioy therefore with him this present booke, and curteously with frendly talke report the same, for if otherwise thou do abuse it, the blame shal light on thee, and not on me, which only of good will did meane it first. But yet if blaming tongues and vnstayed heades, wil nedes be busy, they shal sustain the shame, for that they haue not yet shewen forth any blameless dede to like effect, as this is ment of me, vvhich when they do, no blame but prayse they can receiue. For prayse be they vvell vvorthy for to haue vvhich in vvell doing do contende. No vertuous dede, or zelous worke can want due prayse of the honest, though faulting fooles and youthly heades full ofte do chaunt the faultles checke, that Momus mouth did once finde out in Venus slipper. And yet from faultes I wyll not purge the same, but whatsoeuer they seme to be, they be in nũber ne yet in substaunce such, but that thy curteous dealing may sone amende them or forget them. VVherefore to giue thee full aduertisement of the whole collection of these nouels, vnderstande that sixe of them haue I selected out of Titus Liuius, two out of Herodotus, certayn out of Aelianus, Xenophon, Aulus Gellius, Plutarche, and other like approued authors. Other Nouels haue I adioyned, chosen out of diuers Ita-

diuers Italian and Frenche wryters. VVherein I confeſſe my ſelfe not to be ſo well trayned, peraduenture as the fine heads of ſuche trauailers would deſire And yet I truſt ſufficiently to expreſſe the ſenſe, of euerye of the ſame. Certaine haue I culled out of the Decamerone of Giouan Boccaccio, wherin be conteined one hundred Nouelles, amonges whiche there be ſome (in my iudgement) that be worthy to be condempned to perpetual priſon, but of them ſuch haue I redemed to the libertie of our vulgar, as may be beſt liked, and better ſuffered. Although the ſixt part of the ſame hundreth may full well be permitted. And as I my ſelfe haue already done many other of the ſame worke yet for this preſēt I haue thought good to publiſh only tenne in number, the reſte I haue referred to them that be able with better ſtile to expreſſe the authours eloquence, or vntil I adioyne to this another tome, if none other in the meane time do preuent me, which with all my heart I wiſhe and deſire: becauſe the workes of Boccaccio for his ſtile, order of writing, grauitie, and ſententious diſcourſe, is worthy of intire prouulgation. Out of Bandello I haue ſelected ſeuē, choſing rather to follow Launay and Belleforeſt the French Tranſlatours, than the barren ſoile of his own vain, who being a Lombard, doth frankly confeſſe him ſelfe to be no fine Florētine, or trimme Thoſcane, as eloquēt and gētle Boccaccio was. Diuers other alſo be extracted out of other Italian and French authours. All which (I truſte) be both profitable and pleaſaunt, and wil be liked of the indifferent Reader. Profitable they be, in that they diſcloſe what glorie, honour, and prefermēt eche mā attaineth by good deſert, what felicitie, by honeſt attēpts, vvhat good ſucceſſe, laudable enterpriſes do bring to the coragious, vvhat happy ioy and quiet ſtate godly loue doth affecte the imbracers of the ſame. Profitable I ſay, in that they do reueale the miſeries of rapes and fleſhly actiōs, the ouerthrovv of noble mē and Princes by diſordred gouernmēt, the tragical ends of thē that vnhappely do attēpt practiſes vicious and horrible. vvilt thou learne hovv to behaue thy ſelf with modeſtie after thou haſt

atchieued

atchieued any victorious conqueſt, and not to forget thy proſperous fortune amyd thy glorious triumphe, by committing a facte vnworthy of thy valiaunce: reade the firſte Nouel of the fortunate Romane Horatius? VVilt thou vnderſtande what diſhonour and infamie, deſire of libidinous luſt doth bring, read the rape of Lucrece? VVilt thou know what an vnkinde part it is vnnaturally to abuſe the ſtate of thine own coūtrie, reade Martius Coriolanus? VVilt thou learne what fruite is reaped of wicked luſte, to diſpoyle virgins and maydens of their greateſt vertue, ſee the hyſtorie of Appius Claudius and ſir Didaco the Spaniſh knight? Deſireſt thou to knowe howe cloſely thou oughteſt to keepe the ſecrets of honorable mariage, peruſe the hiſtory of Candaules? Doſt thou couet to be aduertiſed what is true felicitie, reade of kyng Cræſus and the wyſe man Solon? Hath the Lady, Gentlewoman, or other of the feminine kinde a deſire to beholde a mirrour of chaſtitie, let theim reade ouer the Nouelles of the Lady Panthea, of the Ducheſſe of Sauoy, of the Counteſſe of Salesburie, of Amadour and Florinda? Is the nobleman affected to vnderſtand what happy end, the vertue of Loyaltie and fidelitie doth conduce, the Earle of Angiers may be to him a right good example? VVill Gentlemen learne howe to proſecute vertue, and to profligat frō their minde, diſordinate Loue, and affection, I referre theim to the Hiſtorie of Tancredi, and to Galgano of Siena? Is not the marchaunt contented with his goodes already gottē, but will needes go ſeeke ſome other trade, let him note and conſider the daungers wherein the Aduenturer Landolpho was? Is he diſpoſed to ſende his factor beyonde the ſeas, about his affaires, let him firſt bidde him to peruſe Andreuccio, and thē commaunde him to beware of Madame Floredelice? If the yeoman intendeth to be carefull of his buſineſſe, meaning to reape that he hath ſowen in due time, let him take hede howe he repoſe any truſt in friendes and kinſmē, leaſt in haruеſt he be deceiued, which Æſopes larke doth pretely note. If the artificer will not faithfully deale according to the truſte repoſed in him,

meete it is) inferiour perſones, eche one vouchſafing to tell what hee vvas, in the tranſitorie trade of preſent life.

VVherefore accepte the ſame in gratefull vviſe, and thinke vpon the mynde of him that did the ſame, vvhich fraughted is vvith no leſſe plentie of good vvill, then the coafers of Kyng Cræſus vvere, vvith ſtore of vvorldlye pelfe. Fare vvell.

THE PALACE of Pleasure.

¶ The Romaines and the Albanes being at warres, for iniuries mutually inferred, Metius Suffetius, the Albane Captaine deuised a waye by a combate, to ioygne bothe the Cities in one. Victorie falling to the Romaines, the Romaine victor killed his sister, and vvas condemned to die. Aftervvardes vpon his fathers sute he vvas deliuered.

The first Nouell.

AS THE NAME OF PALACE, doth carie a port of Maiestie, as proper for Princes and greatest Estates. And as a Palace & Court by glorious viewe of loftie Towers, doe set forth an outwarde showe of great magnificence. And as that glittering sight without, importeth a braver pompe and state within, whose worthiest furniture (besides the golden and curious ornamentes) resteth in the Princely train of courtly personages, most cõmunely indowed with Natures comeliest benefites, and rarest giftes, incident to earthly Goddes, as well for the mindes qualities, as for ỹ bodies acts: So here at our first entrie, I thought to staye, as it were at the Gate of this Palace, to discouer the incountrie of sixe renowmed Gentlemẽ, brethren of equal numbre, that by consent of either State, fought and vsed dedes of Armes, not for sportes of Ladies, or for pre-

cious pryses, but for Countrie quarell and libertie of Natiue soyle. For the vpper hand & vniting two most mighty Italian citics, that before bare eche other moste mortall spite and deadlye foode, whiche in ende after the bloudie skirmishe of those chosen brethren, (for sauing of a bloudier battell) were conioyned, in vnited Monarchie. An history though dreadfull to hearing, as fitter for the Campe then Courte, yet for the worthinesse of the quarell, not to bee shunned from tenderest eares, for that it spreadeth foorth a victorious paterne of valiant chiualrie. And so do the rest succeding, which speake of glorious chastitie of inuincible mindes, of bold aduentures for Countries sauletie, of naturall pietie in parentes and children, and the othe of other honorable causes, fitte to be displaied to eche degree, & practised by such, whose functions, principally do, or ought to aspire semblable valiaunce, for defence of that whiche their Elders, by bloudie swette haue honorably gotten, & most carefully kept. But not by tedious proeme to holde ỹ desirous minde from what is promised, thus it beginneth.

Numa Pompilius the second king of the Romaines being dead, Tullus Hostilius succeded, which was a lustie & couragious younge Gentleman: And as Numa was giuẽ to peace, so was he to warres and valiance. It chaunced in his time that certaine peasauntes of the Romaine ditiõ, and the like of the Albanes, were forraging and driuing of booties the one frõ the other. At that time raigned in Alba one C. Cluilius. From whence and from Rome Ambassadours were sent to redemaunde thinges stollen. Tullus commaunded his people that they should deliuer nothing till commaundement were giuen in that behalfe: for thau he knewe right well that the Alban king would not restore at all, and therfore might vpon iust cause, proclaime warres. Hee receiued the Alban Ambassadours in verie courteous manner, and they as courteously celebrated his honourable and sumptuous intertaignement. Amitie proceded on

ceded on either parties, till ꝑ Romanes began to demaũde the first restitution: which the Albanes denied, and summoned warres to bee inferred vppon them within thirtie daies after. Whereupon the Ambassadours craued licence of Tullus to speake, which being graunted, they first purged themselues by ignorannce, that they knewe no harme or iniurie done to the Romaines, adding further, that if any thing were done that should not please Tullus, it was against their willes, hoping he would remember that they were but Ambassadours, subiect to the commaundement of their Prince. Their comming was to demaunde a restitution, without whiche, they were straightlye charged to proclayme defiaunce. Wherunto Tullus aunswered. Tell your maister, that the king of the Romanes doth call the Gods to witnes, whether of them first maketh the quarel, to thintent all mẽ may expect the reuẽge of those warres. Which answere the Albane Ambassadours retourned to their maister. Great prouision for the warres was made on both partes, much like to a ciuile contention, almost betwene the father and the sonne. For the citie of Lauinium was builded by the Troians, and Alba by the Lauinians, of whose stocke the Romaines toke their beginning. The Albanes seing that they were defied of the Romaines, began first to enter in Armes, & with a maine power perced the land of ꝑ Romaines, and emcamped within fiue miles of ꝑ citie, enuironing their campe with a trenche, which afterwardes was called Fossa Cluilia, of their capitaine, wherin Cluilius the king died. Then the Albanes appointed one Metius Suffetius, to be their Dictator. Tullus vnderstanding the death of their Prince, with great expedition marched into the countrie about Alba, passing by the Albanes campe in the night, which by the watche and scoutes was skried. Then he retired, to lodge as nere the enemy as hee could, sending an Ambassadour before, to require Tullus that he would come to Parle before they fought, and than

he had a thing to saye, no lesse profitable to the Romaines, then to the Albanes. Tullus not contempning that condition, agreed. Whereupon both did put them selues in readines, & before they ioyned, both the captaines with certain of their chiefe officers, came forth to talke, where Metius sayde these wordes. The mutuall iniuries that hath been done, and the withholding and keping of thinges caried away, contrary to the truce: and that our king Cluilius, is the authour and beginner of these warres, I do heare and assuredly vnderstande for a trothe. And I do not doubte, Tullus, but thou also doest conceiue the same, to be the only occasion of this hostilitie. Notwithstandinge, if I may speake rather the truthe, then vtter any glosing woordes by waye of flatterie, the ambicious desire of both the Empires, doth moste of all stimulate and prouoke both the cities, being of one affinitie, and neighbours, to vse this force of Armes. But whether this my coniecture bee righte or wrong, they oughte to consider, whiche firste began the warres. The Albanes haue created me their Cap aine, of this enterprise. I come to geue aduertisement to thee, O Tullus, of this one thing. Which is, that the Thuscans being a great nation, and of power right famous, doth enuirone vs both rounde about, and the nerer they be vnto you, the more knowledge you haue of them. They be mightie vpon lande, and of great power vpon Sea. Call to thy remembraunce and consider, that when thou geuest the signe and watch worde of the battell, our twoo armies shall bee but a ridiculous spectacle to them. So sone as they doe perceiue vs twoo to bee spent, and weried with fighting, they will bothe assayle the vanquished, and him also that doeth ouercome. Wherefore if the Goddes do fauour eyther of vs, let vs not shewe our selues to bee wearie of our libertie and franchise that is certaine, and hazard the dice to incurre perpetuall seruitude and bondage. Therfore let vs deuise some other waye, whereby the one of vs may gouerne

uerne the other without effusion of eithers bloud.

This condition nothing displeased Tullus, although in courage, & hope of victorie, he was more fierce and bolder then the other. And being in consultation about the purpose, fortune ministred an apt occasion to them both: for in either campes there were three brethren, of age and valiãce semblable. The brethren that were in the Romaine campe were called Horatij, the other Curiatij. Whereupon a cõbate was thought meete betwene these sixe persones. After the Romaines had vsed their solempne maners of cõsecrating the truces, and other rites concerning the same, either partes repaired to the cõbate. Both the armies stode in readines before their cãpes, rather voyde of present perill then of care: for the state of either of their Empires, cõsisted in the valiance & fortune of a fewe. Wherfore theire mindes were wonderfullye bent & incensed vpon that vnpleasant sight. The signe of the cõbat was giuen. The three yonge men of either side do ioigne with furious & cruel onset, representing the courages of two battelles of puissaunt armies. For the losse consisted in neither those three, but ỹ publique gouernement or common thraldome of both the cities, & that was the future fortune, whiche they did trie & proue. So sone as the clashing armoure did sound at their first incountrie, and their glittering swordes did shine, an incredible horror and feare perced the beholders, & hope inclining to either partes, their voyce and myndes were whist and silent. But after they were closed together, not onely the mouing of their bodies, and doubtfull welding and handling of their weapons, but bloudye woundes appeared, two of ỹ Romaines falling downe starke dead one vppon an other: But before the three Albanes were sore hurt. Whereat the Albane hoste shouted for ioye. The Romaine Legions were voyde of hope, amazed to see but one, remayne against three: It chaunced that hee that lyued whyche as hee was but one alone, an vnmeete

matche for the rest) so he was fierce, and thought himselfe good enough for them all. Therefore to separate their fight, he flede backe, meaning thereby to geue euery of thē their welcome as they followed. When he was retired a good space from the place wher they fought, loking back, he sawe them followe some distāce one from an other, and as one of them approched, he let driue at him with great violence. And whiles the Albane hoste cried out vpon the Curiatij, to helpe their brother, Horatius had killed his enemie, and demaunded for the seconde battaile. Then the Romaines incouraged their champiō with acclamatiōs & shoutes, as fearefull men be wont to do vpon the sodaine, and Horatius spedeth himselfe to the fight. And before the other could ouertake him, which was not farre of, hee had killed an other of the Curiatij. Nowe were they equally matched one to one, but in hope and strengthe vnlike. For the one was free of wounde or hurte: cruell and fierce by reason of double victorie, the other faint for losse of bloud, and wearie of running, and who with panting breath, discomfited for his brethrens slaughter, slaine before him, is now obiected to fight with his victorious enemy. A match altogether vnequall. Horatius reioysing sayd, two of thy brethren I haue dispatched, the thirde, the cause of this battaill, I will take in hand: that the Romaines maye bee lordes of the Albanes. Curiatius not able to sustaine his blowe, fell downe, and lying vpon his backe, he thrust him into the throte with his sworde, whiche done he dispoyled him of his armure. Then the Romaines in great triumphe and reioyse intertaigned Horatius, and their ioye was the greater, for that the feare of their ouerthrowe was the nearer. This combate being ended, the Albanes became subiecte to the Romaines, and before Metius departed, he asked Tullus if hee would commaunde him any further seruice. Who willed him to keepe the younge souldiours still in intertaignement, for that he would require their

aide against the Veientes. The Armie dissolued, Horatius like a Conquerour marched home to Rome, the three spoyles of his ennemies being borne before hym.

The said Horatius had a sister, which was espoused to one of the Curiatij that were slaine, who meeting her brother in the triumphe, at one of the gates called Capena, and knowing the Coate armure of her paramour, borne vpon her brothers shoulders, which she had wrought and made with her owne handes: She tore and rent the heare of her heade, and most pitiously bewayled the death of her beloued. Her brother being in the pride of his victorie taking the lamentation of his sister, in disdainful part, drew oute his sword, and thruste her through speaking these reprochfull woordes: Auaunt with thy vnreasonable loue, gette thee to thy spouse. Hast thou forgotten the death of thy two brethren that be slaine, the prosperous successe of thy victorious brother, and chiefelye the happye deliueraunce of thy countrie: Let that Romaine woman whatsoeuer she be, take like rewarde, that shall bewaile the death of the ennemie. Which horrible facte seemed most cruell to the fathers and people. For which offence he was brought before the kinge, whom he deliuered to be iudged according to the lawe. The law condempned him. Then he appealed to the people. In which appeale P. Horatius his father spake these woordes: My doughter is slaine, not without iust desert, which if it were not so, I would haue sued for condigne punishmente, to be executed vpon my sonne, according to the naturall pietie of a father. Wherfore I beseech you do not suffer me, whom you haue seene in time past, beautified with a noble race and progenie of children, nowe to be vtterlye destitute and voyde of all together. Then hee embraced his sonne amonges them all, and shewed the spoiles of the Curatiens, sayinge: Can you abide to see this noble Champion (O ye Romaines) whom lately ye behelde to go in order of triumphe in victorious ma-

ner, to

ner, to lye nowe bounde vnder the gibet, expecting for tormentes of death: Which cruell and deformed sight, the Albanes eyes can not well be able to beholde, goe to then thou hangman, and binde the handes of him, who hath atchieued to the Romaine people a glorious Empyre: Goe I saye and couer the face of him that hath deliuered this citie out of thraldome and bondage. Hang him vpon some vnhappie tree, and scourge him in some place within the Citie, either amongs these our triumphes, where the spoiles of our enemies do remaine, or els without the walles, amonges the graues of the vanquished. Whether can yee deuise to carrie him, but that his honourable and worthye actes, shal reueng the villanie of his cruel death. The people hearing the lamentable talke of his father, and seinge in him an vnmoueable minde, able to sustaine al aduersity, acquited him rather through the admiratiō of his vertue & valiance, then by iustice & equity of his cause. Such was the straite order of iustice amonges the Romaines, who although this yonge gentleman had vindicated his countrie from seruitude and bondage (a noble memorye of perfecte manhode) yet by reason of the murder done vppon his owne sister, were very straite and slacke to pardon: because they would not incourage the posteritie to like inconuenience, nor prouoke wel doers in their glorye and triumphe, to perpetrate thinges vnlawfull.

Sextus Tar-

¶ Sextus Tarquinius rauiſhed Lucrece. And ſhe bewayling the loſſe of her chaſtitie, killed her ſelfe.

The ſecond Nouell.



Great preparatiõ was made by the Romaines, againſt a people called Rutuli, who had a citie named Ardea, excelling in wealth and riches which was the cauſe that the Romaine king, being exhauſted and quite voyde of money, by reaſon of his ſumptuous buildinges, made warres vppon that countrie. In the time of the ſiege of that citie the ponge Romaine gentlemen banqueted one an other, amonges whom there was one called Collatinus Tarquinius, the ſonne of Egerius. And by chaunce they entred in communication of their wiues, euery one prayſing his ſeueral ſpouſe. At length the talke began to grow hot, whereupon Collatinus ſaid, that woords were vaine. For within few houres it might be tried, how much his wife Lucretia did excel the reſt wherefore (q he) if there be any liuelihod in you: Let vs take our horſe, to proue which of oure wiues doth ſurmount. Wheruppon they roode to Rome in poſt. At their comming they found the kinges doughters, ſporting themſelues with ſondrye paſtimes: From thence they went to the houſe of Collatinus, where they founde Lucrece, not as the other before named, ſpending time in idlenes, but late in the night occupied & buſie amonges her maydes in ẏ middes of her houſe ſpinning of woll. The victory & prayſe wherof was giuen to Lucretia, who whẽ ſhe ſaw her huſband, gentlie & louinglie intertained him, & curteouſlye badde ẏ Tarquiniãs welcome. Immediatly Sextus Tarquinius ẏ ſonne of Tarquinius Superbus, (that time the Romaine king) was incenſed wyth a libidious deſire, to conſtrupate & deflowre

Lucrece.

Lucrece. When the ponge gentlemen had bestowed that night pleasantly with their wiues, they retourned to the Campe. Not long after Sextus Tarquinius with one mā retourned to Collatia vnknowen to Collatinus, and ignorant to Lucrece and the rest of her housholde, for what purpose he came. Who being well intertayned, after supper was conueighed to his Chamber. Tarquinius burninge with the loue of Lucrece, after he perceiued the housholde to be at reste, and all thinges in quiet, with his naked swoorde in his hande, wente to Lucrece being a sleepe, and keeping her downe with his lefte hande, saide. Holde thy peace Lucrece, I am Sextus Tarquinius, my swoorde is in my hand, if thou crie, I will kill thee. The gentlewoman sore afrayed, being newely awaked oute of her sleepe, and seing iminent death, could not tell what to do. Then Tarquinius confessed his loue, and began to intreate her, and therewithall vsed sundry minacing woordes, by all meanes attempting to make her quiet: when he saw her obstinate, and that she woulde not yelde to his request, notwithstanding his cruell threates, he added shameful and villanous speach, saying. That he would kill her, and when she was slaine, he woulde also kill his slaue, and place him by her, that it might be reported howe she was slaine, being taken in adulterie. She vanquished with his terrible and infamous threate. His fleshlye and licentious enterprice, ouercame the puritie of her chaste and honest hart, which done he departed. Then Lucrece sent a post to Rome to her father, and an other to Ardea to her husbande, requiringe them that they would make speede to come vnto her, with certaine of their trustie frendes, for that a cruell facte was chaunced. Then Sp. Lucretius with P. Valerius the sonne of Volesius, and Collatinus with L. Iunius Brutus, made hast to Lucrece. Where they founde her sitting, very pensife and sadde, in her chamber. So sone as she sawe them she began pitiously to weepe. Then her husband asked her,

whether

whether all thinges were well, vnto whom she sayde these wordes.

No dere husbande, for what can be well or safe vnto a woman, when she hath lost her chastitie? Alas Collatine, the steppes of an other man, be now fixed in thy bed. But it is my bodye onely ꝑ is violated, my minde God knoweth is giltles, whereof my death shalbe witnesse. But if you be men, giue me your handes and trouth, that the adulterer may not escape vnreuenged. It is Sextus Tarquinius whoe being an enemie, in steede of a frende, the other night came vnto mee, armed with his sword in his hand, and by violence caried away from me (the Goddes know) a woful ioy. Then euery one of them gaue her their faith, & comforted ꝑ pensife & languishing lady, imputing ꝑ offẽce to the authour and doer of the same, affirming ꝑ her bodye was polluted, and not her minde, & where cõsent was not, there the crime was absente. Whereunto shee added. I praye you consider with your selues, what punishmente is due for the malefactour. As for my part, though I cleare my selfe of the offence, my body shall feele the punishment: for no vnchast or ill woman, shall hereafter impute no dishonest act to Lucrece. Then she drewe out a knife, which she had hidden secretely, vnder her kirtle, and stabbed her selfe to the harte. Which done, she fell downe grouelinge vppon her wound & died. Whereupon her father and husband made great lamẽtation, & as they were bewayling ꝑ death of Lucrece, Brutus plucked the knife oute of the wound, which gushed out with aboundance of bloude, and holding it vp said. I sweare by the chast bloud of this bodye here dead, & I take you the immortall Gods to witnes, that I will driue and extirpate oute of this Citie, both L. Tarquinius Superbus, and his wicked wife, with all the race of his children and progenie, so that none of them, ne yet any others shall raigne anye longer in Rome. Then hee deliuered the knife to Collatinus. Lucretius, and

Valeri-

Valerius who marueyled at the ſtrangeneſſe of his woyds: and from whence he ſhould conceiue that determination. They all ſwoye that othe. And followed Brutus as their Captaine, in his conceiued purpoſe. The body of Lucrece was bꝛought into the market place, where the people wõdꝛed at the vileneſſe of that facte, euery man complayning vppon the miſchiefe of that facinoꝛous rape, committed by Tarquinius. Wherupon Brutus perſwaded the Romaynes, that they ſhould ceaſe from teares and other childiſhe lamentacions, & to take weapons in their handes, to ſhew themſelues like men.

Then the luſtieſt and moſt deſperate perſons within the Citie, made themſelues pꝛeſt and readie, to attempte any enterpꝛiſe. And after a garriſon was placed and beſtowed at Collatia, diligent watche and ward was kept at the gates of the Citie, to the intent the kinge ſhould haue no aduertiſement of that ſturre. The reſt of the ſouldiours followed Brutus to Rome.

When he was come thither, the armed multitude did beate a marueilous feare thꝛoughout the whole Citie: but yet becauſe they ſawe the chiefeſte parſonages goe befoꝛe, they thought that the ſame enterpꝛiſe was taken in vaine. Wherefoꝛe the people out of all places of the Citie, ranne into the market place. Where Brutus complained of the abhominable Rape of Lucrece, committed by Sextus Tarquinius. And thereunto he added ẏ pꝛide and inſolent behauiour of the king, the miſerie and dꝛudgerie of the people, and howe they, which in time paſte were victours and Conquerours, were made of men of warre, Artificers and Labourers. He remembꝛed alſo the infamous murder of Seruius Tullius their late kinge. Theſe and ſuch like he called to the peoples remembꝛaunce, whereby they abꝛogated and depoſed Tarquinius, baniſhing him, his wife, & childꝛen. Then he leuied an armie of choſen and piked mẽ, and marched to the Campe at Ardea, committing the gouerne-

uernemente of the Citie to Lucretius, who before was by the king appointed Lieutenant. Tullia in the time of this hurlie burlie, fledde from her house, all the people cursing and crying vengeaunce vpon her. Newes brought into ỹ Campe of these euentes, the king with great feare retourned to Rome, to repelle those tumultes. And Brutus hearinge of his approche, marched another waye, because hee woulde not meete him. When Tarquinius was come to Rome, the gates were shutte against him, and he himselfe cõmaunded to auoide into exile. The campe receiued Brutus with great ioye and triumphe, for that he had deliuered the Citie of such a tyraunte. Then Tarquinius wᵗ his children fledde to Cære, a Citie of the Hetrurians. And as Sextus Tarquinius was going, he was slaine by those that premeditated reuengemente, of olde murder and iniuries by him done to their predecessours. This L. Tarquinius Superbus raigned xxv. yeares. The raigne of the kinges from the first foundation of the Citie continued CCxliiii. yeares. After which gouernmente two Consuls were appointed, for the order and administration of the Citie. And for that yeare L. Iunius Brutus, and L. Tarquinius, Collatinus.

The

The valiaunce of

¶ The siege of Rome by Porsenna, and the valiaunt deliuerie thereof by Mutius Scæuola, with his stoute aunswere vnto the kinge.

The ij. Nouell.

When P. Valerius and T. Lucretius were created Consuls, Porsenna kinge of Hetruria, vppon the instigation of the banished Tarquinians, came before the citie with an huge armie. The bruite wherof did wõderfully appall the Senate: for the like occasion of terrour, neuer before that time chaunced to the Romaines, who did not onely feare their enemies, but also their owne subiects, suspecting lest they should be forced to retaine the kinges againe. All which afterwards, were through the wisedome and discretion of the fathers quietlye appeased, & the citie reduced to such vnitie & courage, as all sorts of people despised ẏ name of king. When the enemies were approched, the rurall people abandoning their colonies, fled for rescue into ẏ citie. The citie was diuided into garrisõs: some kept the walles, and some the waye ouer Tiber, which was thought very safe and able to be defended. Although the wodden bridge made ouer ẏ Riuer, had almost been an opẽ way for the enemies entrie, whereof Horacius Cocles, as fortune serued that day, had the charge. Who so manfully behaued himselfe, as after he had broken vp and burned ẏ bridge, and done other notable exploites, he defended that passage with such valiance, that the defence therof seemed miraculous, to the great astonishment of the enemies. In fine Porsenna seing that he coulde litle preuaile in the assault, retourned to the Campe, determining neuertheless to continue his siege. At which time one Caius Mutius, a

yonge

ponge gentleman of Rome, purposed to aduenture some notable enterprise: saying to the Senators these words. I determine to passe the Riuer, and enter if I can, into the campe of the enemies, not to fetch spoile, or to reuēge mutual iniuries, but to hazard greater matters, if the Gods be assistant vnto me. The Senate vnderstanding the effect of his indeuour, allowed his deuise. And then hauinge a sword vnder his garmēt, went forth. When he was come into the throng, he conueighed himselfe as nere the kinges pauilion as he could. It chaunced that he was paying wages ẏ day to his souldiours, by whom his Secretarie did sit in such apparell, almost as the king himselfe did weare. Mutius being afraide to demaunde which of them was ẏ king, lest he should bewray himselfe, sodainly killed ẏ Secretarie in steede of the king, and as he was making waye with his bloudie sworde to escape, he was apprehended & brought before the king, and with maruailous stoutnesse & audacitie, spake these words. I am a citizen of Rome, and my name is Mutius and beinge an enemy, I woulde faine hauekilled mine enemie. For which attempt I esteeme no more to die, then I cared to commit the murder. It is naturally giuen to the Romaines, both valiantly to do, and stoutly to suffer. And not I alone haue cōspired thy death, but a greate nomber of vs, haue promised the like, & hope to prosecute semblable prayse and glorie: wherfore if this beginninge do not please thee, make thy selfe ready euerye houre to expect like perill, and to fight for thy selfe. And make accompt, ẏ euery day euen at the dore of thine owne lodging, thy enemye armed doth waite for thee: we alone yong gentlemen of the Citie do stand at defiance, and pronounce vppon thee this kinde of battaile. Feare no armies or other hostilitie. For with thee alone, and with euerye one of vs these warres shalbe tryed. The king astonied wt that bold and desperate enterprise, fell into a great rage & furie, commaundinge Mutius presentlye to be consumed

with fyre, vnlesse he would out of hand tell him the order of
cc the purposed and deuised treason. Behold O king (q̄ hee)
cc how litle they care for theyr bodies, that do aspire & seeke
cc for fame and glorie. And then he thrust his right hand in-
to the fire, and rosted ꝑ same in the flame, like one that had
been out of his wits. The king amazed wyth ꝑ straung-
nes of the fact, stepped downe from ꝑ seate, and caused him
cc to be taken from the fire, saying. Away frend (q̄ the king)
cc thou hast killed thy selfe, and aduentured hostilitie vppon
cc thy selfe rather then against mee. Surely I would thincke
cc mine estate happie, if like valiaunce were to be fou̅d wyth-
cc in ꝑ boundes of my countrye. Wherfore by law of Armes
cc I set the at libertie to go whither thou list, whereunto Mu-
cc tius for acquiting that desert, aunswered. For as much as
cc thou hast thus honourably delt with me, I wil for recom-
cc pence of this benefite, saye thus muche vnto thee, whych by
cc threates thou shouldest neuer haue gotten at my handes.
cc Three hundred of vs ꝑ be yonge noble men of Rome, haue
cc conspired thy death, euen by the like attempt. It was my
cc lot to come first, the reste when fortune shall giue oppor-tu-
cc nitie, euerye one in his tourne will giue the aduenture.
Whereupon he was dismissed, and afterwards was called
Scæuola, for the losse of his right hande. Then peace was
offered to the Romaynes, who vpon conditions that ꝑ ene-
mies garrisons should be withdrawen from Ianiculum, &
that the country wonne of the Veientines, should be resto-
red againe, gaue hostages. Amonges whom there was a
gentlewoman called Cloelia deliuered into the handes of
the Hetrurians, who decepuinge her keepers, conueighed
herselfe and the other pledges from their enemies, & swim
ming ouer the riuer of Tiber, arriued at Rome in safetye,
which being redemaũded by Porsenna, were sent backe a-
gaine. The king driuen into a wonderfull admiration for
the desperate and manly enterprises, done by ꝑ Romaine
Nation, retourned the maiden home againe to Rome In

whose

whose honour the Romaines erected an Image on horse-backe, placed at the vpper ende of the streate called Sacra via. And so peace was concluded betweene Porsenna and the Romaynes.

¶ Martius Coriolanus goinge about to represse the common people of Rome with dearth of Corne was banished. For reuengement whereof he perswaded Accius Tullius king of the Volsciās, to make warres vpō the Romaynes, and he himselfe in their ayde, came in his owne person. The Citie brought to greate miserye, the fathers deuised meanes to deliuer the same, & sent vnto the Volsciā cāpe, the mother, the wife and children of Coriolanus. Vpon whose complaintes Coriolanus withdrewe the Volscians. And the citie was reduced to quietnes.

The iiij. Nouell.

IN the yeare that Titus Geganius and Publius Minutius were Consuls, when all thinges were quiet abrode, and dissention at home appeased, an other great mischiefe inuaded ẏ citie. First a dearth of victuals, for ẏ the land was vntilled, by the peoples departure, thē a famine, such as chaūceth to the besieged: which had brought a great destructiō of people, had not the Consuls forseene ẏ same, by prouision in forren places. They sent purueiors into Scicilia: but the malice of the cities adioyning, stayed the prouision that was made a farre of. The Corne prouided at Cumas was stayed for the goodes of Tarquinius by Aristodemus the tyrant, that was his heire. The next yere followinge, a greate masse of Corne was transported oute of Scicile, in the time of the Consuls, M. Minutius and A. Sempronius. Then the Senate consulted, vppon the

distribution of the same vnto the people. Diuers thought that the time was then come, to bridle & suppresse the people, that thereby they might the rather recouer those priuileges, which were extorted from the fathers. Amonges whom Martius Coriolanus a yonge gentleman was the chiefest, who being an enemie to the Tribune authoritie, said these woords. If the people will haue victuals & corne at that price, whereat it was assised and rated in time past, then it is meete and necessarie, that they render to the fathers, their auncient auctoritie and priuilege. For to what purpose be the plebeian Magistrates ordained? For what consideration shall I suffer my selfe to be subiugate vnder the authoritie of Sicinius, as though I were conuersaunte amonges theeues? Shal I abide these iniuries any longer to continue, then is necessarie? I that could not suffer Tarquinius the king, shal I be pacient with Sicinius? Let Sicinius depart if he will, let him draw the people after him: the way yet is open to the sacred hill, & to the other mountaines. Let thē rob vs of our corne which they toke away from our owne land, as they did 3. yeares paste, let them enioy the victuals, which in their furie they did gather. I dare be bold to saye thus much, that being warned and tamed, by this present penurie, they had rather plow and til the land, then they would suffer the same to be vncultured, by withdrawing themselues to armure. It is not so easy to be spoken, as I thincke it may with facilitie be brought to passe, that vpon cōditions the prices of victuals should be abated, the fathers might remoue the auctoritie of ꝑ Tribunes & disanul all those lawes, which against their wills were ratified and confirmed. This sentence seemed cruel to the fathers, and almost had set the people together by the eares, whoe woulde haue torne him in peeces, had not the Tribunes appointed a day for his appearance. Wherupon their furie for that time was appeased, Coriolanus seinge the peoples rage to encrease, and consideringe that

they

they should be his Judge, when the day of his apparance was come, he absented himselfe, & therfore was condempned. Then he fled to the Volscians, of whō he was gently interteigned: and lodged in the house of Accius Tullius, the chiefe of that citie, and a deadly enemie to the Romaynes. Upon daily conference and consultation had betwene them, they cōsulted by what sleight or pollicie, they might comence a quarrell against the Romaines. And because they doubted, that the Volscians would not easely be perswaded thereunto, beinge so oft vanquished and ill intreated, they excogitated some other newe occasion. In the meane time T. Latinius one of the plebeian sorte, perceyuing that the Romaynes went about to institute great pastimes, conceiued a dreame, wherein hee sawe Iuppiter to speake vnto him, & said that he liked not the towardnes of those games, and in case ỹ same were not celebrated, with great royaltie and magnificens, they would ingender perill to the citie, which dreame he declared to the Consuls. Then the Senate gaue order, that the same shoulde be addressed with great pompe & triumphe: whereunto through thinstigacion of Accius, a greate nomber of the Volscians resorted. But before ỹ plaies begunne, Tullius according to the compact agreed vpon, betwene him and Coriolan', secretely repaired to the Consuls, and taking them a syde, declared that he had to say vnto them a matter touching ỹ publique wealth of their citie, in these words. I am forced against my will to signifie vnto you a matter, ỹ toucheth ỹ condition of mine owne subiectes and countrie men. I come not to accuse them, as thoughe they had already admitted any thinge, but I come to giue you a premonition, lest they should perpetrate some occasion, contrary to ỹ order of your Citie. The disposition of my countrie men, is more inconstant then I would wish: which we haue felt, to our great losse & decaie. The cause of oure security at this present, is rather suffered by your pacience, then by our de-

"sert. Here be at this instant a great multitude of Volsciās:
"Here be games prepared, & the citie throughlye bent to be-
"hold them I do remember what was done vpon like occa-
"sion in this Citie by ẏ Romain youth. I trēble to thincke,
"what may be rashly attempted, wherfore I thought good
"both for your owne sakes & for auoyding of mutual displea
"sure, to forbeare you of these things. And for mine owne part
"I purpose immediatlye to returne home, because I wil a-
"uoide the daunger & peril, ẏ maye chaunce by my presence.
"When he had spoken those words, he departed. The Con-
suls immediatly recōpted ẏ request of Accius to ẏ Senate:
who more esteming the personage, from whence the same
did procede, then the matter ẏ was spoken, determined to
prouide a remedie for the same, & immediatlye caused the
Volscians to auoide the citie, sending officers about, to cō-
maund them to depart ẏ night: vpon which sodain edict, at
the first they began to marueile. And afterwards they con
ceiued great griefe and offence, for ẏ their vnneighbourlye
entertaigmēt. And as they were passing out of the citie in
a long traine, Tullius being vpon the top of the hill called
Ferrentine, to waite for the people, as they passed by, called
vnto him the chiefe & principal parsonages, to prouoke thē
to take that aduaūtage, & then assembled the multitude in
the valleie, hard by the high way, to whom he pronounced
"these words. Forgetting all iniuries & displeasures past,
"done by the Romaine people against ẏ Volscians, how can
"you abide the shame you suffer this daye, wherein to oure
"great reproch, they begin to ostentate and shew forth their
"plaies. Do not you beleeue, ẏ euen to day, they triumph o-
"uer you? Is not your departure (thincke ye) ridiculous, to
"all the Romaines, to strangers, & other cities adioyning?
"Be not your wiues & children (trow ye) now passing home-
"wards, laughed to scorne? What thincke ye your selues to
"be, which were warned to depart, at the sound of the trum-
"pet? What suppose ye) wil all they thinke, which do meete
"this multitude retirīg homewards, to their great reproch

and

and shame? Truly excepte there be some secrete occasion, »
whereby we should be suspected to violate the plaies or cō- »
mit some other crime, & so forced to relinquish ẏ company »
and fellowship of the honest, I know not what should be ẏ »
cause of this repulse? Were we lyuing, whē we made such »
festination to depart? If it may be called a departure, and »
not a running away, or shamefull retire. I perceiue ye did »
not acēpt, this to be a citie of our enemies, wher I thinck, »
if ye had taried but one day longer, ye had all beene slaine. »
They haue denounced warres vppon you, which if you be »
men of courage, shall redounde to the vtter destruction of »
them, which first gaue the defiaūce. The Volscians per-
ceyuing themselues greatly derided, for considerations be-
fore remembred, determined by common accord, to inferre
warres vppon the Romaines, vnder the conduction of A-
ctius Tullius, & Coriolanus. After they had recouered di-
uers of the Romaine cities, they proceded further, & in sō-
drie places spoiled & destroyed the same, encamping them-
selues fiue miles frō Rome, besides ẏ trēches called Fos-
sas Cluilias. In the meane time cōtention rose betwene the
people and the fathers, howbeit the feare of forren partes,
linked their minds together, in the bands of concord. The
Consuls & fathers reposed their whole cōfidence in battel,
which the cōmon people in no wise could abide. Wherfore
they were constrained to assemble ẏ Senate, in which con-
sult was determined, ẏ Ambassadours should be sēt to Co
riolanus to demaund peace: who returned them againe wi
a froward answere: to this effect, ẏ first they should restore
to the Volscians their cōtrie, which they had conquered,
and ẏ done, he willed them to seke for peace. Yet they sent
againe Ambassadours, but in no wise they were suffered
to come into their campe. Then the priestes cladde in their
ornamentes, & other diuine furniture, were sent humblye
to make petition for peace. And yet they coulde not per-
swade theim. Then the Romaine Dames repayred to

Veturia the mother of Coriolauus, and to his wyfe Volumnia. But whether the same was done by common consent, or by the aduise of the feminine kind, it is vncertaine. It was appointed that Veturia, being an auncient gentlewoman, and mother of Coriolanus & Volumnia his wife, with her two ponge children, should repaire to the campe, to the intent that they by their pitiful lamentacion, might defende the citie, which otherwise by force, was not able to be kept. At their arriuall Veturia was knowen by one of her sonnes familier frends, stãding betwene her doughter in law, & her two neuies, who caried word immediatlye to Coriolan⁹, how his mother, his wife & children, were come into ẏ Campe to speake ẅ him. Coriolanus hearing him say so, descended frõ his seate, like one not wel in his wits, and went forth to embrace his mother. The old gentlewoman from supplications, fell into a great rage, speakinge
"these woordes. Abide a while before I do receiue thy em-
"bracementes, let me knowe whether I am comen to mine
"enemie, or to my sonne, or whether I am a prisoner in thy
"Campe, or thy mother. Alacke how long haue I prolõged
"these auncient yeares, & hoare heares most vnhappie, that
"nowe first I do behold thee an exile, & then view thee mine
"enemie. Canst thou finde in thy harte, to depopulate & de-
"stroy this thy coũtry, wherin thou wast begottẽ & brought
"vp? Could not thy rage and furie be appeased, when thou
"diddest first put foote into ẏ limites of this thy coũtry? Did
"not natural zeale pearce thy cruel hart, when thou diddest
"first cast thine eyes vpon this citie? Is not the house of thy
"mother, and her domesticall Goddes, conteyned within the
"walles of yonder Citie? Do not thy sorowful mother, thy
"deare wife and children, inhabite within ẏ compasse of yõ-
"der citie? (O I cursed creature) if I had neuer had childe,
"Rome had not been now assailed. If I had neuer brought
"forth a sonne, I should haue laied mine old bones, & ended
"my life in a free countrie. But I coulde neuer haue su-

steined,

steined, or suffred more miserie, then is nowe fallen vnto mee, nor neuer more dishonour, then to beholde thee in pitifull plight, a traytour to thy native soile. And as I am the moste wretched wight of all mothers, so I trust I shal not long continue in that state. If thou procede in this enterprise, either sodaine death, or perpetuall shame bee thy reward. When his mother had ended these woordes, the whole traine of gentlewomen, brake into pitifull teares: bitterly bewayling the state of their Countrie, whiche at lengthe did mitigate the stomacke of Coriolanus. And when he had imbraced his wife and children, hee dismissed them. Then hee withdrewe the Volcian campe from the citie, and out of the Romaine Prouince. Upon the displeasure of whiche facte, he died. It is sayd that when he was an old man, hee vsed many times to speake and vtter this sentence. That verie miserable it is, for an olde man to liue in banishement. The Romains disdaigned not to attribute to women, their due prayse. For in memorie of this deliuerie of their Countrie: They erected a Temple, Fortunæ Muliebri, to womens Fortune.

¶ Appius Claudius, one of the Decemuiri of Rome, goeth about to rauishe Virginia a yonge mayden, which indeuour of Appius, whē her father Virginius vnderstode being then in the warres, hee repaired home to rescue his doughter. One that was betrouthed vnto her, clamed her, whereupon rose great contention. In the ende her owne father, to saue the shame of his stocke: killed her with a Bochers knife, and went into the Forum, crying vengeāce vpon Appius. Then after much contention and rebelliō, the Decemuiri were deposed.

The

Appius Claudius

The fifte Nouell.



Purius Posthumius Albus, Aulus Manlius, and P. Sulpitius Camerinus, were sent Ambassadours to Athenes, and commaũded to wryte out the noble Lawes of Solon, and to learne the Institutions, orders, and Lawes of other Greeke cities. Upon whose retourne, the Tribunes were verie instant that at length lawes might be enacted and cõfirmed. And for that purpose, certaine officers were appointed, called Decemuiri: with soueraigne authoritie and power, to reduce the same into wryting, whiche were thought meete and profitable for the common wealth. The principall and chiefe of whiche nomber, was Appius Claudius, who committed no lesse filthy facte, then was done by Tarquinius, for the rape of Lucrece. The sayde Appius conceiued a libidinous desire, to rauishe a yong virgine, the doughter of one Lucius Virginius, then a captain in the warres at Algidum, a man of honest & sober life, whose wife was also of right good behauiour, & their children accordingly brought vp, & instructed. They had betrouthed their doughter, to one L. Icilius of ỳ order of ỳ Tribunes, a mã of great stoutnesse & tried valiance, in the cause of the people. This yong maide being of excellẽt beautie, Appius at the first began to woe by giftes and faire promises: but when he sawe ỳ she was impregnable, he deuised by wicked & cruell pollicie, to obteine her, cõmitting the charge of that enterprise to one of his frendes, called Marcus Claudius, who went about to proue & maintaine, that the maide was his bondwoman, & in no wise would giue libertie to her friẽdes, to haue time to answere the processe made in that behalfe, thinking by that meanes, in the absence of her father, hee might at his

pleasure

pleasure enioye her. As the virgine was going to schole in the Forum, the said Claudius, the minister of mischief, layd handes vpō her, claimed her to be his bondwomā, for that she was borne of a seruile woman, & commaunded her to folow him. The mayde being afraide was amazed, and the Nurse that wayted vpon her, cried out. Whereupon the people ran out of their doores, to knowe the cause of the sturre. Claudius seing the maide like to be rescued, by the multitude that was assembled, said, ẏ there was no neede of that hurlie burlie, for that he attēpted nothing by force, but that he was able to proue by lawe. Whereupon he cited the mayde to appere, her frendes promised ẏ she should according to the Lawe, make her apperance, being come before the consistorie, where Appius set in iudgemēt, Claudius began to tell a tale, & processe of the cause, wherof Appius being the deuiser, vnderstode the effect. The tenor of the tale was, that the maide was borne in his house, & was the doughter of his owne bondwoman, who afterwardes being stolen awaye, was caried to the house of Virginius, and supposed to be his childe, which thing he said, he was well able to proue, and would referre the iudgemēt of his cause to Virginius him selfe: vnto whom the greater part of his iniurie did apertaine. In the meane time, he sayde that it was meete, the maide should folowe her maister: wherunto the Aduocates of the mayde replied, & said that Virginius was absent, about ẏ affaires of ẏ cōmō wealth, but if he were aduertised of the matter, they knewe wel he would bee at home, within twoo dayes after: wherefore they sayd, that it were against equitie and iustice, that processe and suite should bee made, for clayme of chyldren in the absence of the parentes, requiring them to deferre the matter tyll the retourne of the father. Appius not regarding the iustice of the case, to the intent hee myght satisfie his owne luste and pleasure, ordeyned in the meane tyme, that Claudius the Assertor and playntife, shoulde

haue

haue the keping and placing of the mayde, till the father were returned. Against whiche wrong, many did grudge, although none durst withstand it. But as fortune chaunced immediatly after that decree and order was so pronounced: Publius Numitorius, the maydes vncle by her mothers side, and Icilius her beloued, were comen home: vpō whose retourne, incontinentlye Icilius approched nere to Appius, and being put backe by the Sergeant, hee cried
" out a loude in these wordes. Thou oughtest to put me back
" from hence (O Appius) with a sworde that thou mightest
" without let, enioye the thing thou wouldest haue kepte
" close and secrete. It is I that purpose to mary this maide,
" who I doubte not, is very honest and chaste: Wherfore cal
" together thy Sergeantes, and cause the roddes and axes,
" to be made prest and ready. For I assure thee, the spouse
" of Icilius shall not remayne out of her fathers house. No
" although thou hast taken away from the Romaine people
" their Tribunes aide and appeales, whiche be twoo strong
" fortes and holdes of their common libertie. Is authoritie
" geuen thee, libidinously to abuse our wyues and children?
" Exercise thy crueltie behinde our backes, and vppon our
" liues if thou liste, so that thou doe not contaminate, and de-
" file the vertue of chastitie. Whereunto if thou inferre any
" damage or iniurie, I will for mine owne parte, & for the
" loue of my beloued, crie out for the ayde of the Romaines
" that be present, and Virginius shall do the like of the soul-
" diours, in the quarell of his owne doughter. And all wee
" together, will implore for the succour of Goddes and men.
" And truste to it, that thou shalt not enioye thy purpose, be-
" fore some of vs haue lost our liues. Wherefore Appius I
" aduise thee, take hede in time. For when Virginius doth
" come hee will seke remedie to defende his doughter, and
" will knowe in what condition and sorte shee is ordred, if
" shee be referred to the seruitude of this man. And for my
" part, my life shall soner fayle, in defending her libertie, thē

my faith

my faithe to her betrouthed. Appius perceiuing the constancie of Icilius, and that the people was in a great mutine, and sturre, differred the cause of Virginia til the next daye: whose frendes hoped by that time, that her father would be at home: wherefore with all expedition they addressed messengers vnto him in the campe, bicause the saufgarde of his doughter, consisted in his presence. In the meane time, the Assertor required the mayde, offering to put in baile the like offer made Icilius, of purpose to contriue and spende the time, till the ariuall of Virginius. The multitude of their owne accordes, helde vp their hãds promising to become suretie for Icilius, vnto whome hee gaue thãkes, weping for ioye, to se their kinde behauiour, and said: I thanke you moste hartely my beloued frendes to morowe I wil vse your frendly offer, but at this present I haue sureties sufficient. Whereupon Virginia was bailed. Then Appius repaired home, & wrote to his frendes in the campe, that in no wyse they should giue Virginius leaue to come to Rome, whiche vngracious deuise came to late, and tooke none effecte. Whereupon Virginius retourned home, and in poore and vile apparell, repaired to the Forum, after whom followed a great nomber of matrones and aduocates. Then he began to require them all of succour and ayde, alledging that he was a Souldiour, and one that aduentured him selfe, for the saufegarde and defence of them al: with such like perswasions to the multitude. Semblable wordes were vttered by Icilius. All which doinges being viewed and marked by Appius, in a greate furie ascended the consistorie. Then M. Claudius the plaintife began to renewe his sute: and before the father of the mayden could make answere to that plea, Appius gaue sentence that the mayde was bonde, which sentence, semed so cruell, as it appalled the whole multitude. And as Claudius was laying handes vppon the virgine, Virginius stepped to Appius, and said. I haue betrouthed

my

my doughter to Icilius, and not to thee Appius. My care in the bringing of her vp, was to marrie her, and not to suffer her to be violated and defloured. It is your maner, like
« sauage and cruell beastes, indifferently thus to vse youre
« fleshly affections? I can not tell whether the multitude
« here present, will suppoꝛte this enoꝛmitie, but I am sure
« the armed Souldiours, and men of warre, will not suffer
« it. Marcus Claudius being repulsed by the women, and Aduocates that were present, silence was proclaymed by the Trumpet. Then Appius began to declare how he vnderstoode, that all the night befoꝛe, certaine cõpanies were assembled within the citie, to excite and moue sedicion. Foꝛ whiche cause hee came with armed men, not to hurte any that was quiet, but accoꝛding to the authoꝛitie of his office to bꝛidle and repꝛesse those, that were troublers of the pu-
« blique state. Wherefoꝛe goe Sergeant (quod he) make
« roume emonges the multitude, that the maister may en-
« ioye his seruaunte. Whiche woꝛdes he thundꝛed out with
« great furie, and therewithall the multitude gaue place,
« leauing the pooꝛe Puselle to be a pꝛaye to the ennemy. Her
« father seing that hee was voyde of succoure and helpe, to
« defende the innocencie of his doughter, spake to Appius in
« this soꝛte. I firste doe beseche thee Appius, if I haue vsed any vnreasonable wooꝛdes against thee, to pardone mee, and to impute the same to the Fathers griefe and soꝛowe. Suffer mee I pꝛaye thee, to examine the Nourse, in the pꝛesence of the wenche, of the whole circumstance of this matter, to the intent that if I be but a supposed father, I maye departe hence with quiet conscience satisfied and cõtented. Virginius hauing licence to talke with his doughter and Nourse, departed a side into a place called Cloacina, where the shoppes be, nowe called Tabernæ Nouæ, and plucking a sharpe knife from a Bocher that stode by, he thꝛust the same to the harte of his doughter, saying. By this onely meanes (doughter) I can make thee free: and

looking

looking againe to the iudgement seate, he said. This blood Appius I consecrate & bestowe vpon thee. Which done, with his sworde he made waye, to passe through the throng to conueighe him selfe out of the citie. Then Icilius and Numitorius tooke vp the dead bodie, and shewed it to the people, who cryed out vpon the wickednesse of Appius, bewayling the vnhappie beautie of that fayre maiden, and deplored the necessitie of the father. The women exclamed in lamentable wyse, saying: Is this the condicion and state of them, that bring foorth children? Be these the rewardes of chastitie? With suche like pitifull cries, as women are wonte to make, vpon suche heauie and dolorous euentes. Virginius being arriued in the campe, whiche then was at the mount Vicelius, with a traine of fower hundred persones, that fled out of the Citie, shewed to the Souldiours the bloudie knife, that killed his doughter, whiche sighte astonied the whole Campe: in so muche as euery man demaunded, what was the cause of that sodain chaunce. Virginius could not speake for teares but at length he disclosed vnto them, the effecte of the whole matter, and holding vp his handes towardes the heauens, sayd. I beseche you (deare companions) do not impute the wickednesse of Appius Claudius vpon mee, ne yet that I am a paricide and murderer of mine own children: the life of my dear doughter had beene more acceptable to me then mine owne life, if so be shee might haue continued a free woman, and an honest virgine. But when I sawe she was ledde to the rape like a bondwoman, I considered, that better it wer her life to be loste, then suffered to liue in shame: wherefore my naturall pitie was conuerted to a kynde of crueltie. And for myne owne parte, I doe not passe to lyue long after her, if I thought I should not haue your helpe and succour to reuenge her death. Consider that your selues haue doughters, sisters, and wyues, thinke not therefore, that the fleshlye desire of Appius is satisfied with the death of my doughter.

cc doughter. And the longer that he doth continue in this se-
cc curitie, the more vnbrideled is his appetite. Let the cala-
cc mitie of an other be a sufficient document for you, to be-
cc ware like iniuries. My wife is dead, by naturall fate and
cc constellation, and bicause my doughter could cõtinewe no
cc longer, in honeste and chaste life, death is befallen vnto
cc her: whiche although it be miserable, yet the same is ho-
cc nourable. There is nowe no place in my house for Appius
cc to satisfie his filthie luste. And I will fayle of my purpose,
cc if I do not reuenge the death of my doughter, with so good
cc will vpon his flesh, as I did discharge the dishonour and
cc seruitude of her, from his violent and cruell handes. This
cc succlamation and pitifull complaint, so stirred the multi-
tude, that they promised all to helpe and relieue his so-
rowe. Whereupon, the whole Campe were in a mutine &
marched in order of battayle to the mounte Auentine,
where Virginius perswaded the Souldiours, to chose ten
principall Captaines, to bee head and chiefe of that enter-
prise: whiche with honourable titles of the field, should be
called Tribuni. And Virginius him selfe being elected the
chiefe Tribune, sayde these wordes to the Souldiours. I
cc praye you reserue this estimation, whiche you conceiue of
cc me, vntill some better tyme and apter occasion, aswell for
cc your commoditie, as for my selfe. The death of my dough-
cc ter, will suffer no honour to bee pleasaunt or welcome to
cc me, during my life. Moreouer in this troubled state of the
cc common wealth, it is not meete for them to be your gouer-
cc nours, that be subiect and occurrant to ennie and reproch,
cc if my seruice shall bee profitable vnto you, when you haue
cc thus created me a Tribune, it shall be no lesse cõmodious,
cc if I doe still remaine a priuate man. When he had spoken
cc those wordes, they chose tenne Tribunes. And like as the
cc campe at the mounte Auentine, was prouoked and stirred
cc to this sedition: euen so by meanes of Icilius and Numi-
cc torius before remembred, the Armie then beinge against

the

the Sabines began to reuolte and made the like nomber of Tribunes, which in array of battaile, marched through the citie, at the gate Colina, with banner displaied, to ioyne w̄ the campe vpon the mount Auentine. And when both the campes were assembled, they chose out two amongest the twenty Tribunes, to be their generalles, called M. Opius and Sextus Manilius. The Senate careful and pensife for these euentes, eftsons assembled, but no certaine determinatiōs was agreed vpō. At length they cōcluded, that Valerius and Horatius, should bee sent to the mount Auentine to perswade the people, but they vtterlye refused the message, vnlesse the Decemuiri were first deposed. The Decemuiri made aunswere, that they would not geue ouer their authoritie, til such time as those lawes were ratified, which wer treated vpō, before they wer elected to that office. Of all these contentions the people was aduertised by M. Duillius their Tribune. And when both their armies were ioyned at the mount Auentine, afore sayd: Al the multitude of the citie, men, women, & childrē, repaired thither, in sorte, that Rome was like a forlorne & abandoned place. The fathers seing the citie thus relinquished, Horatius & Valerius, with diuers of ẏ fathers, exclamed in this wise. What do ye expect & looke for, ye fathers conscript': Will » ye suffer al thinges to runne to extreame ruine and decay': » Shall the Decemuiri still persiste in their stubburne and » froward determinations': What maner of gouernement » is this (O ye Decemuiri) that ye thus lay holde vpon and » enioye': Will ye pronounce and make lawes within your » owne houses, & the limites of the same? Is it not a shame » to se in the Forum a greater nomber of your Catchpolles » and Sergeantes, then of other sober and wise Citizens': » But what will ye doe, if the enmie vpon the sodaine, dothe » approche the walles? What wil ye do if the people vnder- » standing that we care not for their departure, do in armes » assaile vs': Will ye finishe your gouernement, with the o- »

cc uerthrowe of the citie: But either wee muste expell and a-
cc bandon the people, or els wee muste admitte the Tribunes,
cc We shall soner wante our Fathers and Senatours, then
cc they their plebeian officers. They bereued and toke awaye
cc from vs the fathers a newe kinde of authoritie, which was
cc neuer sene before, who now feeling the sweetnesse thereof,
cc will neuer geue it ouer. For we can not so well temper our
authoritie and gouernement, as they be able to seke helpe
and succour. The Decemuiri perceiuing that they were ha-
ted, so well of the Senate, as of the people, submitted thē
selues. And therupon Valerius and Horatius were sent to
the campe, to reuoke the people vpon suche conditions as
they thought moste meete. Then the Decemuiri were cō-
maunded, to take heede of the peoples furie. So sone as the
Comissioners were come to the campe, they were receiued
with great ioye and gladnesse of the people, because they
were the beginners of that sturre, and supposed that they
would make an ende of the commocion, for whiche cause
they rendred to them their humble thankes. Then Icilius
was appointed to speake for the people, who required to
haue the authoritie of the Tribunes restored, and their ap-
peale renewed, with restitution of those lawes, whiche be-
fore the erection of the Decemuiri, were ratified and con-
firmed. They demaunded also an impunite and free par-
don, to those that firste encouraged and incited the Soul-
diours to that enterprise, and the restoring of their liber-
ties. They required to haue their enemies the Decemuiri,
to be deliuered into their handes. Whom they threatened
to put to death by fire. Whereunto the Comissioners answ-
ered in this wise. Your requestes bee so reasonable, that
they ought willingly to be graunted. All which ye desire
to obtaine, as a defence and comfort for your libertie, & not
to persecute and infeste others. Your furie & anger ought
rather to be pardoned, then permitted or graunted. Yee
beare a face & seeme to detest and hate seueritie, & ye your

selues

selues incurre, and runne headlong into all kinde of cruel- »
tie: and before ye be made free your selues, ye desire to bee »
Lordes ouer your aduersaries. Shall our citie neuer bee »
voide of tortures and oppressions: sometime of the fathers »
towardes the people, sometime of the people towardes the »
fathers? You had more neede of a shilde to defende you, »
then of a swoorde to fight. That mã is of a base state & cou- »
rage we suppose, that liueth in a citie, & beareth him self so »
vpright, as neither he inferreth iniurie to others, ne yet suf »
fereth wrong him selfe. If ye shew your selues so terrible, »
then it is to be supposed, that after ye haue recouered your »
lawes & Magistrates, and be placed again in your former »
authoritie and preeminence: ye will also ordeine & appointe »
Lawes ouer vs, that shall concerne our liues and goodes, »
and euery other light matter. But for this preſẽt I would »
wishe you, to be contented with your former freedome. Af- »
ter the Comissioners had willed theim, to consulte vppon some determinate aunswere, they retourned to Rome, to make reporte to the Senate, of the peoples requestes. The Decemuiri perceiuing, that contrarie to their expectation, no likelihode was of any persecution, to be done vpon thẽ, condescended to those demaundes. Appius being a man of nature cruell & malicious, measuring ẏ malice of others, by his owne maligne disposition: spake these woordes. I am not ignorannte what fortune is nowe imminente. For I do plainely see that whiles weapons be deliuered to our aduersaries, the combate is deferred against vs. With blonde, enuie muste be rewarded. I will not any longer delaie the time, but depriue my selfe of the Decemuirate. When the Senate was aduertised by the Comissioners, Valerius and Horatius, of the peoples aunswere: they decreed that the Decemuiri should be deposed, and that Q. Furius the chief bishop, should create that plebeian Tribunes. Wherin also was enacted, that the departure of ẏ people, and mutine of the Souldiours should be pardoned.

When these lawes were renewed, the Decemuiri went
foorth, and openly in the assemblie deposed them selues, to
the great ioye and comforte of them all. All whiche being
reported to the people: both the souldiours, and the rest of
the multitude, were somoned to appeare before the Com-
« missioners, vnto whom they spake these wordes. We now
« beseech you al, to retourne into your cõtrie, to your dome-
« sticall Goddes, your wiues, and children, which we truste
« shalbe right good, happie, and profitable vnto you, and to
« the common wealth. But your modestie and sober beha-
« uiour, for that no mans grounde is violated and destroyed,
« considering many thinges, could not suffice the hugenesse
« of this multitude, that part of modestie, I saye, cary with
« you into the citie, to your immortall fame and glorie. Get
« ye therfore to the mounte Auentine, from whence ye de-
« parted, whereas in a place moste happie, ye renewed the
« foundacions of your auncient libertie, and these yee shall
« create your Tribunes. The chiefe bishop shalbe present, to
kepe the Comitialles. Then the Romaine people made
Aulus Virginius, Lucius Icilius, and P. Numitorius the
Tribunes, who with their assistantes, first aduaunced & con
firmed the libertie of ỹ people. Afterward Virginius was
appointed to be the accuser, & Appius chosen to be the de-
fendant. At the day appointed, Appius resorted to ỹ Forũ,
with a great companie of yong gentlemen, of the patricial
order, where Virginius began to renewe the cruel & abho-
minable facte, which Appius committed in the time of his
« authoritie, and said. Oration was first deuised & found out,
« for ambiguous & doubtfull causes: therefore I will nei-
« ther cõsume time, in accusing him before you, from whose
« crueltie, ye haue by force defended your selues, nor yet I
« will suffer hym to toyne to his former wickednesse, any
« impudente aunswere for his defence. Wherefore Ap-
« pius all those thynges whiche wyckedlye and cruellye
« one vpon an other, thou haste done these twoo yeares past,

I doe

I doe freely forgeue thee. But if thou canst not purge thy »
selfe of this one thing, that against the order and forme of »
Lawe (thou thy selfe being Iudge) wouldest not suffer the »
freman, to enioye the benefite of his freedome, during the »
processe made of seruitude, I will presently commaunde »
the to prysone. Appius Claudius being nowe a prysoner, &
perceiuing, that the iust complaintes of Virginius, did be-
hemently incite the people to rage and furie, and that the
peticions and prayers of his frendes, in no wise could mol-
lifie their hartes, he began to conceiue a desperation. And
within a whyle after slewe him selfe. Spurius Oppius, also
an other of the Decemuiri, was immediatly sent to prison,
who before the daye of his iudgement died. The reste also
of that order fled into exile. Whose goods were confiscate.
M. Claudius also the Assertor was condempned, howbeit
Virginius was contented he should be banished the citie, &
then he fled to Tybur. Thus vpon the filthie affectiõ of one
noble man, issued paricide, murder, rebellion, hatred, de-
priuing of Magistrates, and great mischiefes succedinge
one in an others necke. Whereupon the noble and victo-
rious citie, was lyke to be a praye to forren nations. A
goodlie document to men of like calling, to mo-
derate them selues, and their Magisterie
with good and honest life, thereby to giue
incouragement of vertue, to their vas-
salles and inferiours: who for the
most part doe imitate and fol-
lowe the liues, and con-
uersation of their su-
periours.

Candaules and Gyges

¶ Candaules king of Lidia, shewing the secretes of his wyues beautie, to Gyges one of his Guarde: was by counsaile of his wife, slaine by the said Gyges, and depriued of his kingdome.

The sixte Nouell.

OF all follies wherewith bayne men be affected, the follie of immoderate loue, is moste to bee detested. For that husband, which is beautified with a comely and honest wife, whose rare excellencie doth surpasse other, aswel in lineaments proporcion, and feature of bodie, as with inwarde qualities of minde: if he can not retaine in the secrecie & silence of his breast, that excelling gifte and benefite, is worthy to be inaugured with a Laurel crown of follie. Beautie eche man knoweth, is one of natures ornamentes, by her wisedome ordeined, not to enter in triumphe, as victours vse vpõ gaine of victorie, with brauerie to ostentate their glorie, by sound of Shalme & Dromme, but thankefully for ẏ same, to proclaime the due praise to the authour of nature. For there is nothing more fraile & fading, then ẏ luring lookes of dame beauties eies, altogether like ẏ flaring Marigold floure, which in the moste feruent heate of the Sommers day, doth appeare most glorious, & vpõ retire of the nights shadowe, appeareth as though it had neuer bene the same. And therfore he that conceiueth, reioyce in her vncertayne state, is like to him that in his slombring dreame, doth imagine he hath founde a pereleſſe iewell, of price inestimable, beset with the glistring Diamonde: and perfectly awaked, knoweth he hath none such. If God hath indued a man wᵗ a wife that is beautifull and honest, hee is furnished with

double

double pleasure: such, as rather thankes to him, then vain ostentation is to be remembred. Otherwise, he doateth, either in Ielosie or openeth proude vauntes therof, to suche as he thinketh, to be his most assured frendes. What ioye the sequele therof doth bring, let ỹ historie insuing reporte.

Candaules king of Lydia, had a marueilous beautifull gentlewoman to his Queene and wife, whome hee loued very dearlye, and for that great loue whiche he bare her, thought her the fayrest creature of the worlde. Being in this louing concept, hee extolled the prayse of his wife, to one of his guarde called Gyges, ỹ sonne of Dascylus (whō he loued aboue all the reste of his housholde, and vsed his counsayle, in all his weightie causes) within a whyle after he sayde vnto Gyges these woordes. It semeth vnto mee » Gyges, that thou doest not greatlye beleue the woordes, » whiche I speake vnto thee, of the beautie of my wyfe, but » because eyes bee better witnesses of thinges then eares, » thou shalt see her naked. With these woordes Gyges be- » ing amazed cried out, saying. What woordes be these (sir » king) me thynke you are not well aduised, to require mee » to viewe and beholde the Lady my maistres in that sorte? » For a woman seene naked, doth with her clothes, put of » also her chastitie. In olde tyme honest thinges were deui- » sed for mannes instruction, emonges which was vsed this » one thyng. That euery man ought to beholde, the thinges » that were his owne. But sir, I do beleue assuredly that she » is the fairest woman in the world, wherfore desire me not » to thynges that bee vnlawefull. In this sorte Gyges re- » plied, and yet feared lest some daunger might happen vn- to hym. Whome Candaules encouraged, saying. Bee of » good chere, and be not afrayde, that either I or my wyfe, » goe about to deceiue thee, or that thou shalt incurre anye » daunger. For I wyll take vpon me so to vse the matter, as » she by no meanes shall knowe, that thou haste seene her. » I wyll place thee behynde the portall of our chamber. »

" When I goe to bedde, my wyfe commonly doth followe.
" And she being in the Chamber, a chayre is sette readye,
" vppon whiche shee layeth her clothes, as shee putteth thē
" of. Whiche done shee sheweth her selfe a good tyme na-
" ked. And whēn she ryseth from her chayre to goe to bedde,
" her backe beyng towarde thee, thou mayest easilye con-
" ueyghe thy selfe out again, but in any wyse take heede, she
" doe not see thee, as thou goest out. Whereunto I praye
" thee, to haue a speciall regarde. Gyges seyng that by no meanes, hee coulde auoyde the vayne requeste of the king, was readie at the tyme appoynted. Candaules about the howre of bedde tyme, went into the Chamber, and conueighed Gyges into the same, & after the kyng the queene followeth, whome Gyges beheldе at her going in, and at the putting of her clothes. When her back was towardes him: (as he was going out) she perceiued him. The queene vnderstanding by her husbande, the circumstance of the facte, neyther for shame did crie out, ne yet made countenaunce, as though shee had seen Gyges: but in her minde purposed, to reuenge her husbandes follie. For emonges the Lydians (as for the most part, with all other nations) it is coumpted a great shame, to see a naked man. The gentlewoman counterfaited her grief, and kepte silence. In the morning when she was redie, by such of her seruaunts, whome she beste trusted, shee sent for Gyges, who thought that shee had knowen nothing, of that whiche chaunced. Being come before her presence. Shee sayde vnto hym, Gyges I offer vnto thee nowe twoo conditions, take whether thou wylte. For eyther thou must kill Candaules, and take mee to thy wyfe, and the kyngdome also, or els thou must dye thy selfe, that thou maiest vnderstande, how in all thynges not meete to be knowen, it is not necessarye to obeye Candaules. For eyther hee muste needes dye, whiche gaue thee that counsayle, or thy selfe, whiche diddest see me naked, and thereby cōmitted a thing vnlawfull.

Whiche

Which woꝛds foꝛ a while, did wonderfully amaſe Gyges, then he beſought the Queene that ſhe woulde pardon him from that vnlawfull choiſe. When he ſaw that he coulde not perſwade her: hee required her to ſhewe him by what meanes, he might attẽpt ẏ enterpꝛiſe. Marie (quoth ſhe) euen in that place where thou ſaweſt me naked, whẽ he is a ſleepe thou ſhalt commit that facte. After they had deuiſed the treaſon, night appꝛoched. And Gyges with ſtoute courage, bent himſelfe thereunto. Foꝛ he ſaw no remedye, but that he muſt kill, oꝛ els be killed. Wherefoꝛe with a Dagger which the Queene deliuered him, he killed Candaules, when he was a ſleepe. And ſo gotte from him both his wife and kingdome. A goodly example to declare, ẏ ẏ ſecrets of Marriage, ought not to be diſcloſed. But with reuerence to be couered, leſt God do plague ſuch offences with death oꝛ other ſhame, to manifeſt to the woꝛld, howe dearely hee eſteemeth that honourable ſtate.

¶ King Cræſus of Lydia reaſoneth with the wyſeman Solon, of the happie life of man. VVho little eſteeming his good aduiſe, vnderſtoode before his death, that no man (but by vertue) can in this life attaine felicitie.

The vj. Nouell.

A Noble Gentleman of Athens called Solon, by thappointement of the Athenians, made lawes foꝛ that citie, & becauſe none of the ſame lawes ſhoulde be abꝛogated, foꝛ the ſpace of tenne yeares, hee bounde the Citizens by othe. And that the ſame mighte the better be obſerued: hee himſelfe traueyled

ueiled into farre coũtries, as into Egipt to visite king Hamasis, and so to Sardis to kinge Cręsus, where he was liberallie intertayned. This Cræsus was king of Lydia, sonne of Haliattes, that brought to subiection great countries in Asia and Græcia, and gathered together an innumerable masse of moneye and riches. Who three or foure dayes after the arriuall of Solon (which was led aboute by his seruauntes, to viewe his notable wealth and substaunce) said vnto Solon these wordes. My frende of Athens, because thy famous wysedome is well knowen to the worlde, and I haue heard tell of the excellencie therof, and of the greatnes of thy trauaile, where thou hast attaigned to the singuler knowledge of Philosophie: I desire to learne of thee (now hauing seene my great treasures) who is the happiest man and most blessed, that thou knowest in this world. Thinking he would haue iudged him to be the same. But Solon made aunswere, that Tellus was ẏ happiest. Who was an Athenien, and had vertuous and honest sonnes, & they likewise had honest children, all which were that time liuing. And when by ẏ space of many yeares he had ledde a vertuous and godly life, he died an honourable death in ẏ warres which the Athenians had with theyr neighbours, at the battaile of Eleusina. Wher he was indued w̃ sumptuous funerals, to his great honour & prayse. Then Cræsus asked him, who was happie next Tellus: thinking hee would haue attributed to him the second place. Forsoth (q he) that is Cleobis & Bito, which were Argiues, and liued a contented life. And in all pastimes to proue force & maisterie, they bare away the prise and victorie. And of them these thinges be remẽbred. When the feastfull day of Iuppiter, was celebrated amonges ẏ Argiues. Their mother should be caried to the Temple in a Chariot, drawen with a yoke of Oxen, which were not come out of the coũtrie at the appointed time. The ponge men seinge that the hower was come, entred into the yoke themselues, and drewe the chariotte

riotte the space of xlv. staues to the Temple. After this acte »
seene of all the people there, thende of their life was such, »
as certainly God gaue to vnderstād by them, ẏ better it is »
to die, then liue. For the Argiues ẏ were assembled about »
Bito & Cleobis, w̄ shoutes & acclamations, prayled ẏ good »
willes of those children, & the womē themselues said, that »
happie was the mother, which brought forth such lineage. »
Their mother then ioyfull for ẏ fact, and of the reputaciō »
of her sonnes, kneeled downe before the Image of Iuno, »
humbly beseechinge her to giue her sonnes the thinge that »
were best for a man to attaine vnto. Her prayer ended, she »
made her sacrifice, which done, ẏ two yonge men presently »
died in the temple. In token of whose noble liues, the Ar- »
giues erected two Images at Delphos. And to them Solō »
appointed ẏ secōd place of blissfulnes. Cræsus moued with »
these words, said vnto Solon. Thou straūger of Athens, is »
our felicitie in such litle reputation with thee ẏ thou doest »
preferre before vs these priuate men? Solon aunswered. »
Sir shal I assure you of humaine things, knowing ẏ God »
enuieth the state of men, & troubleth them so often? In »
length of time many thinges be seen, which mē would not »
see, & many thinges be suffred, that men would not suffer. »
Let vs assigne to mās life, the terme of lxx. yeres. In which »
yeares are the nomber of xxv. M. cc. dayes, in which cōpu- »
tation the leape moneth, which is Febryuary, is not compre »
hended. But if you wil ẏ other yeres be lōger, by reason of »
that moneth, to thend ẏ howers may be adioyned to them, »
that want then the leape monethes, maketh the time to a- »
mount (aboue lxx. yeares) to xxv. monethes, & the dayes of »
those mothes amount to M v. C. But admit ẏ lxx yeares, »
with their leape monethes, be the total sūme of mans life, »
then is producted the summe of xxv. M CC. dayes. Truly »
one day is not like an other in effect. Euen so Cræsus I cō- »
clude, ẏ man is ful of miserie. But althoughe your grace, »
seeming both in wealth, & also in multitude of men, to be a

riche

cc rich and mightie king, yet I cannot aunswere fullye your
cc demaunde, before I see howe well you doe ende your life.
cc For the rich man is not more happie, because he hath long
cc life, except to his riches fortune graunt that he lead a good
cc and honest life. Many men be very rich, & yet for all that be
cc not blessed and happie. And manye that haue but meane
cc wealth, be fortunate. He that is rich and wealthie, & there-
cc withal not happie, excelleth him that it fortunate & happy
cc onely in two thinges, but thother surmounteth the riche
cc man in many thinges. The two thinges wherein the rich
cc excelleth thother be these. Thone in satisfying his lust and
cc affection, thother in power and abilitie, to susteine harde
cc fortune and aduersitie. And as the meane man is inferiour
cc to the rich in these two points, which by fortune be denied
cc him, yet he doth excell him, because he neuer hath experi-
cc ence of them, he liueth in good and prosperous health, he
cc neuer feeleth aduersitie, he doth nothing that is wicked,
cc he is a father of good children, he is indued with formosity
cc and beautie who if (besides all those thinges) he die well
cc it is he to aunswere your demaunde that worthely may be
cc called happie. For before he die he cannot be so called: And
cc yet fortunate he may be termed. For to obtaine all (whi-
cc les you be a liuing man) it is impossible. For as one coun-
cc trie is not able to serue it selfe with all commodities, but
cc hauing one it lacketh an other: yet the same countrie that
cc hath most commodities is the beste: And as a mans bodie
cc hauing one perfectiõ is not perfect, because in hauing one
cc he lacketh another: Euen so he that hath most vertue, and
cc is indued with greatest nomber of the aforesaid commodi-
cc ties, and so quietly departeth his life, he in mine opinion is
cc worthy to be intitled with the name of a king. A mã must
cc expect thende of euery thinge whereunto it tendeth. For
cc God plucketh vppe by the rootes many men, to whom hee
cc hath giuen abundaunce of wealth and treasure. Cræsus
misliking the woordes of Solon suffred him to depart say-

inge, he

ing,he was a foole that meaſured pꝛeſẽt pleaſures with no better regard. After whoſe departure,the gods began to bende their indignation and diſpleaſure vpon him,becauſe he thoughte himſelfe the happieſt man aliue. Long time after Cræſus receyuiug courage and comfoꝛt from Apollo at Delphos: attempted warres againſt Cyrus kinge of Perſia. Who in thoſe warres was ouerthꝛowẽ, and taken pꝛiſoner after he had raigned xiiii.yeares,& was bꝛoughte by the Perſians to Cyrus. Then Cyrus cauſed a ſtacke of woode to be piled vp,and Cræſus fettred with giues,was ſet vpon the ſame. Who then remembꝛing ỹ ſaying of Solon, that no liuing man was bleſſed, oꝛ in all pointes happie,cried out in lamentable wyſe. O Solon,Solon,Solon, which Cyrus hearing,cauſed his interpꝛeters to demaund of him,what the ſame Solon was. Cræſus with much difficultie toulde what he was, and declared all the talke betwene him and Solon.Wherof when Cyrus heard the repoꝛt, he acknowledged himſelfe to be alſo a man,and ſoꝛe repẽted that he wẽt about to burne him,which was equal vnto him in honour and riches,confeſſing nothing to be ſtable and certaine in the life of mã. Wherupon he commaũded the fire to be taken awaye,which then began to flame. And ſo with much a doe,he was deliuered. Then Cyrus aſked him,who gaue him counſaile to inuade his countrie, to make his frende his foe. Euen my ſelfe (ſaide Cræſus) thꝛough vnhappie fate, by the perſwaſion of the Greekiſh God,which gaue me coũſaile,to make warres vpon thee. Foꝛ there is no mã ſo madde,that had rather deſire warre then peace. Foꝛ in peace ſommes burie their fathers,but in warres, fathers burie their childꝛen. But that theſe thinges be come to paſſe, I maye thancke the deuils good grace. Afterward Cyrus intertained him very honourablie,and vſed his counſell,which he found very holſome and good.

¶ Of a

¶ Of a father that made suite, to haue his owne sonne put to death.

The vij. Nouell.



Here was a man borne in Mardus (which is a Countrie adioyning vnto Persia) called Rhacon, that had seuen children. The yongest of them (named Cartomes) afflicted diuers honest mẽ, with greate harmes and mischiefes. For which cause the father began to reforme him with words, to proue if he would amend. But he litle waying the good discipline of his father: It chaũced vpon a time that the Iustices of the countrie, repaired to the Sessions in that towne, where the father of ẏ childe did dwell. Who taking his sonne, and binding his handes behinde him, brought him before the Iudges. To whom hee remembred by waye of accusation, all the mischiefes, which his sonne from time to time had committed, & desired the Iudges, that he might be condempned to die. The Iudges amazed with that request, would not themselues giue sentence against him, but brought both the father and the sonne, before Artaxerxes the king of Persia: In whose presence ẏ father still persisted in ẏ accusation of his sonne.

"Why (q the king) canst thou finde in thy harte, that thine
"owne sonne should be put to death before thy face? Yea tru-
"ly (q the father. For at home in my gardẽ, when the yong
"Lactuse begin to growe, I cutte of the bitter & sower stal-
"kes frõ them. For pitie it were, the mother Lactuse should
"sustaine sorow, for those bastard and degenerate shrubbes.
"Which beinge taken awaye, she prospereth and encreaseth
"to great sweetenesse and bignes. Euen so (O kinge) if he
"he hanged that hurteth my whole familie, and offendeth ẏ

honest

honest conuersation of his brethren, both my selfe shalbe increased, and the reste of my stocke and linage shall in like sort prosper and continue. The king hearing those words, did greatly praise the wisedome of Rhacon, and chose him to be one of his Iudges, pronouncing these wordes before the multitude. Hee that dare thus seuerely and iustly pronounce sentẽce vpon his owne child, doubtles he wil shew himselfe to be an incorrupt and sincere Iudge, vpon the offences of other. Then the kinge deliuered the yongman, from that presente faulte, threatninge him with most cruell death, if after that time, he were apprehended with like offence.

¶ VVater offered of good will to Artaxerxes king of Persia, and the liberall rewarde of the Kinge to the giuer.

The ix. Nouell.

THere was a certaine Persiã called Sinętas, that farre frõ his owne house mette king Artaxerxes, and had not wherwith to present him. For it was an order amõges the Persians, instituted by law, that euery mã which met ỳ king, should giue him a present. Wherfore the poore man because he would not neglecte his dutie, ranne to a riuer called Cyrus, & taking both his handes full of water, spake to the king in this wise. I beseech God ỳ your maiestie, may euermore raigne amonges vs. As occasion of the place, and mine ability at this instant serueth, I am come to honour your maiesty, to the intent you may not passe wout some present For which cause I giue vnto you this water. But if your grace had ones

cc ones encamped your selfe. I would go home to my house,
cc for the best and dearest things I haue to honour your ma-
cc iestie withall. And peraduenture ẏ same shall not be much
cc inferiour to the giftes, which other now do giue you. Ar-
cc taxerxes delighted with this fact, sayde vnto him. Good
cc fellowe I thancke thee for this presente, I assure thee, the
cc same is so acceptable vnto me, as the most precious gift of
cc the worlde. First, because water is the best of all thinges,
cc then because the Riuer, out of the which thou diddest take
cc it, doth beare the name Cyrus. Wherefore I commaunde
cc thee, to come before me, when I am at my campe. In spea-
cc kinge those words, he required his Eunuches to take ẏ pre-
cc sent, and to put it into a cuppe of gold. The king when he
cc was lodged in his pauilion, sent to the man a Persian robe,
cc a Cuppe of Golde, and a thousande Darices (which was a
cc coigne amonges the Persians, wperupon was the Image
cc of Darius) willinge the messenger to saye vnto him, these
cc wordes. It hath pleased the king, that thou shouldest de-
cc lighte thy selfe, & make mery with this gold, because thou
cc diddest exhilarate his minde, in not suffering him to passe,
cc without the honour of a present: but as necessitie did serue
cc thee, diddest humblie salute him with water. His pleasure
cc is also, that thou shalt drincke of that water in this Cuppe
cc of gold, of which thou madest him partaker.

Artaxerxes hereby expressed ẏ true Image of a princely minde, that would not disdaine cherefully to behold the homelie gifte (in our estimation rude, and nothing worth) at the handes of his poore subiect: and liberally to reward that duetifull zeale, with thinges of great price & valour. To the same Artaxerxes, riding in progresse through Persia, was presented by one called Mises, a very great Pomegranate in a Siue. The king marueiling at ẏ bignes therof, demaunded of him out of what garden he had gathered the same. He aunswered out of his owne. Wherat the king greatlye reioysinge, recompenced him with princelye rewardes,

wards, saying: By the Sunne (for that was the common oth of the Persian kinges) this man is able with such trauaile and diligence in my iudgemēt to make of a litle citie, one that shalbe large and great. Which wordes seeme to declare, that all thinges by care, sufficiente paine and continual labour, may against nature, be made more excellent and better.

¶ The loue of Chariton and Menalippus.

The x. Nouell.

NOwe will I rehearse a fact of the tyrant Phalaris farre discrepante from his conditions, because it sauoureth of great kindnes and humanitye, and seemeth not to be done by him. Chariton was an Agrigentine borne, which is a towne in Scicilia, & a great louer of beauty, who with ardent affection loued one Menalippus, which was also borne in that Citie, of honest cōditions and of excellente forme and comelines. This tyraunt Phalaris hindred Menalippus in a certaine sute. For he contending in iudgement with one of Phalaris frendes, the tyraunt commaunded him to giue ouer his suite: wherunto because he was not obedient, he threatned to put him to death, except he would yelde. Notwithstanding Menalippus ouercame him in law, & the noble men, which were the frends of Phalaris, would giue no sentēce, but brought the matter to a Nonesuite. Which the yong man takinge in ill part, said, he had receiued wrong, and confessed to his frend Chariton the wrong he had sustained, requiring his ayde to be reuenged vpon the tyraunt. He made other yonge

men priuie to his conspiracie, such as he knewe woulde be ready and apte for that enterprise. Chariton percepuinge the rage and furie of his frende, knowinge that no man would take his parte for feare of the tyraunt, began to dissuade him, sayinge: that he himselfe went aboute the like attempte, a litle before, to deliuer his country into libertie from present seruitude, but he was not able to sort ȳ same to any effect, without great daunger. Wherfore he praied hym to commit the consideration thereof vnto him, and to suffer him to espie a time apt and conuenient. Menalippus was content. Chariton reuoluing with himselfe that deuise, woulde not make his deare frend a partaker of the fact least it shoulde be perceiued, but he alone tooke vppon him to do the deede, that onely himselfe might sustaine the smart. Wherefore taking a sword in his hande, as he was seeking way to giue the assault vpon the tyraunt, his enterprise was disclosed, and Chariton apprehended by the Guarde, which for the tyrauntes defence, diligently attended about him. From thence he was sent to the Iaole, and examined vpon interrogatories to bewraye the rest of the conspiratours. For which hee suffered the racke, and the violence of other tormentes. Afterwardes Menalippus remembring the constancie of his frende, and the crueltye by him stoutly suffered, went to Phalaris and confessed vnto him that not onely he was priuy to that treason, but also was the aucthour thereof. Phalaris demaundinge for what cause he did it, tolde him the consideration before rehearsed, which was the reuokinge of sentence, and other iniuries done vnto him. The tyraunt maruaylinge at the constant frendshippe of those twaine, acquited them both. But vppon condition that both shoulde depart oute of the citie and countrie of Scicilia. Neuertheless, he gaue them leaue to receiue the fruites and commodities of their reuenues. In record and remembrance of whose amitie, Apollo sang these Uerses.

The

The Rayſers vp of heauenly loue,
amonges the humaine kinde:
VVere good Chariton and Menalippe,
whoſe like vnneths we finde.

This Phalaris was a moſt cruell tyrannte of the citie of Agrigentine in Scicilia, who beſides other inſtrumentes of new deuiſed tormentes, had a Bull made of Braſſe, by the art and inuention of one Perillus. Into which Bull, all ſuch as were condemned to death were put, and by reaſon of extreame heate of fire made vnder the ſame, thoſe ỳ were executed, yelled foorth terrible ſoundes and noyſes, like to the lowing of a Bull. For which ingine and deuiſe, Perillus thinking to obtaine great reward, was for his labour, by commaundement of the tyrannt, throwen into the Bull, being the firſt that ſhewed the proofe of his deuiſe. Within a while after, alſo Phalaris himſelfe, for his great crueltie, was by a general aſſault, made vpō him by ỳ people, haled into the ſame Bull and burned. And althoughe this tyrannte farre excelled in beaſtlye crueltie, yet there appeared ſome ſparke of humanitie in him, by his mercye extended vpō Chariton and Menalippus, the two true louers before remembred. The ſame Phalaris wrote many proper and ſhort Epiſtles, full of vertuous inſtructions, & holſome admonitions.

¶ Kinge Cyrus perſwaded by Araſpas, to diſpoſe himſelfe to loue a Ladie called Panthea, entreth into a pretie diſputation and talke of loue and beautie. Afterwards Araſpas himſelfe falleth in loue with the ſaide Ladie, but ſhe indued with great chaſtitie, auoydeth his earneſt ſute. And when ſhee heard tell that her huſbande was ſlaine in the ſeruice of Cyrus, ſhe killed herſelfe.

The xi. Nouell.



Efore the beginning of this Hiſtorie, I thought good by way of Proeme, to introduce the wordes of an excellente writer called Lodouic⁹ Cælius Rhodoginus, who ſaith that S. Hierome the moſt holy and eloquent father, affirmeth that vertues are not to be pōdered by the ſexe or kinde, by whom they be done, but by ꝑ chaſte and honeſt minde. Wherewith if euer any woman was affected, truly it was the fayre Ladie Panthea. For which I would no man ſhould blame me of vngodlines, or indiſcretion, in that I do remember a woman mentioned in prophane authours, becauſe at this preſent I am not minded to make bewe of Chriſte his ſecretes, which are his deuine Scriptures, wherein be contayned the Ghoſtly liues of ſacred dames, wherein alſo aboundantly doth ſhine and glitter, the celeſtiall mercie of our heauenly Father. But let the Reader remember that we be now conuerſant in ꝑ auncient monuments of other prophane aucthours, & out of them do ſelect moſt pleaſant places to recreat ech weary minde. This Panthea therfore as Xenophon writeth, and partly as S. Hierome reporteth, was the wyfe of Abradatas a noble perſonage, and in warlicke factes very ſkilfull, dearely beloued of Cyrus king of Perſia, with whom this Lady Panthea was captiue, at the ouerthrow of the Aſſyrians. King Cyrus then after his enemyes were vanquiſhed, hearinge tell of this gentlewoman, called vnto him one of his deareſt frends named Araſpas which was a Median borne, the very minion, playe felow, and companion of Cyrus from his youth. To whom for ꝑ great loue that he bare him, he gaue the Median robe of from his owne backe at his departure from Aſtiages into Perſia. To this gentleman, king Cyrus committed the cuſtodie of the Ladie, and of her tente. Abradatas her huſbande (when ſhe

was

was taken prisoner) was before sente in Ambassage to the king of Bactria by the Assirian king, to intreate of peace, because he was his familiar frend. When Araspas had receiued the keeping of the Ladie. He asked Cyrus whether he had seen her, No truly said Cyrus. Then haue I, saide Araspas): and haue chosen her specially for your owne person. And when we came into her Pauilio, none of vs could tell, which was she, for she set vppon the grounde, with all her women about her, and her apparell was like vnto her maides. But we desirous to know which was ỳ maistres, beheld them all, and by and by shee seemed to excell them all, although she satte with her face couered, loking downe vpon the grounde. And when we bad her to rise vp, all the rest rose vp also. She did farre surmounte her maides, as well in making and lineamentes of body, as in good behauiour and comelinesse, although she was clad in simple apparell. The teares manifestly ranne downe her eyes vppon her garments, distilling downe euen to her feete. To whom he that was most auncient amonges vs said. Be of good chere Lady. We heare tell that you haue a very valiaunte man to your husbande, such one whose practize and experience is well knowen & tryed amongs greatest princes, notwithstanding we haue chosen for you a gentleman, ỳ is not inferiour to him, either in beautie, force, wisedome or valiaūce. And we do verely beleeue, that if there be any man in this world, worthie of admiration, it is Cyrus our Prince and Lorde, whose paragon wee haue chosen you to bee. When the Lady hearde them saye so, she tare the attirement from her head and body, she cried out, and all her maides skriched w̄ her. At which times the greatest part of her face appeared, and so did her necke and hands. And assure your selfe (Cyrus) to vs that viewed her well, it seemed impossible, that such a creature coulde be borne of mortall parentes in Asia. Therefore sir, looke vppon her in any wise. To whom Cyrus said. The more praise ye giue

her, the lesse minde I haue to see her, if shee be such one as you haue saide. And whye so (q Araspas). Because (sayde Cyrus) if I should go to see her, hearing you make this reporte of her beautie (leasure not seruinge me thereunto) I am afraide, lest she would sone alure me, to go many times to beholde her. Whereby I might perchaunce, grow negligent in my matters of greatest importance. The yong gentleman smiling, said. Thincke you Cyrus, that the beauty of a womã, can force a man vnwilling, to attempt a thinge that should not be meete for him. If nature haue that force in her, she would compell all men a like. Do you not see, ỳ fire burneth all men after one sort, because it is his nature: Beautifull thinges be not had in equall estimation, some be of great price, some not so, some do regarde this, some that. For loue is a voluntarie thing, and euery man loueth what he list. The brother is not in loue with the sister, but of another she is loued. The father is not in loue with the doughter, & yet she is beloued of another. For feare & law are able enough to restraine loue. But if there were a law made to cõmaund men, that they which did not eate, should not be hungrie, and they, that did not drinke, should not be a thirst, and that no man should be cold in Winter, & hotte in Sommer, that lawe coulde not compell men to obeye. For men by nature be subiect to those infirmities. But to loue, is a thinge free and voluntarie. Euery man loueth thinges that be his owne, as his apparell and other his necessaries. Whereunto Cyrus replied. If loue be voluntary: how can it be that a man may abandon the same, when he liste: But I haue seene men weepe for sorowe of loue, I haue knowen them that haue beene slaues to loue, who before they haue loued, haue thoughte theraldome, the greatest euills geuing awaye many thinges, which had beene better for them to haue kept: and haue prayed to God to be exonerated of loue, aboue all other diseases, and yet coulde not be deliuered, being bound with stronger imprisonmẽt,

then

then if they had beene tied with chaines, yelding themselues to their louers, seruing them with all obedience. And when they be hampered with such mischiefes, they seeke not to auoide them. They do so in deede as you saye (answered the yong man,) And therefore such louers be miserable, wishing still to die and yet still continue in their woe and calamitie. And where there be a thousande wayes to bereue them of life, yet they do not die. Some of them fall to stealing and robbing of other men. But when they haue robbed and stolen anye thing thou with the first thinkinge theft vnnecessary, doest condemne them as theeues, whom thou dost not pardon, but punish. In like maner the beautifull doe not councell men to loue them, or couet that is not lawful. But miserable men shewing themselues inferiour to all lustes and desires, doe in the ende accuse Loue, to be the authour of their miserie. Good and honest men, although they desire golde, beautifull horses and faire women, yet they can well ynoughe abstaine from them all, as not subiect to them more then is meete. For I my selfe haue beholden this woman, which seemeth to be a surpassing faire wight: and yet I am now with you, I ryde and do other thinges, according to my dutie. Peraduenture (said Cyrus) you went some awaye, then loue coulde haue time to fasten vppon you. For fire touchinge a man, doth not straite burne him: And woode is not by & by in flame, yet would I not willingly touch fire, nor behold beautiful persons. And I would giue you counsaile Araspas, to beware how you suffer your eyes to rolle, & wãder vpon faire women. For the fire burneth them, ẏ touch it: And beautifull folke, do kindle them ẏ behold them a farre of, in such wise as they burne for loue. I warrãt you Cyrus (sayd Araspas.) For if I do continually loke vpon them, I wil not so be drowned in loue, as the same shall prouoke me to do any thing ẏ doth not become mee. You saye well sayd Cyrus. Therfore keepe this woman as I bid you, & loke wel

vnto her. For peraduenture she is taken in good time. And so they departed. The yong gentleman marking the singuler beautie of the Lady, and perceyuing her great honesty, he hauing custodie of her, thoughte he woulde do her pleasure, and by gesture sawe that she was not ingrate and vnthanckfull, but very diligent. She caused her seruauntes to prepare all thinges in readines at his comming in: And if he were by chaunce sicke, shee toke order that he shoulde lacke nothinge. Upon which occasions, he fell in loue with her. And no maruaile. For she was (as before is saide) a woman very fayre and amiable. Afterwards king Cyrus desirous to send a spie into the countrie of Lydia, to learne what the Assyrians did: Araspas which had the keepinge of the fayre Lady, seemed most mete for that purpose. But Araspas chaunced to fall in loue with the Ladie, in suche wise as he was forced to breake his minde vnto her, for ꝑ satisfying of his pleasure. Which request, like a faithfull & louing woman to her absent husband, she denyed. Howbeit she would not accuse Araspas to Cyrus, being a fraide to set variaunce betweene frendes. Araspas thinkinge it a great shame and reproche vnto him, not to obtaine his desire: threatened the Lady, that if she would not yeld to his request, he would haue it perforce. Then the woman fearing violence, kepte the thing no longer secrete, but sente one of her Eunuches to Cyrus, to discouer the whole matter. Which whē he heard, he laughed hartely at Araspas, that sayde and made his vaunte that he was superiour to loue, sending Artabasus with the Eunuch, to commaund him not to force the woman: but if he could by fayre meanes allure her, he would not be against him. When Artabasus came to Araspas: he rebuked him, both for his infidelity in the thinge committed vnto his charge, and also for his wickednesse, iniurie, and incontinencie. Wherwithall Araspas wepte for sorowe, beinge oppressed wyth shame,

and

and confounded with feare, for the displeasure of Cyrus. Whiche thing Cyrus vnderstanding, called him, and priuely sayd thus vnto him. I see Araspas that you be afraied of me, and much ashamed. But be contente, for I knowe that the Goddes haue bene vanquished with loue, and haue learned what thinges the wisest mē haue suffered for loue. And I haue accused my selfe, bicause I couldnot conteine, being in companie with faire personages. And of this misshappe happened to you, I my selfe am the occasion. For I compelled you to that inuincible matter. Araspas making aunswere sayd: you be in this thing, O Cyrus, euen like vnto your selfe, as you be in all other. You be mercifull, & full of clemencie. But the brute that shall rise hereof is, that, whiche maketh me moste pensife, for so sone as the rumour of my calamitie, is dispersed, mine enemies will reioyce, and my frendes will counsaill me to flee, lest youre maiestie do hainously take reuenge of mine offence. Well Araspas, said Cyrus: By that opinion and brute, you shall do me greatest seruice, and profite very muche my confederates. How can that be (said Araspas)? Where in for that respect shall I be able to doe you any seruice? If presently (q Cyrus) you do make as though you fledde from me, and by going to myne enemies, you maye wynne of them great credite. Uerely (sayd Araspas) I suppose that I and my frendes, might raise a rumour in deede, that I am fled from you for feare. So may you (sayd Cyrus) returne vnto vs againe, when you knowe our enemies secretes. For I thinke they will make you priuie to all their counsell and deuises. And you being in credit, shall be made priuie to all their appointementes whiche wee desire to knowe. I will euen nowe depart (sayd Araspas) for it is very likely, that this my departure, may seme to be an argumēt of trouth, bicause I seme to flie for feare of punishement. Can you in that maner forsake faire Panthea (q Cyrus?) Truely (said he) it euidently nowe appeareth, that I am endewed with

"two mindes. With the one I haue plaied the Philosopher,
"with loue that vntrue Sophistre. For ther is no one mind
"which is good and badde, and at one time is rapt with the
"loue of good and euil thinges, ne yet at one instant can wil
"and will not together. Wherefore it is manifest, that ther
"be two mindes. When ỹ good minde ruleth, it doth things
"that be honest, when the euill is superiour, it worketh ill.
"And now the good minde, by making you his frende & con-
"federate, doth puissantly gouerne. Well (sayde Cyrus) if
"you goe, you must beware, that your credite may increase
"amonges them. Tell them hardly, the somme of our inde-
"uours, but in suche wise, as our doinges may bee lettes to
"their practises. And this shall hinder their deuises muche,
"if you saie that we determine to inuade their countrie. For
"hearing this, they will not assemble their whole power,
"euery man fearing his priuate part. And see that you tary
"with thē a good space. And looke which partes they meane
"soonest to approche, the same be moste conuenient for vs to
"knowe. And bid them to be ready, whensoeuer they thinke
"time. For when you shall depart from them although they
"know you to be priuie to their order, yet they must needes
"kepe the same, and be afrayd to alter it, lest they confounde
"them selues, through their sodaine chaūge. Thus Araspas
departing, telling his moste trustie seruauntes, what hee
would haue done in this matter, went his waye. But Pan-
thea hearing that Araspas was gone, sent to Cyrus this
message conteining these woordes.

"Bee not sorie Cyrus for the departure of Araspas, to
"your enemies. For if you wyll suffer mee, to sende for my
"husbande, I doe promyse you, that he shalbe a farre more
"assured frende then Araspas was. And I knowe he wyll
"come with so great power (for your ayde) as hee is able
"to make. For the father of the Assirian kyng, whiche
"nowe raigneth, was his frende. But this kyng vppon a
"tyme, went about to make a diuorcement, betweene my

husband

husbande and mee. Therefore, knowyng that this kyng, doth disdayne my husbandes good fortune, by hauing mee to wife. I am sure hee woulde sone be perswaded, to serue so noble a Prince as you be. Cyrus hearing her saye so, commaunded her to sende for her husbande, which she did. Abradatas knowing his wiues tokens, and vnderstanding the effecte of her message, spedely came to Cyrus with two thousand horsemen. They that were the Persian spies, sent to Cyrus, declaring what he was. Cyrus commaunded that forthwith, he should be brought vnto his wife. When the wife and husbande sawe eche other, they imbraced like twoo that mette after suche troublesome aduentures. Thē Panthea tolde her husbande the goodnes, temperance, and clemencie of Cyrus towarde her. Who hearing of her interteignement, sayde. What shall I doe Panthea, to render thankes to Cyrus, for you and mee? What other thing (saide Panthea) but to indeuour your selfe, to bee suche a trustie frende to him, as he hath bene to you. Then Abradatas went to Cyrus, and when he sawe hym, he tooke him by the right hande and sayde. For the pleasures that you haue done mee, O Cyrus, I haue no more to saye, but that I assure my selfe vnto you, as your frende, your seruaunt and confederate. And what soeuer I see you desyre, I shall employe my selfe, to the vttermoste of my power, to ayde and helpe you in the same. To whome Cyrus sayde, I accepte you, and for this tyme dismisse you, to goe and suppe with your wife. Then you shall agayne be placed in my Tente about me amonges your frendes and myne. And when Abradatas sawe the preparation of Cyrus, that hee made against his enemies, he addressed to make prouision of Armure, and thinges meete for the fielde for hym selfe. His wyfe Panthea, had made of her treasure, a Curate and helmet of Golde, and likewyse his vambraces, and had furnished the horses of the Chariot with brasen barbes.

When

When Cyrus had spoken diuerse oracions', for the incoraging of his armie, and had taken order, howe all thinges might prosperously succede, diuided his Captaines into seuerall battailes, appointing euery of them their charge: Abradatas shewed him selfe verie braue, and marciall in his Chariot. Who being about to put on a linnen breast plate, according to his countrie maner: his wife Panthea brought him an armure of golde, & a Purple gowne down to his feete, after Robe fashiõ, and a Crimsen skarfe. These thinges had she priuely wrought for her husbande, knowing the measure of his harnesse, whiche when her husband sawe, he marueiled, and said to Panthea. Wife, haue you
" not defaced your Jewels, to make this armure? Truelye
" (said Panthea) I haue a more precious Jewell then this.
" For if you proue a noble & valiant gentleman to other, as
" you haue done a louing & trustie husbãd to me, you are my
" deerest Jewell. In saying thus, she armed him, and would that no man should haue sene her: for the teares trickled downe her chekes. Abradatas being in the fronte of the armie, armed after this maner, appered a gallant and braue captayne, whose nature and complexion, agreed to his comelinesse. And taking ȳ raines of the Chariot in his hãds, he prepared him selfe to mounte vp. Then Panthea, all other being commaunded to stande backe, saide.
" Truely Abradatas, if there be women, that esteme their husbandes
" better then their owne liues, I thinke you knowe that I
" am one of them. Therefore what neede I to expresse, euery
" particular thing. My factes, as I thinke, do perswade you
" more then woordes. And thus indeuouring my selfe to-
" wardes you, our mutuall loue is such, as I had rather be
" buried quicke with you, being a noble man, then to liue in
" shame. I regarde you with the beste, and my selfe not as
" the worste. Great thankes we owe to Cyrus, for his Prin-
" cely interteignement of me, being a captiue, and chosen for
" him selfe, not like a prysoner with shame, but free without

spot or

spot or blemishe to mine honor. And vsed me, as though I »
had bene his brothers wyfe. And after Araspas departed »
from him, whiche had the custodie of me, I promised him, »
that if hee would giue mee leue to sende for you, that you »
should become more loiall and assured to him, then euer »
Araspas was. Abradatas delited with her chaste commu- »
nication, and tenderly laying his hand vpon her head: loo-
king vp to heauen, made this praier. O most mightie Iup- »
piter, graunte that I may shewe my selfe an housbande, »
meete for Panthea, and a frēde worthy of Cyrus, who hath »
so curteously dealt with vs. Thus speaking at the entrie of »
the Chariot seate, he went vp, and being set downe, the go-
uernour of Chariot made fast the seate. Panthea hauing
nowe nothing to embrace, kissed the Chariot seate. And so
he went forth. But Panthea followed him priuelie, till he
tourned and spied her, to whome he sayde. Be of good con- »
forte Panthea, A dieu and farewell. Then her Eunuches & »
women, conueighed her to her own Chariot, couering the
same with curteines.

Cyrus after the battaile and victorie, had against Cræ-
sus: called diuerse of his men vnto him, and demaūded if
they sawe Abradatas. For I marueile (sayde hee) that he »
commeth not vnto me. For before the battell, many times »
he appered in my presence. Whereunto one of his men an- »
swered. The cause is (sir) that he is not aliue. For hee was »
slayne in the battaile, as he inuaded the Ægiptians. The »
rest of his companie, except his owne souldiours, fled from »
him, when they sawe him incountre with the Aegiptian »
battaile. And thē his wife Panthea tooke him vp, and laid »
him in her owne wagon: conueighing him to a certayne »
place, by the Ryuer Pactolus. And (they say) that her Eu- »
nuches doe digge a graue to burie him. His wife sitteth »
vpon the ground, apparelled with those furnitures that he »
did weare, leaning her head vpon her knees. With whiche »
wordes, Cyrus was driuen into greate sorowe, clapping

him

him selfe vppon the thighe, and by and by mounted on his horse And taking wᵗ him M. horsemen: he went to mourne for his frende Abradatas. Moreouer he cõmaunded Gadatas and Gobryas, to carrie the fairest apparell they coulde get, to his good and honest frende that was dead, and to assemble his oxen and horse, and all his beastes and cattell, whersoeuer they were, that they might be sacrificed to Abradatas. But whē he sawe Panthea sitting vpõ the groũd and the dead corps lying by her, he wept for sorowe, & said. "Alake good woman, thou trustie and faithfull wife, doest "thou thus depart & leaue vs alone? And with those words he tooke her by the right hand, and therewithall was presented the dead hand of Abradatas, which the Aegiptians in the battailed had cut of: whiche when Cyrus sawe, hee then lamented, more then he did before. And Panthea cried out. Who cõforted by Cyrus, kissed the dead hand, bestowing the same againe in place, so well as she coulde, & sayde. "Thus it is chaunced Cyrus: but why do you beholde ẏ dead "body? This death I knowe (q̃ she) hee hath suffred for my "sake, being none of the lest aduentures, whiche he hath ha"zarded for me. And perchaunce Cyrus, he would haue done "no lesse for you. For I exhorted him (like a foole as I was) "to attempte this aduenture, to thintent he might haue she"wed him selfe a frende, of worthy remembraunce. Whiche "request he accepted, to pleasure you and me: He hath va"liantly bestowed his life & is dead, and I vnhappy caitife "that gaue him first counsayle, do sitte here aliue. Cyrus for "a certayn space holding his peace, powred forth abundãce "of teares, and then said. This gentleman (Lady Panthea) "hath a commendable ende, for he died in victorie. But take "these furnitures, and adorne him therewithall. For Go"bryas and Gadatas were come with riche & costly apparel. "Then hee sayde, bee sure he shalbe honoured with greater "thinges then these. A monumẽt also, according to his wor"thinesse, shalbe erected vpõ his graue. Sacrifice shalbe of-

fered,

fered, meete for a man so valiant and puissaunt. Thou likewyse shalt not be left comfortles. For in consideration of thy great chastitie and vertue, I will honour thee, and appointe a garrison to conuey thee into what place thou arte disposed to goe. To whom Panthea sayd. Be of good chere Cyrus, I wyll not hide from you the place, wherein I am determined to bestowe my selfe. Cyrus hearing her say so, went away, pitying the woman, that was bereued of suche a husbande, and lamenting the man, that had lefte suche a wife behinde him, and was like no more to see her againe. But Panthea commaunded her Eunuches to go out of the place, till she had satisfied her selfe with teares, and lamentations for her husbande. For she prepared to kil her selfe, requiring her Nurse to tarie by her, and cõmaunded her, that when she was dead, she should shroude her & her husbande in one garment. The Nurse perswaded the Ladie, with humble wordes and supplications, from her determined death. But she could not preuaile: and when she sawe that her maistres, tooke her wordes in ill parte, she satte downe and wepte. But Panthea with a swoorde, whiche she had prepared long time for that purpose, killed her selfe, & laying her head vpõ her husbandes breaste, she yelded from her chaste body, her innocent ghost. The Nurse seing that cried out, and couered them both, as she was commaũded. Cyrus vnderstanding the womans facte, was amazed, and spedely went to see, if she might be holpen. The Eunuches (being three in nomber) seing their maistres dead, they likewyse drewe out their swoordes, & killed theimselues in the place, where they were commaunded to stande. In memorie of whiche facte Cyrus erected a noble monument, to the perpetuall prayse of chastitie, and honest loue. Which (as Xenophon reporteth) remained to his daies, with their names ingrauen in Syrian letters.

Abdolo-

Of Abdolominus

¶ Abdolominus is from poore estate, aduaunced by Alexander the great, through his honest life, to be kyng of Sydone.

The. xij. Nonell.



Alexander the mightie and noble Emperour, after he had subdued Darius, the Persian kyng: at length came to Sydone, a famous citie, by reason of the auncient fame of the first foũders. The same citie was vnder the gouernement of Strato, and mainteined by the puissaunce of Darius, who yelding more by force of the people, then by free wil, was thought vnworthy, to raigne and rule there. Alexander at the request of his frende Ephestion, willed him to appointe one to be king, whom the Citizens should thinke moste worthy of that state. After profers of Ephestion, to diuers of the ponge gentlemen of that citie, and refusall made of their partes: they alledged that none ought to enioy the dignitie of their king, but such as were descended of the royall bloud. Thinking none to be more meete for that state, then one Abdolominus, who being of the royall race, for pouertie was inforced to inhabite a litle cotage without the citie. His good life was the
" cause of his pouertie, as it is to many other: and labouring
" in his daily trauell, vnderstoode not the bruite of the warre
" that troubled all Asia. Ephestion and the ponge gentlemẽ
" repaired vnto him, with garmentes to garnishe him like a
" king, and founde him making cleane his garden, whome
" they saluted, and saide. You must exchaunge your homelie
" clothes, with these riche robes, wherewith wee here pre-
" sent you. Washe your bodie that nowe is foule and vn-
cleane, take vppon you the courage of a kyng: and in this

state

state (wherof you be worthy) expresse the same sobrietie and continencie, you doe presently vse. And when you sitte in your regall seate, vsing the authoritie of life and death ouer your subiectes: Do in no wise forget the fortune, wherin you were before you were made king, ne yet for what purpose you did receiue it. The matter semed to Abdolominus like a dreame: and demaunded of theim, if their wittes were sounde, that did deride him in that sorte. But when he sawe them bynde by othe, their doynges to bee of trouthe, he washed him self, and taking the garment, which was purple and golde, went with them into the place. The fame was diuersly bruted of this facte. Some fauoured the cause, and some did froune against it. But suche as were riche, did reproue his pouertie and base estate, to those that were neare aboute Alexander, whiche made the kynge to sende for him. And when he had long beholdē his manner and order, sayd. Your personage doth not degenerate, from the fame of your progenitors. But I would fayne knowe, howe pacient you were in the tyme of your pouertie. I would to God (q Abdolominus) I could beare my prosperitie in lyke case now I am kyng. These handes did get that I desired. And hauing nothing, I lacked nothing. Whiche woordes made Alexander conceiue a good opinion of hym. To whome he restored the riches of the kyng before, and diuers other thinges, taken awaye by the Persians.

The Scythians oration.

¶ The oration of the Scythian Ambassadours to Alexander the great, reprouing his ambicion, and desire of Empire.

The. xiij. Nouell.

TVllie in the firste booke of his Offices, saieth, that very miserable, is ambicion and desire of honour: and that moste mē, whiche be giuen to cupiditie of gouernement, honor and glorie, bee forgetfull of Justice. The truthe of whiche graue wordes, vttred by a Prince of eloqnence, the rude and barbarous Ambassadours of Scythia, in plaine and homelie talke, boldly did pronounce to king Alexander (surnamed Magnus) when hee was about to inuade their countrie. For when he had within 3. dayes finished twelue thousand boates, to transporte his armie ouer the famous Ryuer of Tanais, (whiche deuideth Asia from Europa) against the poore Scythians, twenty Ambassadours of the Scythians, came to Alexanders Campe, to speake with hym, to proue if they coulde by woordes, withdrawe his entended purpose: Before whome when they were placed, the eldest of them spake these wordes.

cc If the Goddes had giuen thee a bodie, according to the
cc immoderate desyre of thy mynde, the whole worlde coulde
cc not be able to holde thee. With one of thy handes, thou
cc wouldest touche the Oriente, and with thy other hande the
cc Occidente. And when thou haste gotten that: thou wylt
cc desyre to knowe, where the brightnesse of the Diuine Ma-
cc iestie is placed. Thus thou coueteste after the thing, thou
cc art not able to receyue. Out of Europa thou marchest in-
cc to Asia, and out of Asia thou passest into Europa. After-

wardes,

wardes, if thou doest vanquishe all mankynde: thou must »
make warre with woodes and Snowes, with Ryuers and »
wylde beastes. What? Doest thou not knowe, that great »
trees growe long, and yet be rooted out of the grounde in »
a moment? He is a foole that looketh after the fruite, and »
doeth not measure the height of the tree, wheron it grow- »
eth. Take hede lest whyle thou doest contende, to clymme »
to the toppe, thou fallest downe with the bowes, whiche »
thou doest imbrace. The Lion also sometyme is made the »
foode of the smalest byrdes. And rust consumeth Iron. »
There is nothing so firme, that is not in perill of ỹ weake. »
What haue we to doe with thee? We neuer touched thy »
lande. What thou arte, and from whence thou commest, is »
it not lawefull for vs to bee ignoraunte, that liue in the »
waste wooddes? Wee can not be subiecte to any man, and »
wee desyre not to rule. Wee haue certaine giftes peculiar »
vnto vs, bicause thou shalt not be ignoraunte, of the state »
of our nacion. The yoke of Oxen, the Plough, the Darte, »
and the Bowl: Those things we vse, both with our frends »
and against our enemies. Unto our frendes wee giue the »
fruictes, gotten with the labour of our Oxen. And with »
them in our Bowle, we sacrifice wine to the Goddes. Our »
enemies we strike with the Darte a farre of, and with the »
Speare nere at hande. After that sorte in tyme paste, wee »
ouercame the kyng of Scythia, and afterwardes the kyng »
of Media and Persia, and the waye was open vnto vs into »
Aegipt. But thou whiche doest boaste, that thou art come »
to persecute Theues, art the common theefe of all nacions, »
whereunto thou makest thy repayre. The countrie of Lidia »
thou haste taken. Thou haste enioyed Syria. Thou doest »
possesse Persia, and the Bactrianes bee vnder thy power. »
Thou doest goe into India. And nowe thou extendest thy »
vnstable and grevie handes vppon our Cattell. What »
neede haste thou of those ryches, whiche doe make thee so »
hungrie? Thou art the first of all men, whiche with facie- »

» tie hast gottē famine, that the more thou hast, the more gre
» dely thou couetest after thinges thou hast not. Doest thou
» not remember, how long thou hast sticked about Bactria?
» And whiles thou goest about to bring them in subiection,
» the Sogdians begin to reuolte. Thus warre doth grow vn
» to thee of thy victorie. For be thou neuer so great, & puis-
» sant ouer other, yet there be none that can indure to be go-
» uerned by straungers. Passe nowe Tanais, thou shalt per-
» ceiue what breadth it beareth, and yet thou shalt neuer o-
» uertake the Scythiās, whose pouertie is swifter, then the ar
» mie, which carieth the spoyle of so many naciōs. For when
» thou shalt thinke vs to be farre of, thou shalt see vs within
» thy campe, with like swiftnesse we folowe, & flee awaye, I
» heare that our desertes and voide places, be mocked by the
» Greeke prouerbes, we couet rather those desertes & places
» vnhabited, then cities & plentifull soyles. Therefore holde
» fast thy fortune, for she is tickle & can not be holden against
» her will. Folow thou the counsaile that is good, specially
» whyles the time doth serue. Bridle thy felicitie, and thou
» shalt rule it the better. Our countrie mē say, that Fortune
» is without feete, and that she hath onely handes & wynges,
» but when she stretcheth forth her hand, shee will not suffer
» her winges to be touched. Finally, if thou be a God thou
» oughtest to geue benefites to mortall men, & not to take a-
» way the commodities they haue already: but if thou bee a
» man, consider that thou art alway the same that thou arte.
» It is a foolishe part to remember those things, and to for-
» get thy selfe. Those people that fele not thy warres, thou
» maiest vse as thy frendes. For frendship is most firme & sta-
» ble emonges equall, & those seeme to be equall that haue
» not vsed force & violence emōges thē selues. Beware thou
» take them not for thy frendes whome thou doest subdue, &
» bring in obedience. There is no frendship betwene ỳ mai-
» ster and the seruaunt, and in peace the lawe of Armes is
» obserued. Beleue not that the Scythians doe bynde frend-

ship with

ship with any othe. For they make their othe, by obseruacion of faith. The maner of the Greekes, is to iustifie their factes, by inuocation of their Goddes to witnesse. But wee know, that Religion cõsisteth in faith her self. They which do not reuerence to men, do begile the Goddes. Thou hast no nede of him to be thy frende, of whose frendship thou stãdest in doubt. Thou hast vs as kepers of Asia and Europa. For we should touche the countrie of Bactria, were it not for Tanais, whiche deuideth vs. And beyonde Tanais all is ours so farre as Thracia, and the same is that Thracia bordereth vppon Macedonia: wee being neighbours, to bothe thy dominions, chose nowe whether thou wylte haue vs frendes or foes. These were the woordes of the Scythians. Howe be it these homelie and playne aduertisementes, could not diuerte kyng Alexander from his intended enterpryse, and accordyng to his desired successe, he ouercame them.

¶ The woordes of Metellus of mariage, and wiuing with the prayse and dispraise of the same.

The. xiiij. Nouell.

IN the presence of many learned men of Rome, Metellus surnamed Numidicus, for his victories and triumphe ouer Iugurtha king of Numidia, a countrie in Africa: In the tyme of his office of Censor, made an Oration before the Romain people, of mariage of wyues, vppon occasion that hee hym selfe, by diuers of his frendes, was perswaded to that state. Against whiche hee vsed manye vehemente inuectiues and termes, whiche Aulus Gellius omitteth, for that hee was loth to offend (whē report therof should be bruted) the nice eares, & louing mindes of the matrones, & dames of that

ctie. Knowing well that both they, and their successours: would not forget, reprochefullie to combate, with his spirite and shadowe, when they were not able (being preuented by earthly vermine) by anye meanes to impeche his corps, in tombe fast closed and buried. But when I do remember, howe the same was said, and also noysed emongs a bande of Heathen soules, whose mindes for want of godly skill, could not disgest such hainous blastes, as sounded in a time prophane, wherin no sacred voyce of christiã lore, was breathed vnto redemed flocke: I call to mynde that now I may, in time of grace, right frankely write, without offence to hũble state of matrone kinde, in these our daies, inspired with spirit of humble hart, whose eares no taunting talke can griue. Wherefore with blushles face, & vnstaied penne, I meane the woordes, of that well learned wighte, in open audience to pronounce, and by this booke, to suche elected sort for to declame. But loth for to offende, as one well bet in mariage schole, I must, a pæna & culpa, forgiuenes craue: lest some shreude Heathen dame (for other doubt I not) doe from her graue Al'Arme crie out. And then to fight with buried ghostes: my manhode will not serue, but by and by with posting legges, & flying fast I will retire. But doubtes here be brought foorth, where doubting cause is none. Gellius therfore in persone of the vnmaried knight, in woordes right fewe, this sentence of the maried state, doth vtter and proclayme.

cc O ye Romaines, if we could be without wiues, then all
cc we should wante that griefe. But bicause nature hath so
cc prouided, that neither with them we can liue and passe our
cc time conueniently, nor yet by any meanes be without them
cc satisfied, we ought rather to make preparation, for perpe-
cc tuall health, then for short pleasure. With which woordes, diuers of the Romaines were displeased, and founde fault with Metellus who (for that he went about, to exhorte the people to mariage) ought not by any meanes, to confesse a-

ny griefes

ny griefes and incommodities, to be in the same. But in these wordes he seemed rather, to dissuade & terrefie, thē to perswade and incourage. But contrarely he ought, rather to haue affirmed no sorowes and perplexities, to be in wedlocke, and if perchaunce any chaunced to be, they were but light, and easie to be borne & suffered, which for greater commodities and pleasures, might full well be forgotten, and those that were, happed not through natures vice, but by the default & ill behauiour of some maried folke. Howbeit, Titus Castritius supposed that Metellus spake well and worthely. For (said he) a Censor ought to speake » like a Censor, a Rhetorician like one that professed Rhetorike: It is giuen to Rhetoricians, to vse false sentences, » bolde, subtile and captious: if so be, they be likely, & may by » any action, moue the hartes of men. Moreouer he sayde, » that it was a shame for a Rhetorician, in an euil matter, to » leaue out any thing vntouched. But truely Metellus (q » he) is a holy man indued with grauitie and fidelitie, & that » it was not derent for so honorable a personage, as he was, » to speake any thing to the Romaine people, but that hee » thought to be true, and likely to seme true to all men: spe- » cially sithe he intreated of such a matter, as by daily know- » ledge, common experience, and frequēted vse of life, might » well be comprehended and knowen. Therfore in geuing to » vnderstande, a grieke notorious to al men, he hath deserued » by that oration, a fame of a diligent and faithfull man, bi- » cause (to be short) he easely & redely perswaded, that a citie » can not prosper and continue, without the vse of Matrimo- » nie, which of all things is most assured and true. This Ti- » tus Castritius was a teacher of Rhetorike in Rome, and in the same citie for declamatiō and teaching, was in greatest reputacion. A man of right great grauitie and authoritie: and of the Emperour Adrian, for his vertue & learning well estemed.

¶ Of Lais and Demosthenes.

The. xv. Nouell.

DHocion a peripatetique Philosopher, in a booke which he made, intituled Cornucopia, writeth this historie of Demosthenes & Lais the harlot of Corinthe, saying: That Lais by reason of her excellent beautie, and pleasaunt fauour, demaũded for the vse of her body, a great somme of money. Unto whom was resorte, of all the ryche men of Græcia: but she woulde not admitte them to that facte, except they would first giue vnto her, her demaunde. The quantitie of whiche somme was exceading greate, whereof rose the Prouerbe. Non cuiuis homini contingit, adire Corinthum.

Not euery man can well attaine
To goe to Corinthe towne.

He that traueiled to Corinthe to Lais, not able to giue and bestowe, that somme vpon her went in vaine. To this woman, that noble Philosopher Demosthenes secretly repayred, praying her to giue him leaue. But shee demaunding of him, tenne thousand Denarios (amounting very nere to three hundred pounde of our money) astonied at ꝑ wantonnesse of the woman, & discouraged with the greatnesse of the somme, retourned backe again, saying. I come not to buye repentaunce so dere.

¶ C. Fabritius and Aemillius Consuls of Rome, beyng promised that king Pyrrhus for a sõme of money should be slaine (whiche was a notable enemie to the Romaine state) aduertised Pyrrhus thereof by letters, and of other notable thinges, doen by the same Fabritius.

The

The xvi. Nouell.

WHē Pyrrhus king of Epirus, inferred warres vpon the Romaynes, & was come into Italie: & there had prosperously fought, and atchieued ẏ victorie of two or three battailes, wherby ẏ Romanes were brought to great distresse, and most part of Italie had reuolted: one Timochares Ambraciensis, a frend of king Pyrrhus, secretely repaired to C. Fabritius then Consul, and told him, if he would giue him a reward, he would poyson the kinge, which hee said, he might easely bringe to passe because his sonnes, at table waited vpon king Pyrrhus cuppe. Hereof Fabritius wrote to the Senate requiring their aduise. The Senate dispeached Ambassadours to the king commaūding them to saye nothing of Timochares, but to giue the kinge warning circumspectly to loke wel about him, to preuent such treasō, as by those that were nerest him might be attempted. Thus much is written in the history of Valerius Antiates. But Quadrigarius in the third booke, writeth that it was one Nicias and not Timochares, that went to Fabritius, and that those Ambassadours were not sente by the Senate, but by the Consuls, and that the kinge rendred praise and thanckes to the Romaines, restoring to them, all the prisoners, which he had taken. The Consuls that time were C. Fabritius & AEmilius. The tenour of which letters then sent to king Pyrrhus, ẏ said Cl. Quadrigarius affirmeth to be this. The Romaine Consuls send salutations to king Pyrrhus. We for thine iniuries, displeasures and wronges iustlie offended, for the valiaunte stomackes remaynинge in vs, do studie and indeuour like enemies, to continue warres vpon thee. But it seemeth good vnto vs for

cc for the loue we beare to our faith, and for cõmon example,
cc to wishe thee well to do, whom by armes we be not able to
cc vanquishe. There came vnto vs one Nicias, thy familiar
cc frende, to demaunde reward of vs, if secretely he did kill
cc thee: which we vtterlye denied, and required him for that
cc fact, to loke for no reward at our handes. Whereupon wee
cc thought good, to giue thee aduertisement hereof, lest if any
cc such thing did chaunce, the Cities should not thincke that
cc we were priuie to the fact. For wee delite not to fight with
cc giftes, rewards and treason. Thou in the meane time, ex-
cc cept thou take heede, art like to die. Farewel. This was the auncient order amonges the Romaines, that neuer were pleased, by ỹ cowardly ouerthrow of other, to winne fame and glorye. And because I rede an other excellente historie of ỹ same Fabritius, I haue thought good, to adde the same to this Nouell. When peace was concluded, betweene the Romaines and ỹ Samnites: the Ambassadours of the Samnites, repaired vppon a time to this Fabritius, who after they had remembred vnto him diuers & sundrie thinges, frendlye done in their behalfe, they offered vnto him for reward, a great summe of money, intreating him to receiue the same. Which the Samnites did (as the report was) because they sawe, that he wanted many thinges, for the furniture of his house, and maintenaunce, thinking the same also not to be sufficiently decente for his estate & calling. Which Fabritius perceyuing, with his bare handes, hee touched his eares and eyes, and then strooked his face downeward, his noase, his mouth and throate, and the rest of his bodie, to the bottome of his bealie, answearing the
cc Ambassadours in this wise. That whiles hee was able
cc to rule and gouerne all those members which he touched,
cc he was sure to lacke nothing. Wherefore (quoth he) these
cc members, which be profitable and necessarye for my vse,
cc will not suffer mee to receiue this moneye, whereof they
cc knowe I haue no neede. Hereby reprehending the foolish

indeuour of these Samnites, in offring to him a bryde, which hee was neuer accustomed to take for any cause, what soeuer be accomplished. Who stil shewed himselfe a man sincere and incorrupt.

¶ A Scholemaister traiterously rendring the noble mens sonnes of Faleria, to the hands of Camillus, was wel acquited and rewarded for his paines and labour.

The xvii. Nouell.

WArres were adressed by the Romaines, against the Falisques (a people of Italye, the ruines of the chiefe citie wherof, do yet appeare sixe miles from Viterba) and an armye conscribed and sent thether, vnder the conduct of Furius Camillus. The Falisques vppon the approch of the Romaines, were constrayned to retire within their citie, thinking the same to be their most assured refuge. And they to continue their siege, incamped a mile from the citie, & determined throughly to besiege it, which in deede had like to haue beene of verye long continuaunce except fortune had giuen to the Romaine Captaine, for his tried and well approued valiauuce, victorie in time which chaunced after this maner. It was a custome amonges the Falisques (obserued also in these oure dayes) to haue their children instructed by one Scholemaister, and him also to vse for their guide, and companion in all games and pastimes. Amonges theym there was a Scholemaister, which taughte noble mennes sonnes. Who in the time of peace, teachinge those children, and vsinge for theyr exercise, to leade them abroade in the fieldes, kepte still that order, for all the warres before the gates, sometime wyth shorte walkes, sometime wyth longer for their disportes. And continuinge varietie of talke wyth his

his schollers, longer then he was wont to do: at length he brought them to the Romaine campe, euen to the Tent of Camillus, hoping thereby (by like) to haue beene well welcomed, and liberally rewarded, saying to Camillus, as detestable woords as the facte was traiterous and wicked, which was in effect. That he was come with that present vnto him, to yelde those children into his hands, whose parentes were the principall of that Citie: And therby knew for certainty, that the citie would surrender. Camillus seing that fact, & hearing those woords, said vnto him. Thou
" arte not come (villane) to a people and Captaine, with this
" thy trayterous offer, semblable to thy selfe. We haue no
" aliaunce with the Falisques, confirmed by compacte or humaine promise, but amitie wherunto, nature doth bind vs,
" is and shall be for euermore betweene vs. Warre so well
" as peace, hath his law and right. Which we haue learned
" to obserue with no lesse Iustice, then constancie. We make
" no warre against boies, whom wee spare, whensoeuer we
" inuade or take any cities: But against armed mē we fight,
" yea, and against such, as without offence, or prouocation of
" our partes assailed the Romaines campe at the siege of ỹ
" Veiens. Thou hast vanquished them so much as lyeth in
" thee, with a new kinde of victorie atchieued by treasō. But
" I will subdue them by pollicie of ỹ Romaines, by vertue,
" indeuour and armes euen as I did the Veiens. When he had spoken those woordes, he caused this trayterous scholemaister, to be striped starke naked, and binding his handes behinde him, deliuered him to the children, with rodes in their handes, to whippe him home to the citie. When hee was in this order retourned, the people of the citie flocked together, to see this sight. Then ỹ magistrates assembled in counsaile, vpon this straunge occasion, and where before they were incensed, with maruailous wrath and furie, rather desirous of vtter ouerthrow, then peace: Now their mindes were quite altered, and peace vniuersally demaū-

ded.

ued. The fidelitie of the Romaines, & iustice of Camillus, both in Forum and Court was celebrated, and by general conformitie, Ambassadours were sente into the campe to Camillus, and from thence by Camillus sufferance, to the Senate of Rome, of purpose to yelde themselues to their gouernment, who being brought before the Senate spake these woordes. Wee (fathers conscripte) vanquished by you and your Captaine, (where at neither God nor man oughte to be offended) haue yelded our selues to you, thinking that wee shall liue more happie, and better contented vnder your gouernmente, then by our owne lawes and liberties, a thing that maketh the victor more glorious, and praise worthie, then anye other. By the successe of these warres, two holsome exãples, bee manifested to mankinde. Ye doe preferre fayth in warres, before certaine victorie, and we induced by that faith, haue of our owne accord, presented victorie vnto you. We be at your commaundemẽt: sende hither commissioners, to receiue our weapons, our pledges and our citie, which standeth with the gates wide open. We hope well, that neither ye shall haue occasion to be miscontented with oure fidelitie, nor wee offended with your gouernment and Empyre. For which facte, greate thankes were attributed to Camillus, both by ẏ Falisques and Romaynes.

Here appeared the face and true Image, of that greate vertue Iustice, wherewith this noble man was truly affected. His noble nature was not able to abide, any trayterous fact, done by vnnaturall Citizẽs, toward their owne countrie. No vngratitude of his owne countrie men, could withdrawe his nature, from the zeale and loue he bare to his countrie. His condempnatiõ by vnkinde Apuleius Saturninus the Tribune, for which he fledde to Ardea, could not let or impeach his magnanimitie, frõ giuinge ẏ Galles an ouerthrowe when they had sacked Rome, and sharpely besieged the Capitole: who in his absence (created Dictator) by

tor) by gathering together such Romaines as were fledde, vnwares set vpon the couetous Galles, as they were in cõtrouersie, for paimente of a golden summe of money, & thereby restored his countrie to libertie. Wherefore worthely might he be intitled, with the honourable name of a second Romulus. For as Romulus was the first builder, & peopler of that citie, so was Camillus the vindicator and deliuerer of the same.

¶ The Historie of Papyrius Prætextatus.

The xvij. Nouell.

THe same historie is written by Cato in an oration which he made to his souldiours against Galba, contayninge in effecte as followeth. The Senatours of Rome vsed before this time, to enter into ỳ Senate house with their sonnes, Prætextatis, that is, in long robes garded about the skirtes w̃ purple silke. When the Senate debated of graue and waighty matters, they euer deferred the same till the next day, forbiddinge that those causes, should not be published, before they were throughly decreed. The mother of this põg gentleman Papyrius, which had been with his father in ỳ Senate house, asked of him, what the fathers had done in the Senate house that day. Papyrius aunswered, that in any wise, he ought not to tell the secretes of the same. The mother more desirous to know, then she was before, went about by faire meanes, foule wordes and correction, to vnderstand the secretes of the Senate, and the cause why the same were kept so silente. Wherefore she more earnestlye endeuoured to learne the same of her sonne. The pongmã by compulsiõ of his mother, toke occasion to inuent a pleasaunt

saunt and mery lie, in this wise. Mother (q̄ he) the Senate doth deliberate and consult, whether it be more commodious and profitable for the common wealthe, that one man should haue two wiues, or whether one wife shoulde haue two husbandes. When the old Ladie heard this she was abashed, and in fearefull wise goeth to the other Ladies & matrones of Rome, tellinge them, where about their husbands did consult. The next day the women flocked together in great traines, and in lamentable wise repaired to ỹ Senate besechinge them that one woman, might rather be maried to two husbands, then two wiues to one man. The Senatours entring into ỹ Court, marueyled what toyes were in the womens heads, to make that demaunde. The yong gentleman Papyrius stepped foorth, declaring how importunate his mother was, to know whereuppon they consulted the day before, and therefore he deuised that fained tale, to pacifie her desire. The Senatours hearing & perceyuing his good and honeste disposition, greatly commended and extolled his fidelity and witte. Howbeit, they made a lawe that from that time forth, none of their sonnes, should come into ỹ house with their father, but onely Papyrius. Who afterwards receiued the surname of Prætextatus, to honour & beautifie his name, for his notable wysedome, in keeping secretes, and holding his peace, in the time of that youthly age.

How Plu-

Plutarche and his man.

¶ How Plutarche did beate his man, and of pretie talke touching ſignes of anger.

The xix. Nouell.



AVlus Gellius demaũding of the Philoſopher Taurus, whether a wiſe man could be angrie: Taurus after he had diſputed much of that affectiõ, turned to Gellius and ſaid. This is mine opinion of the angrie man. But what the Philoſopher Plutarche iudgeth thereof, I thincke it not a miſſe to tell thee. Plutarche had a bondman which was an vnthrift and wicked verlet, but geuen to learning, and to diſputation of Philoſophie, whõ vppon a time he did beate, making him to put of his coate, and to be whipped for what offence I know not. He began to beate him. The fellow cryed out, that he had deſerued no cauſe, why he ought to be ſo beaten. At length in continuance of his beating, he gaue ouer his crying cõplaintes, and began to vtter earneſte and ſerious woordes, ſaying.

cc It was not Plutarche ỹ Philoſopher, that did beate him,
cc he ſaid it was a ſhame for Plutarche to be angrie, and how
cc he had heard him many times diſpute of that vice of anger,
cc and ỹ he had written a goodly booke thereof, with manye
cc ſuch woords. Why (q Plutarche) with gentle and quiet de-
cc bating of the matter. Thou lubbor, do I ſeeme to be angry
cc with thee? Doeſt thou either by my countenaunce, by my
cc talke, by my colour, or woords, percepue that I am angrie?
cc Nether mine eyes be fierce, nor my mouth troubled, I cry
cc not oute a loude, I chaufe not in rage or fume, I ſpeake no
cc vnſeemely woordes, whereof I take repentaunce, I trem-
cc ble not. All which be ſignes and tokens of anger. Which
cc pretie notes of that vnſeemely paſſion, ought to miniſter to
cc all men, occaſion to auoyde that vice.

Apretie

Alwayes fixe fast in breast,
in prompt and ready wise:
This Prouerbe olde and true,
a sentence of the wise:
The thing do not expecte,
by frends for to atchieue:
Which thou thy selfe canst doe,
thy selfe for to relieue.

¶ A merie geste, vttered by Hanniball to king Antiochus.

The xxj. Nouell.

ANtiochus making great preparation and furniture, to inferre warres vpon ỳ Romaines, decked his armie with Siluer and Golden Enlignes & Pendentes, wherein he had plentie of wagõs, chariots and Elephantes with towers, his bande of horsemen glistered gloriouslie, with goldẽ bridles, trappers, barbes, and such like. The king beholdinge, in glorious and reioysing wise, his gaye & beautifull armie: loked towards Hannibal, and said. How saiest thou Hannibal. Thinkest thou that these thinges be not ynough & sufficiẽt to match with the Romaynes? Hannibal mocking & deluding, the cowardnes and weakenes of his souldiours, clad in those precious and costlie furnitures, saide. All these thinges be ynough and ynough againe for the Romaines,

although they were the most couetous men of the world. The king vnderstoode Hannibal, that he had meant of the nomber of his souldiours, and of their brauerie. But hee meant of the pray and spoile, which the Romaines should winne and gette.

¶ The marueilous knowledge of a Lion, being acquainted with a man, called Androdus.

The xxii. Nouell.

THere chaunced to be certaine playes and games at Rome, wher were many mõstruous and cruel beastes. But amonges all those beastes, the hugenesse and cruell aspectes of the Lions, were had in greatest wonder, especially of one. Which Liõ was of an huge and greate bignesse, hauinge a terrible voyce, his clawes stretched forth, his bristles and heare vpright, beholdinge with his fierce and deadly eyes, all the multitude standing by. There was brought in to fight w̃ the Lion amonges al the rest, one Androdus a Dacian borne, the bondman of a great personage, of the Cõsular order, whõ the Liõ beholding a farre of, sodenly stoode still. And afterwards by litle and litle, in gentle sort he came vnto the mã, as though he had knowen him: Wagging his taile like a Spaniel, fawning vpon his maister: & licked the handes & legges of the poore felow, which for feare was almost dead This Androd⁹ perceyuing ẏ flatteries of this fierce beast, recouered cõforte, & earnestly viewed & marked the Lion. Then they began to enter into mutual acquaintaũce, one reioycing at an others meting. Upon which straũg euent, ẏ people raysed great shoutes and acclamatiõs: wherupon Androdus was called before the Emperoure, and demaunded the

cause

¶ Of Sertorius a noble Romaine capitaine.

The. xxiij. Nouell.

LIke as in a good captaine, chosen out by any Prince & Monarche, to serue in his warres and exployctes, manhode and valiaunce is to be desired and wished: euen so in the same a politique minde, to forecaste and preuente, as well the saufetie and good gouernement of his owne charge, as the anoyaunce of the enemie is to be desired. Cicero in his oration Pro lege Manilia, affirmeth fower thinges, mete to be in a Generall or Lieutenaunte. That is to saye. Scientia rei militaris, virtus, authoritas, foelicitas, Knowledge of warfare, Manhode, Authoritie, & good Fortune, Knowledge and experience, in choyce of his souldiours, in trayning the ignoraunt, in lodging the cãpe, in politique order howe to dispose the Scoutes & watche, in making the approche, and defence of the armie lodged, with other necessarie orders, incident to the same. In manhode, boldlie to aduenture, warely to retire, pacientlie to suffer misfortune, hardly to lie, sparely to fare, stoutlie to abide stormes and colde weather. In authoritie wiselie to gouerne, gẽtly to speake, iustly to threaten, deseruedly to punishe, mercifully to forgiue, liberally to deuide, & louingly to be obeied. And in felicitie and good successe, to honour God: to be faithfull to the prince, to preuente ẏ enemy, not to triumphe before the victorie. To be constant in froward fortune, and corragious in extremitie. Al which & many other, are very mete & requisite in him, that shalbe put in truste, by his soueraigne Lorde or Ladie, to aduenture the painful charge of a Deputie, General, Lieutenaunt, or Captaine. Whereof, or in the chiefest of the same this noble gentleman Sertorius, a captaine of the Romaine citie, in time of Marius and Sylla:

when

when ỹ citie of Rome were at ciuile discention, had greate skil and knowledge. For besides his experience in the warres (as Plutarche saith in his life) hee was very abstinente from pleasures, and continente in other disorders, a rare thing in men of his calling. But because I purpose not to staye in the full discourse of his vertues, and qualities, I meane but to touche in this Nouell, so muche as Aulus Gellius (in whom I am now conuersāt) doth of him make remembraunce. Referring the studious reader, desirous to know the state of his life and doinges, to the plentifull recorders of such memorable & worthie personages: Plutarche de vitis illustrium, and Appian⁹ de ciuili Romanorum bello. Which beinge Greeke authours, be very eloquently translated in the Latine, thone by Gulielmus Xilander 1561. & thother by Sigismundus Gelenius 1554.

This Sertorius was of a pregnaunt witte, and therewithall a noble Captaine, very skilfull in the vse and gouernement of an armye. In distresse and harde aduentures, hee practised for pollicie, to make lies to his souldiours, to proue if they coulde preuaile. He vsed counterfait letters, to imagine dreames, & to conferre false religions, to trye if those thinges could serue his tourne, in comforting and couraging his souldiours. Amonges al the factes of Sertorius, this insuing was very notable & famous. A white Stagge of exceding beauty, and liuely sweteneſſe, was giuen vnto him by a Lusitanian: He perswaded every man, that the same was deliuered vnto him by the Goddes, and how the Goddesse Diana had inspired that beast, to admonishe and teach, what was meete and profitable. And whē he wente about to cause his souldiours, to aduenture anye hard and difficile exploit: he affirmed, that ỹ Stagge had giuen him warning thereof, whiche they vniuersally beleued, and willingly obeyed, as though the same had been sent downe from the Gods in deede. The same Stagge vpon a time, when newes came that the enemye had made

incurſi-

incursion, into his campe, amased with the haste and turmoile, ranne awaye and hid him selfe in a Marishe harde adioyning. Afterwardes being sought for, hee was supposed to be dead. Within fewe dayes after, tidinges was brought to Sertorius that the Stagge was founde. The messenger was commaunded by him to holde his peace, & threatened to be punished, if he did disclose it. The next day, the same messenger was appointed sodainly, to bring the Stagge into the place, where he and his frendes did consulte together. When they were assembled he tolde them howe the daye after that he had lost his Stagge, he dreamed, that he was come againe, & according to his custome, tolde him that was needefull to be done. Then Sertorius making a signe, to haue the order fulfilled, whiche he had geuen the daye before, by and by the Stagge brake into the chamber. Wherewithall a great shoute was made, & an admiration raysed of that chaunce. Whiche credulitie of the barbarous countries, serued Sertorius tourne, in his weightie affaires. A worthy matter also, is to be remẽbred of him, that no Souldiour that euer serued him, of those vnciuile countries (that tooke his part) did neuer reuolte or forsake him, although those kinde of people be moste inconstant.

¶ Of the bookes of Sybilla.

The. xxv. Nouell.

IN auncient Chronicles, these things appere in memorie, touchinge the bookes of Sybilla. A straunge and vnknowen old woman, repaired to the Romaine kyng Tarquinius Superbus, bearing in her armes nine bookes, whiche she sayde were deuine Oracles, and offered them to be solde. Tarquinius demaun-

demaunded the price. The woman asked a wonderfull somme. The king making semblaunce, as though the olde woman doted, began to laughe. Then shee gotte fyre in a chasing dishe, and burned three bookes of the nyne. She asked the kyng again, if he would haue the fire for that prise, wherat the king laughed in more ample sorte, saying: that the olde woman no doubt did dote in deede. By and by she burned other three, humbly demaunding the kiug the like question, if he would buye the reste for that price. Whereupon the kyng more earnestlye gaue hede to her requeste, thinking the constante demaundes of the woman not to be in vain, bought the three bookes that remained for no lesse price, then was required for the whole. Therewithall the woman departed from Tarquinius, and was neuer seene after. These bookes were kept in the Capitole at Rome, whereunto the Romaines resorted, when they purposed to aske counsayle of the Goddes. A good example for wyse men to beware, howe they despyse or neglecte auncient bookes and monumentes. Many the like in this Realme haue bene defaced, founde in Religious houses, whiche no doubte woulde haue conduced great utilitie and profite both to the common wealth and countrie, if they had bene reserued and kepte, whiche bookes by the ignorannt, haue ben torne and raised, to the great griefe of those that be learned, and of them that aspire to learning and vertue.

¶ A dif-

¶ A difference and controuerſie betwene a maiſter and a Scholler ſo ſubtile, that the Iudges coulde not geue ſentence.

The. xxvi. Nouell.



Diuers thinges be written, whiche although they ſeme of litle importaſice, yet they be wittie and comfortable to recreate honeſt mindes, and deſerue to be had in remembraunce. Emongs whiche Aulus Gellius (who repoꝛteth tenne of the foꝛmer Hiſtoꝛies, ſelected out of his booke De noctibus atticis) remembꝛeth this pꝛetie controuerſie. In Athenes there was a yong man, called Euathlus, who being deſirous to be an Oꝛatoꝛ, & a pleading Aduocate, to the intent he might poſtulate, accoꝛding to the accuſtomed maner of Athenes in thoſe daies: accoꝛded vpon a pꝛice, with a renowned Oꝛatour named Protagoras, that he ſhould inſtruct him that arte, foꝛ a pꝛice agreed vpon betwene them, vpon condicio that the Scholler ſhould pay, the one half of the money befoꝛe hande vnto his maiſter, and the reſte at ſuch time, as he ſhould pꝛoue to be an Aduocate, ſo well inſtructed, as the firſt matter, which he did pleade, he ſhould obtaine ſentence on his ſide, and gayne foꝛ his labour and induſtrie. But if ſentence were pꝛonounced againſt hym, he ſhould not be bounde to paye the ſame. Vppon this concluſion, the Maiſter taughte hym with greate diligence, the vttermoſte of his knowledge in that arte. The Scholler againe learned and receyued his teaching, with greate pꝛomptitude and readineſſe of witte. When Protagoras hadde taught him, the vttermoſt of his knowledge: The Scholler Euathlus, to defraude hym of the reſte of his money, determined neuer to be Aduocate, whoſe craft Protagoras

perceiuing,

perceiuing, cited him by writte, to appeare before ỹ iudge, to aunswere the reste of the bargaine. When they were both come in the Iudges presence, Protagoras spake to his scholer in this wyse. Euathlus, the bargaine betweene vs, thou canst not chose but confesse and acknowledge, whiche in effect is this. It was agreed, that I should teache thee, the arte of pleading, and in the first matter which thou didest pronoũce and sentence giuen on thy parte, thou shouldest paye me the other halfe of the money (for the first moitie I receiued before hande) and nowe to auoyde the satisfaction thereof (although thou knowest, that I haue full well deserued it) thou to defraude me of my duetie, refusest to be an Aduocate. But I wil tell thee, this thy determination is but vayne and frustrate: for I haue intangled thee in suche nettes, as thou canst not escape: but by one meane or other thou shalt be forced to pay mee. For if the Iudge doe condempne thee, then maugre thy head thou shalt be constrayned: and if contrariwyse sentence be giuen on thy side, thou shalt be likewyse bounde to pay me, by thy verie couenaunt, sithens thou art bounde, when thou pleadest first, and sentence should be giuen in thy behalfe. Doe nowe then what thou liste, for in fine thou shalt be forced to paye me, in despite of thy teethe. All the assistantes held with Protagoras, affirming his suite to be very reasonable. Notwithstanding Euathlus with a bolde spirite, aunswered for him selfe in this maner. Sir Protagoras, it semeth vnto you that I am conuicted, but staye a whyle and giue me leaue to speake: and then you shall perceiue in what wyse, I will confounde your argument. Here you haue brought your action against me, wherof I truste vpõ my reasonable answere, before the Iudges, to be discharged. For if by this your pleading, by circumstaunces and arte of an Oratour, whiche you haue vsed in all your discourse: the matter shall fall so out, as sentence be giuen on your side, then the bargayne made betwene vs, is voyde

and of

and of none effecte, bicause I losing the profite of my firste »
pleading: wherein by our agrement, sentence should be ge- »
uen on my behalfe, the same bargaine is not accomplished. »
For you should be payde the moitie of the money behinde, »
with that commoditie, which I did gayne by my first plea- »
ding: for whiche cause, there is no reason, but I must bee »
discharged of your demaunde. After this debating of the »
matter, the Iudges wayed with argumẽtes of both parts whiche semed so doubtfull vnto them, that knowing not howe to giue sentence, they suspended the processe.

The same Aulus Gellius, reciteth an other lyke question, whiche hee referreth to Plinie, as the firste authour thereof. There was a lawe (sayeth hee) in a certayne citie, that what soeuer hee were, that committed any valiaunte facte of armes, the thyng that he demaunded, whatsoeuer it were, should be graunted vnto him. It chaunced that a certayne persone did this worthy acte, and required that a mãs wife (whom he derely loued) should be giuẽ vnto him: whiche wyfe by force and vertue of the lawe, was accordingly deliuered. But afterwardes the man, from whome his wyfe was taken, did the lyke facte, and demaunding his wyfe to be redeliuered vnto him agayn, sayde vnto him that had her, if thou wilt obserue the lawe, thou must of »
force deliuer vnto me, my wyfe, but if thou do not like the »
lawe, thou oughtest yet to render her vnto me, as mine »
owne. The other aunswered him in like sorte. If »
thou obserue the lawe, this woman is myne, »
for I haue first wonne her by the lawe: »
but if thou do not approue the lawe, »
thou hast no right to demaunde »
her, shee nowe being »
myne. »

The loue of Antiochus

¶ Seleucus king of Asia, gaue his vvyfe to his ovvne ſonne in mariage, being his mother in lavve: vvho ſo feruently did loue her, that he vvas like to die, vvhiche by a diſcrete and vvyſe inuention, vvas diſcouered to Seleucus by a Phiſition.

The. xxvij. Nouell.



Although the wyſe Philoſopher Plutarche, elegantly and briefly deſcribeth this hiſtorie, in the life of Demetrius: yet bicauſe Bandello aptlye & more at large doth diſcourſe the ſame, I thought good to apply my pen to his ſtile. Who ſaith that Seleucus king of Babylon, a man verie victorious in battaile, was amongs the ſucceſſors of Alexander the great, & moſte happie & fortunate: He had a ſonne called by his fathers name Antiochus. After the deceaſſe of his wife, his ſonne increaſed, & gaue great hope of valiaunce in future time, to become a valiant gentleman, worthy of ſuche a father. And being ariued to. xxiiii. yeres of age: It chaunced that his father fell in loue with a very faire yonge gentle woman, diſcended of great parentage (called Stratonica) whom he tooke to wife, & made her Queene, & by her had one ſonne. Antiochus ſeing his mother in lawe, to be (beſides her great beautie) a curteous & gentle Lady, began to be very amerous of her, whoſe hart war ſo ſet on fire (without apparant ſhew) that incredible it is to expreſſe the loue that he bare her. And yet he thought that loue to be vnnaturall, becauſe ſhe was his fathers wife, & therefore durſt not diſcouer it to any mã. And the more ſecrete he kept it, the more the heate began to boile & conſume him. But bicauſe he ſawe that loue had fixed ſo deepe footing, that he

was not

was not well able to retire, hee determined after long sorow and great turmoile, to seke some quiet hauen, to rest his weatherbeaten barke, that had ben tossed with the waues of pensife and sorowfull cogitations. His father had many kingdomes and Prouinces innumerable vnder his Empire. At whose handes Antiochus craued licence to visite some of them, for his disport and recreation, of purpose to proue, if he could auoide that vnseasonable loue, wherewith his hart was suppressed. But he was no soner out of his fathers house, but his harte was vexed with greater tormentes then before, being depriued frō the sight of faire Stratonica, whose presence did better content him, then all the pleasures and sportes of the worlde. Neuertheless, desirous to vanquishe his indurate affections, he continued abroade for a certaine time, during whiche space, vnable to quenche the fire, he led a more desolate & troublesome life, then he did before. In the end victorious loue, toke him prisoner, and caried him home againe to his fathers house. Who seing the great loue that his father bare to his wife, and the ioyfull tyme that bee spent with faire Stratonica, transported into many carefull panges, many times complained to him selfe in this wise. Am I Antiochus the » sonne of Seleucus? Am I he that my father loueth so well, » honoreth so much, & esteemeth better then al his realmes & » dominions? Alas if I be Antiochus in deede, the sonne of » so louing a father, where is the duetifull loue, and bounde » reuerence, that I ought to beare vnto him? Is this the » duetie of a sonne towardes his father? Ah wretche and » caitife that I am. Whether hath grosse affection, vayne » hope, and blynde loue caried me? Can loue be so blynde? » Shall I be so voyde of sence, ỳ I know not my mother in » law, frō an other womā who loueth me no lesse, & entertai» gneth me so wel, as if she were mine own mother, ỳ laboured ẅ painful pāges, to bring me into light? Which being » true, as it is most true, why then do I loue her, nay rather »

cc moze then loue her? Why doe I seke after her? What
cc meane I to hope foz her? Why doe I precepitate so fond-
cc lye, into the snares of blynde and deceiptfull loue, and into
cc the trappe of deceiptfull hope? Can I not percepue that
cc these desyres, these vnstayed appetites, and vnbzydeled af-
cc fections, doe proceade from that whiche is dishoneste? I see
cc well enough that the waye I take, leadeth mee into great
cc inconuenience. And what repzoche should I sustayne, if
cc this vnreasonable loue, were made common to the wozld?
cc Dught not I rather to suffer infamous death, then to see
cc my father depzyued of suche a wyfe, whome hee so dercly
cc loueth? I wyll giue ouer this vnsemely loue, and reuer-
cc ting my mynde to some other wyght, I wyll accomplishe
cc the duetie of a good and louing sonne towardes his father.
Reasoning thus with hym selfe, hee determyned wholly to giue ouer his enterpzyse. And hee had no soner purposed so to doe, but sodaynly the beautie of the Lady appeared, as it were in a vision, before the face of his mynde, and felte the flames to growe so hotte, as hee vppon his knees, craued a thousande pardons of the louing God, foz the abandoning of his gentle enterpzyse. And therewithal contrarie imaginations began to ryse, whiche so contended with mutuall resistaunce, as they fozced hym thus to
cc saye. Shall not I loue this Ladie, because shee is my fa-
cc thers wyfe? Shall not I prosecute my suite, foz all that
cc shee is my mother in lawe? Ah cowarde, kayntharted, and
cc wozthy to bee crowned a Pzince of follye, if therefoze I
cc should giue ouer my fozmer mynde. Loue pzescribeth no
cc suche lawe to her suters, as pollicie doth to man. Loue cō-
cc maundeth the bzother to loue the sister, loue maketh the
cc doughter to loue ꝯ father, the bzother his bzothers wife, &
cc many times the mother, her sonne in lawe: whiche being
cc lawfull to other, is it not lawful to me? If my father being
cc an old man, whose nature wareth cold, hath not fozgotten
cc the lawes of loue, in louing her whom I loue: shal I being

a yong

a yong man, subiect to loue, and inflamed with his passiõs, »
be blamed for louing her? And as I were not blame wor- »
thy, if I loued one that were not my fathers wife, so must »
I accuse Fortune, for that she gaue her not to wyfe to an »
other man, rather then to my father, bicause I loue her, & »
would haue loued her, whose wyfe so euer she had bene. »
Whose beautie (to say the trouth is such) whose grace and »
comlinesse, so excellent, that shee is worthy to be receiued, »
honoured, and worshipped of all the worlde, I thinke it »
then cõuenient for me, to pursue my purpose, and to serue »
her aboue al other. Thus this miserable louer, trauersing »
in seuerall mindes, and deluding his own fansie, chaunged
his mynde a thousand times in an howre. In thende after
infinite disputations to him selfe, he gaue place to reason,
considering the great disconuenience, that would insue his
disordinate loue. And yet not able to geue it ouer: And de-
termining rather to die, then to yelde to such wicked loue-
or to discouer the same to any man. By litle & litle he con-
sumed, as sleting snow against ỹ warme Sone: wherwith
he came to suche feble state, that he could neither slepe, nor
eate, and was compelled to kepe his bedde, in suche wyse,
that with superfluous paine, he was brought to marue-
lous debilitie. Whiche his father perceiuing, that loued
him very tenderly, conceiued great griefe and sorowe. And
sent for Erasistratus (which was a very excellent Phisitiõ,
and of great estimation) whom very instantly he prayed, di-
ligently to loke vnto his sonne, and to prouide for him such
remedie, as was cõuenient for the greatnesse of his disease:
Erasistratus viewyng and beholding, all the partes of the
yonge gentlemans body, and perceiuing no signe of sicke-
nes, eyther in his vrine, or other accident, whereby hee
coulde iudge his body to be diseased: after many discour-
ses, gaue iudgement, that the same infirmitie proceaded
from some passion of the mynde, whiche shortelye woulde
coste hym his life.

Whereof he aduertised Seleucus. Who louing his sonne after a fatherly maner, and specially, because he was indued with vertue and good condicions, was afflicted with vnspeakeable griefe. The yong gentleman, was a marueilous towarde youth, so actiue and valiaunte, as anye that liued in his tyme, and therewithall verie beautifull and comely. Whiche made hym to be beloued of all men. His father was continuall in his chamber, and the Queene her selfe, oftentimes visited him, and with her own handes serued him with meates and drinkes, whiche bicause I am no Phisition, I knowe not whether the same did the yong mā any pleasure, or whether it did him hurt or good. But I suppose, that her sight was ioyfull vnto hym, as of her, in whom he had placed his comfort, all his hope, quietnesse, & delight. But beholding before his eyes so many times, the beautie of her, whome so greatly he desired to enioye, hearing her speake, that was the cause of his death, and receiuing seruice of meates & drinkes at her handes, whome he loued better, then ꝯ balles of his eyes: vnto whom he durst not make any request or praier, whether his griefe surmounted all other, and therefore continually pined and consumed, I thinke it of reason to be beleued. And who doubteth but that he feling him selfe, to be touched with those her delicate handes, and seing her to sitte by him, and so many times for his sake, to fetche so many sygbes, and with suche swete woordes, to bidde hym be of good chere, and that if he wanted any thing, to tell her, and praied him with pleasaunt woordes, to call for that he lacked, and that for his sake, she would gladly accōplish what he desired, who douteth I say, but he was marueilously tormēted, with a thousande cogitations, nowe cōceiuing hope, and now dispaire, and still concluding with him selfe, rather to dye, then to manifeste his loue: and if it bee a griefe to all ponge men, (be they of neuer so meane, and base condicion) in theyr youthlye tyme, to lose their lyfe, what shall we thynke of

Antiochus, beyng a younge man of freshe and flourishyng age, the sonne of a ryche and mightie kyng, that looked if hee escaped after the death of his father to bee heyre of all, did willingly craue death, of that small disease. I am assured that his sorowe was infinite. Antiochus then beaten, with pitie, with loue, with hope, with despyre, with fatherly reuerence, and with a thousande other thynges (lyke a shyppe tossed in depest Seas) by litle and litle beganne to growe extremely sicke. Erasistratus that sawe his bodye whole and sounde, but his minde greuously weakened, and the same vanquished with sundrie passions. After hee had with him selfe considered, this straunge case, hee for conclusion founde out that the yonge man was sicke of loue, and of none other cause. Moreouer he thought that many times, wise and graue men, through ire, hatred, disdaine, melancholie, & other affections, could easily faine & dissemble their passions, but loue if it be kept secrete, doth by the close keping therof greater hurt, then if it be made manifest. And albeit that of Antiochus, he coulde not learne the cause of his loue, yet after that imagination was entred into his head: he purposed to finde it out, by cõtinual aboade with him, & by great diligence, to obserue & marke all his actions: and aboue all to take hede to the mutation of his poulces, and whereupon, their beating did alter. This deliberatiõ purposed, he sat downe by the bed side, and tooke Antiochus by the arme, and helde him faste, where the poulses ordinarily do beate. It chaũced at that very instãt, that the Queene Stratonica, entred into the chãber, whom so sone as the yonge man sawe, comming toward him, sodainly the poulse which were weake and feble, began to reuiue, through mutatiõ of the bloud. Erasistratus feling the renforcing of the poulce, to proue howe long it would continewe, he remoued not at the comming of the Queene, but still helde his fingers, vpon the beating of the poulces. So longe as the Queene continued in the chamber, the beating

ting was quicke and liuely, but when she departed, it ceased, and the wonted weakenes of the poulces retourned. Not long after, the Queene came againe into the chamber, who was no soner espied by Antiochus, but his poulces receiued vigor, and began to leape, and so still continued. When she departed the force and vigor of the poulce departed also. The noble phisitiō seing this mutation, and that still it chaunced vpon the presence of the Queene: hee thought that he had founde out the cause of Antiochus sickenesse. But he determined better to marke the same, the next daye, to be the better assured. The morowe after Erasistratus, satte downe againe by the yonge gentleman, and tooke him again by the arme, but his poulce made no motion at all. The king came to see his sonne, and yet for all that his poulces were still. And beholde the Queene came no soner in, but sodainly they reuiued, & yelded suche liuely mouing, as if you woulde haue sayde: yonder is shee that
"setteth my harte on fyre. Beholde where she is that is my
"life and death. Then Erasistratus was wel assured and certaine, that Antiochus was feruently inflamed with his mother in lawe: but that shame constrained him to cōceale the hotte firebrandes that tormented him: and to keepe theim close and secrete. Certified of this opinion, before he would open the matter, he considered what way were best, to geue knowledge therof to king Seleucus. And when hee had well debated of this matter, he deuised this waye. Hee knew that Seleucus loued his wife beyonde measure, & also that Antiochus was so deare vnto him, as his own life.
"Whereupon he thus sayde vnto the kyng. Noble Seleucus
"thy sonne, is affected with a greuous maladie, and that
"(whiche is worse) I deme his sickenesse to bee incurable.
"At whiche woordes the sorowefull father, began to vtter
"pitifull lamentation, and bitterly to complayne of For-
"tune. To whome the Phisition sayde. If it please you (my
"Lorde) to vnderstande the occasion of his disease. This it is.

The

The maladie that affecteth, and languisheth your sonne, is
Loue: and the loue of such a womã, which except he enioy,
there is no remedie but death. Alas (q the kinge, weeping
with bitter teares) & what woman is thee, but that I maye
procure her for him, which am kinge of all Asia, and am a-
ble with intreatie, money, giftes, or other pollicie whatso-
euer, to make her obediente and willinge to my sonnes re-
queste. Tell me onely the name of the woman, that I maye
prouide for my sonnes health, yea, thoughe it coste me all
my goodes and realme to, if otherwise thee cannot be got-
ten. For if he die, what shall I doe with my kingdome?
Whereunto Erasistratus aunswered. If it like your grace
your sonne is in loue with my wife, but because the loue of
auother mans wife seemeth vnto him vnreasonable, he da-
reth not to manifest it for shame, but rather wisheth to die,
then to open his minde. Howbeit, I by certaine euidente
signes, do well perceine it. When Seleucus hearde these
words, he said. O Erasistratus, thou being so worthie a mã,
to whom fewe in goodnesse and humilitie, be comparable,
so deare and welbeloued of mee, and beareth the bruite, to
be the very hauen, and harborough of wisedome, wilt thou
not saue my sonne, which is a ponge man, nowe vppon the
floure of his youth, and most worthy of life: for whom the
empyre of all Asia, is worthely reserued? O Erasistratus, ỹ
sonne of thy frend Seleucus, is thy king, who through loue
and silence, is at the pointe of death, thou seest that for mo-
destie, and honestie sake, at this his last and doubtfull pas-
sage, he had rather chose to die, then by speaking to offend
thee, and wilte thou not helpe him? This his silence, this
discretion, that his reuerence which hee sheweth, oughte to
moue thee to compassion. Thincke my welbeloued Erasi-
stratus, that if he loue ardently, that he was forced to loue.
For vndoubtedly, if he could not loue, he would doe the best
he could, not to loue, yea, and with all his endeuour to re-
sist it. But who is able to prescribe lawes to loue? Loue I
know

"knowe, not onelye forceth men, but also commaundeth the "immortal Gods, and when they be not able to resist, what "can mans pollicie preuaile? Wherefore, who knoweth not "what pitie mine owne deare Antioch⁹ doth deserue? Who "being constrained, can none otherwise do. But to be silent "in loue, is a most euident signe, of a noble and rare vertue. "Dispose thy minde therefore, to helpe my sonne. For I as-sure thee that if thou do not loue the life of Antiochus, Seleucus life must needes be hated of thee. He cānot be hurt, but I likewise muste be touched with griefe. The wise Philition seing that his aduise, came to passe as he thought before, and ẏ Seleucus was so instant vpō him, for ẏ health of his sonne, the better to proue his minde, and his intention, spake vnto him in this wise. It is a cōmon saying, my "most dradde soueraigne Lord, that a mā when he is whole, "can giue to him that is sicke and weake, very good counsel. "You perswade me to giue my welbeloued wife, to another "man, and to forgoe her, whom I moste feruently do loue, & "in lackinge her, my life also must faile. If you do take from "me my wyfe, you take with her my life. Doubtfull it is my "Lord, if Antiochus your sonne were in loue wᵗ the queene "Stratonica, your graces wyfe, whether you would be so li-"berall vnto him of her, as you woulde that I should be of "mine. I would it were the pleasure of the Gods (sodenly "aunswered Seleucus) that he were in lone with my best be-"loued Stratonica, I sweare vnto thee, by the reuerēce that "I haue alwayes borne to the honourable memorie, of my "father Antiochus, and my graundfather Seleucus: and I "sweare by all the sacred Gods, that freelye and forthwith, "I would render her into his hands (although shee be the "dearest beloued vnto mee) in suche wise as all the worlde "should know, what the dutie of a good and louing father, "ought to be to such a sonne, as is my intirely beloued An-"tiochus: whoe if I bee not deceiued) is moste worthie of all "helpe and succour. Alas this is a greate vertue, in con-

cealing

cealing that notable passion, as an earnest affection of loue. And is it not worthie to be consecrated, to eternall memorie? Is he not worthie of all helpe and comfort? Doth hee not deserue to be pitied and lamented of all the worlde? Trulye he is worse then a cruel enemie, naye he is rather, more fierce and vnnatural, then a sauage beast, that at such moderate behauiour, as my sonne vseth, wil not take compassion. Many other wordes the good father spake, manifestly declaring, that he for the health of his sonne, would not onely sticke to bestowe his wife, but also willingly his lyfe, for his preseruation. Wherefore ỳ Phisition thought it not good any longer to keepe secrete the cause: but toke the king a side, and said vnto him in this wyse. The health of your sonne (my deare Lorde and Soueraigne) is not in my handes, but the same resteth in you, and in your wife Stratonica, whom (as I, by certaine signes doe manifestly know) he ardentlie doth loue. Your grace now doth knowe from henceforth what to do, if his life be dere vnto you. And telling the king, the maner of his loue, he ioyfully toke his leaue. The king now doubted but of one thing, which was how to perswade his sonne, to take Stratonica to wife, and howe to exhorte his wyfe, to take his sonne to husbande. But it chaunced for diuers causes, that easelye ynough he perswaded them both. And perchaunce, Stratonica made a good exchaunge in taking a yong man, to forsake him that was olde. After Seleucus had made the accord betwene his wife & his sonne, he caused al his army to assẽble, which was very great. To whõ he said in this maner. My dere and louinge souldiours, which sith the death of Alexander the great, haue (with mee) atchieued a thousande glorious enterprises: I thincke it meete and conuenient, that yee be partakers of that, which I purpose to bringe to passe. Ye doe knowe that vnder mine Empyre, I haue lxxii. kingdomes, and that I beinge an olde man, am not able to attende so greate a charge: wherefore (louinge

uing companions) I purpose to deliuer and ridde you frō griefe of idlenesse, and my selfe from trouble and toyle, reseruing to mee onely so much as lyeth betweene the Sea, and the riuer Euphrates. All the rest of my dominions, I giue to my sonne Antiochus, vppon whom in mariage, I haue bestowed my wife Stratonica, which thinge ought to contente you, because my will and pleasure is such. And when he had tolde them the loue and sicknes of his sonne, and the discrete deuise of the gentle Phisition, in the presence of all his armie, ỹ mariage was celebrated, betwene Stratonica and Antiochus: Afterwards he crowned them both kinge and Queene of Asia, and with royall pompe & triumphe, the desired mariage was consummate. The armye hearing and seing these thinges, very highly commēded the pietie of the father towards his sonne. Antiochus then continued with his welbeloued wife in ioy and quietnes, liuing together in great felicitie. This was not hee, that for matters of Ægipt, did make warres with the Romaines: But he that onely inferred warres vpon the Gallatians, which out of Europa passed into Asia, out of which countrie hee chased them, and ouercame them. Of this Antiochus came Seleucus, which was father of Antioch⁹ surnamed the great, that attempted very notable warres against the Romaines, and not his great graundfather, ỹ maried his mother in law. Finally this Seleucus (of whō I recompt this historie) by giuing his wife to his sonne, did accomplish a miraculous act, and worthy (in deede) of sempiternall remembraunce, and greatlye to bee commended therefore, who although he had achieued infinite victories ouer his enemies: Yet there was none of them all so great as the victorie of himselfe, and his passions. For certainly Seleucus did vanquish his owne appetites, by depriuing himselfe of his wife, whom hee loued and esteemed, aboue all worldly thinges.

Of the

¶ Of the ſtraunge and beaſtlie nature of Timon of Athenes, enemie to mankinde: with his death, buriall, and Epitaphe.

The xxviij. Nouell.



ALL the beaſtes of the woꝛlde, do applye theimſelues to other beaſtes of theyꝛ kind, Timon of Athenes onely excepted, of whoſe ſtraunge nature Plutarche is aſtonied, in the life of Marc⁹ Antonius. Plato and Ariſtophanes, do repoꝛt his marueylous nature, becauſe hee was a man but by ſhape onely, in qualities, hee was the capitall enemie of mankinde, which he confeſſed franckely, vtterly to abhoꝛre and hate. He dwelt alone in a litle cabane in the fieldes, not farre from Athenes: ſeparated from all neighbours and company, he neuer wente to the citie, oꝛ to any other habitable place, except he were cõſtrayned He could not abide any mans company and conuerſation: he was neuer ſeen to goe, to any mannes houſe, ne yet would ſuffer them to come to him. At the ſame time there was in Athenes, another of like qualitie, called Apemantus, of the very ſame nature, differente from the naturall kinde of man, and looged likewiſe in the middes of the fieldes. On a day they two being alone together at dinner. Apemant⁹ ſaid vnto him: O Timon what a pleaſant » feaſt is this, and what a merie companie are wee, being no » moꝛe but thou? I. Naie (q Timon) it would be a merie » banquet in deede, if there were none here but my ſelfe. » Wherein he ſhewed, how like a beaſt (in deede) he was. Foꝛ he could not abide any other man, beinge not able to ſuffer the company of him, which was of like nature. And if by chaunce hee happened to goe to Athenes, it was onelye to ſpeake with Alcibiades, who then was an excellente Captaine

taine there, wherat many did marueile: And therefore Apemantus demaunded of him, why he spake to no man, but
" to Alcibiades. I speake to him sometimes, said Timon, be-
" cause I know that by his occasion, the Atheniens shall re-
" ceiue great hurt and trouble. Which wordes many times he told to Alcibiades himselfe. He had a garden, adioyning to his house in the fields, wherin was a Figge tree, whervppon many desperate men ordinarily did hange themselues: In place whereof, he purposed to set vp a house, and therefore was forced to cutte it downe, for which cause hee went to Athenes, and in the markette place, hee called the people about him, saying that hee had newes to tell them: When the people vnderstoode that he was about to make a discourse vnto them, which was wõt to speake to no mã, they marueiled, and the citizens on euery parte of ỹ Citie, ranne to heare him: to whom he saide, that he purposed to cutte downe his Figge tree, to builde a house vpon ỹ place
" where it stoode. Wherefore (q he) if there be any man a-
" monges you all in this company, that is disposed to hange
" himselfe, let him come betimes, before it be cutte downe.
Hauing thus bestowed his charitie amonges ỹ people, hee retourned to his lodging, wher he liued a certaine time after, without alteration of nature. And because that nature chaũged not in his life time, he would not suffer that death should alter, or varie the same. For like as he liued a beastly and choylish life, euen so he required to haue his funerall done after that maner. By his last will, he ordeined himselfe to be interred vpon the sea shore, that the waues & surges might beate, and vexe his dead carcas. Yea, & that if it were possible, his desire was to be buried in the depth of ỹ Sea: causing an Epitaphe to be made, wherin was described the qualities of his brutishe life. Plutarche also reporteth an other to be made by Calimachus, much like to that which Timon made himselfe, whose owne soũdeth to this effect in Englishe Uerse.

My wret-

My wretched catife dayes,
expired now and past:
My carren corps intered here,
is fast in grounde:
In waltring waues, of swel-
ling Sea, by surges cast,
My name if thou desire,
The Gods thee, doe confounde:

¶ The mariage of a man and woman, hee being the husband of xx. wiues: and shee the wife of xxii. husbandes.

The xxix. Nouell.

MEn commonly do reproue the honour of widowes, because they being twise or thrise wedded, doe marrie againe. And albeit by outward apparaunce, they which soe blame them, seeme to haue reasō, yet no mā ought to iudge the secrecie of the hart. Mariage is holy, and ought be permitted, & therfore by any meanes, not to be reproued: Although it cannot be denied, but that the chast life is most perfecte, notwithstanding, that perfection, in nothing doth diminishe the other. The widowe maryng againe doth not offende God by mariage, & to the world she committeth the lest faulte. And because manye olde and aunciente widowes in these dayes, may not after three or fower mariages, be dismaied and terrified from that state: I will recite an Historie,

auouched

auouched by S. Hierome in an Epistle Ad Gerõtiam viduam de monogamia, whom for his holines & vertue, wee ought to beleue. It is also prety set forth, by Pietro Messia de Seuiglia, an excellẽt authour, a gentlemã of Spaine, in the 34. Chapter of the first parte of his worke, called La Selua di varie Lezzioni. S Hierome sayth, that in ẏ time of Pope Damasus, he sawe and knew in Rome, one womã lawfully maried to xxii. men, and was the widowe of xxii. husbands. There was also a man which had had xx. wiues, & was then the widower of ẏ xx. Both which being free, and of equall state and condition, they made suite one to other: and that either of them might proue whether should be the victor, in burying ech other, they maried together, which mariage was in great admiratiõ amonges the Romaines. Who musinge which of them should die first, promised that at the funerall, they would beautie the corpes, both with their presence, and also with tokens of victorie. It chaunced (sore against her will I dare say) that the woman died first. At the celebration of whose buriall: all the Romaine husbandes laied their heades together, howe they might ornate and garnish the funeralles. They concluded, to goe before the corpes, with Laurel garlands vppon their heades, singing verses of praise, for the obtaining of such a victorious conquest. Now where the womẽ went, I cannot tell. For I finde written, that populus totius vrbis præcedebat feretrum, wher populus, as I take it, signifieth the whole route of men and women. And yet I thincke, womens hartes coulde skarce afore to go before. Therefore I thincke they came behinde like mourners, bearinge braunches without leaues, their beades in their handes, praying for all Christen soules. But giuing women leaue to mourne for such an ouerthrow, I woulde wishe all my frendes that be widowes, to folow the noble Romaine matrone and widowe called Annia, who (when her frendes and familiers, exhorted her to marie againe,

because

becauſe he was yong and beautifull) aunſweared that ſhe would not. For, q ſhe, if it be my fortune to haue a good huſband, as I had before, I ſhall ſtill be afraied, leſt death ſhould take him away. But if it be my chaunce to matche with one that is euill, howe can I be able quietly to beare that, hauing had ſo good a huſbande before. Declaringe thereby, that being ones well matched, great heede ought to be taken, how to chooſe the nexte, leaſte in making haſtie choiſe, leaſure for repentaunce ſhould folow.

¶ How Melchiſedech a Iewe, by telling a pretie tale of three kinges, ſaued his life.

The xxx. Nouell.



Aladine whoſe valiaūce was ſo great that not onelye the ſame from baſe eſtate aduaunced him to be Souldan of Babilon, but alſo thereby hee wanne diuers victories ouer the Saracene kinges and chriſtians, who throughe his manifolde warres and magnificēt triumphes, hauing expended al his treaſure, and for therecution of one exploite: lackinge a great ſumme of money, knewe not where to haue the ſame ſo redily, as he had occaſion to imploy it. At length he called to remembraunce a rich Iewe named Melchiſedech, that lent out money for intereſt in Alexandria, whoſe greedie & couetous nature was ſuch, that with his good will he would not do it, and to force him the Souldan was very loth. Howbeit compelled by neceſſity, he caſt his wits about him, to finde a meanes, how the Iew might ſerue his tourne, and thereuppon founde out a ſleight and waye by a colourable force. Who cauſing the Iew to be called before him, intertayned him

familiarly, making him to sit downe beside him, and said to him these words. Sir, I do learne by report of diuers, that you are verye wise and well learned, in thinges touching God For which cause I would gladly know of you which of the three lawes, you iudge to be most sincere and true. The Iewishe law, the Saracene law, or the Christian lawe? The Iewe which in deede was very wise, perceiued wel that Saladine went about to intrappe him in wordes, thereby to raise some quarell against him, & thought that it was not good for him, to praise one of those lawes more then another, lest Saladine might take aduauntage of him. Wherefore, to make a wise & discrete aunswere, that he might not be quer shotte, he sharpened his wittes, and sodainly came into his remembraunce this aunswere.

"My Lorde, the question which you haue proponed is excel-
"lent, and to declare vnto you that which I knowe, I muste
"tell you a tale, the better to open my meaninge which if it
"shall please you to heare, is this. I doe remember (if I be
"not deceiued) that many times I haue heard tell, how vp-
"on a time, there was a Noble man, which was very rich,
"and had amonges his other treasures, a verye beautifull
"ringe of great price and estimation: which for the valour &
"beautie, hee was very desirous perpetually, to leaue vnto
"his successours: willing and ordeining that the same sonne
"which should haue that ring, by the gift of his father, after
"his decease, should be taken and reputed for his heire, and
"should be honoured and magnified of the reste, as the chie-
"fest. He to whom the same ring was left, obserued semble-
"ble order in his posteritie, and did the like, that his prede-
"cessor had done before him. In short time this Ryng succe-
"ded from hand to hand, to many successours. And last of al
"it came to the hand of one ỳ had three goodly sonnes, ver-
"tuous and very obedient to their father. Who loued them
"all indifferently and in equall maner, which knowing the
"order for the disposition of ỳ Ring, curious to be best estee-

med

med and beloued, euery of them, prayed his father so well as seuerally they could (which then was aged) ỳ when hee died he would giue him the Ring. The good man which loued one no better then another, knew not which of them to chose, to whom he might dispose it, and thought best, to promise the same to euery of them, to satisfie all three. Secretely he procured an excellente Goldsmith to make two other Rings, which accordingly were made, so like vnto the first, as the owner himselfe vnnethes knew one from ỳ other. And when he was vpon his death bedde, he secretly gaue to euery of his sonnes a Ring. Who after the death of their father desirous to enter the inheritaũce & honour, one goinge about to displace another, euery of them to declare what title he had to enioy the same, brought forth his Ringe. And the ringes were founde so like, that the true Ring could not be knowen. Therefore the processe for the title remained in doubt and yet continueth till this daye. And so I say vnto you my Lord of the three lawes giuen by God the father to those three people, whereof you haue made the question, euery of those Nations thinketh to enioy the inheritaunce of God, and to obserue the true lawe, and his commaundementes, but which of them hath the truest law, that remaineth in doubt like the question of the Rings. Saladine perceyuing ỳ Melchisedech knew right well how to auoide the snare, which hee had laied for him: determined therefore to open and disclose vnto him his necessitie, to proue if he would do him ỳ pleasure: Which hee did telling him his intent and meaninge, if he had not framed him ỳ wyse aunsweare. The Iewe liberally lent him the summe of moneye that he demaunded: which Saladine wholie repaied vnto him againe, besides other very greate rewardes that he gaue him, vsing him still for his frende, and afterwards maintayned him next his person, in great and honourable state.

Ermino Grimaldi.

¶ One called Guglielmo Borsiere with certaine wordes well placed, taunted the couetous life of Ermino Grimaldi.

The xxxi. Nouell.



Longe sithens there was a gentleman at Genoua called M. Ermino Grimaldi, whoe as all men thoughte, was the richest of possessions and ready money within that citie, & therin farre excelled all other citizens which then were knowen in Italie. And as he did surpasse al other Italians in substance & wealth, so in auarice and wretchednes he surmounted beyond measure the most couetous & miserable of the worlde. For he kept his purse so close ẏ he did not onely neglecte to do good to other, but also to himselfe, by sparinge many things necessary for his owne person: he indured much hardnes in meate & drinke because he would spend nothinge contrary to the common custome of the Geneuois. Who be wonte very nobly & honourably to maintaine themselues in apparell & fare. For which cause his surname Grimaldi deseruedly was taken away, & was called of euery mā, nothing els but M. Ermiño the couetous. It chaũced in those dayes, ẏ as he by spẽding nothing multiplied his goods. There arriued at Genoua an honest gentleman and well spoken, a Courtier of good interteignemẽt, named Guglielmo Borsiere (nothing like the Courtiers in these dayes ẏ to their great shame, for their corrupt and rude maners would be called and reputed gentlemen, which in deede maye bee counted Asses, broughte vppe and noseled rather in the filthye conditions of the vilest menne, then in Courtes). In those dayes Courtiers occupied themselues, in treatinge of peace and endinge of quarelles that bredde strife and dissention amonges gentlemen, or in makinge of mariages, amities.

and,

and attonementes, and with merye woordes and pleasaunt, did recreate troubled mindes, and exhilarated with pastimes other Courtiers, not with sharpe reprehensions, but like fathers rebuking the liues of the wicked, and that for no gaine or reward. Where some of the Courtiers of oure age do implope their time, in ill reportes one of another, & do disseminate debate and strife, vtteringe a thousande vnhappie and vile woordes, yea and that (which is worst of all) in common audience. Their maner is to reproue & checke one an other with iniuries, reproches and nipping girdes, with false and deceiuable flatteries, villanously and dissemblingly, to begile poore and needie gentlemen. He is also the prophest mã and best beloued of some great men of like conditions, and of them is best rewarded that can vse ẏ vilest and most abhominable talke, or can do semblable deeds, which redoundeth to the great shame and dishonour, of the chiefe and principall that beare the swaie in Courte: proofe wherof is euident enough for that the vertues past, haue forsaken the presente sort, who liue in the ordure and filth of all vices. But to procede in ẏ which I haue begon (although vpon iust occasion I haue a litle more digressed then I thought) I say ẏ the foresaid Guglielmo Borsiere, was honoured and visited of the gentlemẽ of Genoua, who making his abode for a certaine time in the Citie, and hearing tel of the miserie and couetousnes of M. Ermino, had great desire to see him. M. Ermino hearing tell ẏ this Guglielmo Borsiere was an excellente man, and therefore (although a couetous man) yet hauing in him some sparke of gentilitie, he receiued him with frendlye woords and good countenaunce, entringe into communication with him of diuers and sundrie matters, and in talking brought him wᵗ certaine other Citizens to one of his houses which was very faire and newe, where (after hee had shewed him his house) he said vnto him. M. Guglielmo, you ẏ haue seene & heard many things, can you shew vnto me any new deuise

cc neuer seene before, that I may cause the same to be painted
cc in the hall of this my house: To whō M. Guglielmo (hea-
cc ring his fonde demaunde) aunswered. Sir I can shewe
cc you nothing but that which hath beene knowen before, ex-
cc cepte Nesinges or such like. But if it please you sir I wil
cc gladly teach you one, which I thincke you neuer saw, M.
cc Ermino glad to heare of that, said. I pray you sir tell mee
cc what it is, (not thinking he would haue made ỳ aunswere)
cc To whom M. Guglielmo redely said. Cause the figure of
cc Liberality to be painted. At which aunsweare M. Ermino
was so sodenlye ashamed, as he was forced to chaunge his
minde in maner cleane contrarye to his accustomed vse, &
cc trade of life saying. M. Guglielmo, I will cause the same
cc to be painted in such wise, as neither you nor any man els,
cc shall haue occasiō iustly to obiect the same against me. And
from that time forth (such was the force of that taunt) hee
was the most liberall & bountefull gentleman that dwelte
in Genoua, and one that honoured straungers and Citi-
zens more then euer did any in his time.

¶ Maister Alberto of Bologna, by a pleasaunt aunsweare made a gentlewoman to blushe, which had thoughte to haue put him out of countenaunce, in telling him that he was in loue with her.

The xxxv. Nouell.

NOt manye yeares paste there was at Bologna a notable Phisition, renowmed throughe out the whole worlde, called Maister Alberto, whoe beinge old, almost lx. yeares of age, had such an excellent wit, that although naturall heate was expired in his bodie, yet hee disdayned not to conceiue some amorous flames of

loue.

loue. Seing at a banket a verye fayre gentlewoman a widowe called (as some saye) Mádonna Margherita de Ghisilieri, she pleased his fansie so well, that he fixed her so fast in the siege of his remembraunce, as if he had been a ponge man of vppe and youthlye yeares. In such wise as that nighte, he coulde take no reste, if the day before, hee had not seene the faire and beautifull face of this faire gentlewoman. For which cause sometimes a foote, & sometimes on horsebacke as he thought best, he continually vsed to passe before her lodginge, which was the cause that shee and diuers other gentlewomen did marke thoccasion of his ofte passing to and fro that waye. And many times they iested and dalied amongest them selues to see a man of such yeares and experience to be in loue, thinking that the displeasaunt passion of loue, could fasten no hold but in the fonde mindes of ponge people and no where els. Wherefore Maister Alberto daily passing to and fro the house of that gentlewoman, it chaunced vppon an holye daye, that shee sittinge with other dames before her doore, and sawe maister Alberto a farre off, comming towards them, she with the rest determined curteously to receiue him, and reuerētly to salute him, and afterwardes merely to talke & spoyte of his loue, whych accoyoingly they did. The gentlewoman rising vp conueyed him into a court, of ayre fresh and pleasaunt, where they caused to be brought forth excellent wynes and comfites, and in the ende with manye cherefull and pleasaunt woordes, one of them asked him how it was possible, he could be in loue with that fayre gentlewoman, specially sithens manye fayre and trimme ponge menne, did loue her. Maister Alberto perceyuinge himselfe touched and gested at, very honestlye aunsweared with smyling countenaunce. Maistres, No wyse man whatsoeuer hee be oughte to marueile whye I am in loue, especiallye with you (lookinge vppon her whom hee loued) because your beautye and woorthines dothe well deserue

cc the same. And although naturally the forces which be in-
cc cident to exercises of Loue, do faile and decaie in olde mē,
cc good wil therfore is not in them depriued, nor ẏ iudgement
cc in knowledge, ẏ which ought to be beloued. But because
cc they haue greater experience then ponge men haue, there-
cc fore by nature they better know the qualitie of loue. The
cc hope that moueth mee an olde man to loue you, that is soe
cc well beloued of pong men, is this: I haue many times been
cc conuersaunte in places where I haue seene gentlewomen
cc for their collation and pleasure after dinner, oftentimes to
cc eate Lupines and Leekes, and albeit that in the Leeke,
cc there is nothing good or holsome, yet the heade thereof is
cc lest hurtful, and most pleasaunt to the mouth, whereof ge-
cc nerally (through a folish lust) ye women holde the heade in
cc your hands and chawe the leaues, which not onely be euil
cc and nought, but also of an ill fauoured smel and sauour.
cc And what doe I knowe (Maistres) if in the choise of your
cc frendes ye do the like? Which if ye do, no doubt it is I,
cc whom you haue chosen to be your frende, and haue for sa-
cc ken all other. This gentlewoman somwhat ashamed blu-
cc shing with the rest, said Maister Alberto, you haue ful wel
cc and curteously paied vs home, and aunswered oure pre-
cc sumptuous obiection. Notwithstandinge I doe esteeme &
cc accept your amitie and loue, as I oughte to regard ẏ loue
cc of a wise and honest personage. And so (mine honestie and
cc honour saued) al ẏ I haue to do you pleasure, is to be assu-
red at your commaundement. Therewithall M. Alber-
to rose vp, thanking the gentlewoman, & with much sport
and pleasaunt talke taking his leaue of the cōpany depar-
ted. In this maner ẏ gentlewomā giuing ouer her scoffes
and tauntes, whereby she thoughte to putte Maister Al-
berto out of conceyt, was put to silence her selfe. Whereof
I (in the name of Panfilo Filostrato and Dioneo) by waye
of intreatie do beseech yee Ladies, Pampinea, Fiammet-
ta, Philomena, and other gentlewomen, to beware howe

yee do

ye doe contriue your holy day talke, by waste wordes issuing forth your delicate mouthes, in carping, gauding, and iesting at young gentlemen, and speciallye olde men, and Maister Alberto of Bologna, that for loue like the grene stalkes or graye heades of Lekes, doe desire to sauer your mouthes, and by honest recreation and pleasure to gratifie your comlie personages, lest before the banket be done, and all the comfites spente, ye departe with blushing cheekes, hanging downe your heades, not shaming to looke your mother in the face from whence you came: I meane the earth: Where dame natnre hath formed you by your comely grace, & your fayre face, to beholde eche man, & to bter pleasaunt talke intermixed with honestie and bertue.

¶ Rinaldo of Esti being robbed, arriued at Castel Guglielmo, and was succoured of a wydowe: and restored to his losses, retourning saulfe and sounde home to his owne house.

The. xxxiij. Nouell.

IN the tyme of Azzo Marques of Ferrara, there was a Marchaunt named Rinaldo of Esti, come to Bologna to do certaine affaires. Whiche when hee had dispatched, in retourning homewardes, it chaunced as he departed out of Ferrara, and riding towardes Verona, hee mette certayne men on horsebacke, whiche semed to be Marchauntes, but in verie deede were arrant theues: with whome he kepte companie, and without suspicion what they were, rode together familiarly talking. These good felowes seing this Marchaunt and thinking that he had money about hym, determined to robbe him, when they sawe their aduauntage, & to the intent he should not suspecte them, they rode lyke graue

graue men of honest conuersation, debating with him of honest causes, and faithfull, shewing them selues counterfactely, to be lowly and gentle. Uppon whiche occasion, he thought him sefe moste happy that he had mette with such companie, because he & his seruaunt rode together alone. And as they were talking of diuers matters (as chaũceth in communication) they fel in talke of prayers, that mẽ do make vnto God. And one of the theues (for they were three in nomber) sayd vnto Rinaldo. And you gentleman, what "prayer bee you accustomed to saye, when you ryde by the "waye? To whom Rinaldo answered. To tel you the truth, "I am a man very playne, and rude in those matters, and I "haue a fewe prayers at my fingers endes: suche as myne "auncestours vsed before me. And I let go currant. ii.s. for "xxiiii d. But neuertheless, I haue alwayes accustomed, "when I ryde by the way, to say in the morning at my going "forth of my lodging, a Pater noster and an Aue Maria, for "the soule of the father and mother of sainct Iulian: and af"ter that, I pray to God and sainct Iulian, to sende me good "lodging ỳ night folowing. And full oft in my time I haue "founde, in trauailing of Countries many great daungers, "all whiche hauing escaped, it hath bene my fortune always "(when night approched) to chaunce vppon good lodging: "whiche maketh me stedfastly beleue that sainct Iulian (vn"to whose honour I saye the same) hath obteined this bene"fite of God for me, and I thought that daye wherein I ne"glected, to saye in the morning that prayer, I could neither "saufely trauell, ne yet at night obtaine good harborough. "He ỳ demaunde ỳ question, asked him. And haste thou said "them this morning? Yea verely answered Rinaldo. Then he whiche already knewe, howe the matter would go, said to him selfe, thou shalt haue enough to doe anone, for if thou haue not sayde them this morning, it may so happe "that thou shalt lodge full ill this night. And afterwardes "hee saide, I haue likewyse trauayled in my dayes a great

waye:

way: and neuer said those prayers, but I haue heard many men greatly prayse thē (although) I could neuer perceiue but that I haue bene well lodged. And peraduenture this night you shal proue, which of vs two shal haue best lodgīg you which haue sayd thē, or I which haue not said thē. It is most true that I haue accustomed, in stede of ỳ praier, to saye that verse Dirupisti, or ỳ Antheme Intemerata, or the Deprofundis, which are as my graundmother did teach & instructe me) of verie great effecte and vertue. And speaking thus of diuers thinges, alwayes riding, expecting the place and time, to accomplish their wicked intent: It chaūced that approching nere to Castel Guglielmo, when they had passed ouer a ryuer, these three theues, late in the euening in a darke place, did sette vppon him and robbed him, dismounting him from his horse, and left him there in his shyrte. And as they were going awaye, they sayde vnto hym: Goe and seeke if thy sainct Iulian, will helpe thee to good lodging this nighte, for our saincte, wyll helpe vs to good. And repalling through the Riuer, they went their waye. The seruaunt of Rinaldo, seyng the theues sette vpō his maister (like a cowarde) helped him nothing, but tourned his bridle, and neuer left galloping, vntill he came to Castell Guglielmo: where because it was nighte, he lodged in an Inne, without any further care for his Maister. Rinaldo being stil there in his shyrte, bare footed and bare legged, in the great Frost, and Snowe, not knowing what to doe, and seing night already approche, quaking, and his teethe clacketing in his head, began to looke about hym, if he coulde see anye place there, for hym to resorte for succour, that he might not dye for colde: but (seyng none at all, because a litle before, the warres had with fyre consumed all thynges) being sore afflicted for colde, he began to make spede towardes the Castell Guglielmo, not knowyng that his seruaunt was fledde thither: thynking that if he might come in, God would sende hym some succour,

but

but darke night ouertooke him a good waye of, before hee coulde come to the Castell, almoste the space of a mile, by whiche meanes he arriued there very late, the gates being shutte vp, and the bridges drawen, that he could not goe in. By reason whereof hee was verie sorowefull and discomforted, lamentable, casting his eyes about, to espie if it wer possible, that at the lest he might shroude him selfe free frō the snowe: and by chaunce he sawe a house vpō the walles of the Castell, vnder whiche he determined to reste tyll it was daye, and repairing thether, he found vnder the house a dooze (whiche was locked) vnder which dooze gathering a litle strawe, that he founde thereabout, he sat down very heauie and pensife: making his complainte many tymes vnto saincte Iulian, that the faith which he reposed in him, had nowe deceiued him. But saincte Iulian taking pitie vpon him, without any further delaye, prepared him (as it chaunced) a good lodging. For there dwelled in that Castell a woman, whiche was a wydowe, so faire a persone as might be seene, whom the Marques Azzo loued as his life, and kepte her there for his owne pleasure. And the same woman dwelte in the house, vnder the porche wherof Rinaldo was gone to reste him selfe. Vnto whome the daye before, the Marques resorted to disporte him selfe that night, and in her house had secretly caused a bathe to be made, and a great supper to be prepared: All which being readie, and the good wyfe expecting nothing els, but the comming of the Marques. It chaunced that one of his men called at the gates of the Castell, with newes to the Marques, that sodainly he must ryde awaye. Wherefore he sent woorde to the wydowe, that shee should not attende his comming: who not a litle displeased with the message, not knowing what to doe, determined to enter the Bathe, whiche was prepared for the Marques, and when she had supped to goe to bedde. This Bathe was harde by the dooze whereunto pooze Rinaldo was approched. The wi-

dowe

ueiled a great waye that morning: When the gates were opened, went into the Castell, and founde his seruaunte. And then putting vppon hym suche apparell as was in his male, and being about to mounte vpon his mans horse, it came to passe, like as it had bene a diuine miracle, that the three theues, whiche had robbed him the night before, were taken for doing an other robberie, a little whyle after, and were brought to the Castell, and vppon their confession, his horse, apparell, and money, were restored to him againe, losing nothing but a payre of garters. Wherefore Rinaldo thanking God and saint Iulian, mounted vppon his horse and retourned whole and saulfe, to his owne house. And the nexte daye, the three theues were conueied forth, to bleese the worlde with their heeles.

¶ Three yonge men hauing fondlye consumed all that they had, became verie poore, vvhose nephevve (as he retourned out of Englande into Italie, by the vvaye) fell in to acquaintaunce vvith an Abbotte, vvhome (vpon further familiaritie) he knevve to be the king of Englandes doughter, vvhiche toke him to husbande. Afterwardes she restored, his vncles to all their losses, and sent them home in good state and reputation.

The. xxxiiij. Nouell.

THere was sometyme in the Citie of Florence a knight, called Sir Tebaldo, who as some saie, was of the house of Lamberti: and as other affirme, of Agolanti. But leauing the variaunce of whether house he was, true it is, that hee was in that time, a notable, riche,

riche and wealthy knight, and had three sonnes. The firste called Lamberto, the seconde Tebaldo, and the thirde Agolante, all faire and goodly yonge men: and the eldest of whiche was not. xviii. yeares of age. When the sayde Sir Tebaldo died, to them (as his lawefull heires) he lefte all his landes and goodes. Who being verie ryche, in readie money and possessions, continued their life without gouernement, at their owne pleasures, & without bridle or stay, they began to consume their goodes. They kepte a greate and franke house, and many Horses of great value, with Dogges and Haukes, of sundrie kyndes, giuing liberall giftes, and obseruing diuerse gestes at Tilte and Tourney, doing also that whiche not onely did appertayne, and belonge to Gentlemen, but also that, whiche was incident to the trade and course of youthe. They continued not long in this order, but their substaunce lefte them by their father, was very muche consumed. And their reuenues (notable to mainteine their expences) began to decrease, whereupō they were fayne, to morgage and sell their inheritaunce in suche wyse, as in the ende they grewe to extreme pouertie. And then penurie did open their eyes in like sorte, as before riches had closed them vp. For whiche cause Lamberto vpon a daye, did cal his other twoo brethren vnto him, and tolde them of what honour their father was, to what value his rychesse did amounte, and nowe to what pouertie they were come, through their disordinate expences, giuing them counsaile (so well as he could) that before miserie did growe any further vpon them, by selling that whiche was left, they shoulde goe their waye. Whiche they did. And without leaue taken of any man, or other solempnitie, they departed from Florence, and taried in no place, before they were arriued in Englande. Where taking a litle house, in the citie of London, they liued with litle expences, and began to lende out their money to vsurie, and Fortune was so fauourable vnto them, by that trade, that in few yeares

they

they had gayned a verie notable somme of money, whiche made them one after an other, to retire agayne to Florẽce, with their substaunce, where they redemed a great part of their inheritaunce, and bought other lande, and so gaue them selues to mariage: continuing neuertheleſſe in Englande, their money at intereſt. They ſent thither to be their factour, a ponge man their nephewe, called Alexandro. And they three dwelling ſtill at Florence, began agayne to forget to what miſerie their inordinate expences, hadde brought them before. And albeit they were charged with houſholde, yet they ſpent out of order, and without reſpect. And were of great credite with euery Marchaunt: whoſe expences, the money that Alexandro many times did ſend home, did helpe to ſuppoꝛte for certaine yeares, which was lent out to diuers gentlemen and Barons of the countrey, vpon their Caſtelles, Manours, and other reuenues, wher of was receiued an incredible profite. In the meane time, the three brethren ſpent ſo largely, as they borowed money of other, fixing all their hope from Englande. It chaunced that warres happened betwene the king of England, and one of his ſonnes, whiche bredde muche diuiſion in that lande, ſome holding of one parte, and ſome of an other. By meanes whereof, all the manours and morgaged landes, were taken awaye from Alexandro, hauing nothing wher vpon any profite did ryſe. Howebeit he dailye truſted that peace ſhoulde bee concluded, betweene the father and the ſonne. And that all thinges ſhould be ſurrendred, as well the principall as the intereſt: determing vppon that hope not to departe the Countrie. The three brethren whiche were at Florence, not limitting any order, to their diſordinate expences, grewe daylye woꝛſe and woꝛſe. But in proceſſe of tyme, when all hope was paſte of their recouerye, they loſte not onely their credite: but the creditours deſirous to be payde, were fayne to ſende them to pryſon. And becauſe their inheritaunce was not ſufficient to paye the

whole debte, they remayned in pryson for the reste: And their wiues and children wer dispersed, some into the cõtrie, and some hether & thether, out of order, not knowing how to do, but to abide a poore and miserable life for euer. Alexandro which of long time, taried for a peace in Englande: and seing that it came not to passe, considering also with him selfe (ouer and besides his vaine abode, for recouerie of his debtes) that he was in daunger of his life, he purposed to retourne into Italie. And as he trauailed by the waye aloue, and departed from Bruges, by fortune he perceiued an Abbot, clothed in white, in like maner about to take his iourney, accompanied with many Monkes, and a great traine: hauing much cariage, & diuers baggages before. After whome rode twoo olde knightes, the kinsmẽ of the king, with whom Alexandro entred acquaintance, by reason of former knowledge, & was receiued into their companie. Alexandro then riding with them frendlye, demaunded what Monkes they were that rode before, with so great a trayne, and whether they went. To whome one of the knightes aunswered: that he which rode before, was a ponge gentleman their kinsman, which was newly chosen Abbot, of one of the best Abbaies in England. And because he was verie ponge, and not capable by the decrees, of suche a dignitie, they went with him to Rome, to obteine of the holy father, a dispensation for his age: and for a confirmation of that office. But they willed him to disclose the same to no man. And so this newe Abbot, riding sometimes before, and sometimes after, as wee see ordinarelie that Lordes doe, when they trauell in the countrie: It chaunced that the Abbot espying Alexandro riding besides him, which was a faire ponge man, honest, curteous, and familier, who at ỹ first meting, did so marueilously delight him, as any thing that euer he sawe in his life, & calling him vnto him, he began familiarly to talke, & asked what he was, from whence he came, & whether he went.

To

¶ Landolpho Ruffolo being impooeriſhed, became a pirate, and taken by the Geneuois, was in daunger of drowning, who ſauing himſelfe vpon a litle coafer full of rich Iewels, was receiued at Corfu, and beinge cheriſhed by a woman, retourned home very riche.

The xxxv. Nouell.

IT is ſuppoſed, that the ſea coaſt of Reggium (in Calabria) is the moſt delectable part in all Italy, wherin (hard by Salerno) there is a countrye by the Sea ſide, which the inhabitauntes doe terme, the coaſt of Malfy, ſo full of litle cities, gardeines, fountaines, riche men, and marchauntes, as any other people and countrie. Among which ſaid cities, there was one called Rauello, where in time paſt (althoughe in theſe dayes there be very rich men) there dwelte a notable man of ſubſtaunce, called Landolpho Ruffolo: who being not contented with his riches, but deſirous to multiplye them double, was in hazarde to loſe himſelfe, and all that he had. This man (as all other marchauntes be accuſtomed) after he had conſidered w̄ himſelfe, what to, boughte a very greate ſhippe, and fraughted the ſame with ſondrye kindes of marchaundize of his owne aduenture, and made a voyage to the Iſle of Cypri, where he found (beſides the commodities which he brought) many other ſhippes arriued there, laden with ſuch like wares: by which occaſion it happened, that hee was forced, not onelye to ſell the ſame good cheape, but alſo was conſtrained (if hee woulde diſpatch his goodes) to giue them almoſt for nought, whereby he thoughte that he was vtterly vndone. And beinge greatly troubled for that loſſe, not knowing what to doe, and ſeing how in ſo litle a time, of a rich man, he was come

to beg-

to beggers state, he thoughte either to die, or els by piracie to recouer his losses, to the intent he might not returne, to the place poore, from whence he was departed riche. And hauing founde a copeseman, for his great barque: with the money thereof, and with other, which hee receiued for his marchandise, he boughte a small pinnas, meete for the vse of a pirate, which he armed and furnished with al thinges, necessary for that purpose. And determined to make himselfe riche, with the goodes of other men, and chiefelye hee ment to set vppon the Turkes: whereunto Fortune was more fauourable, then to his former trade. And by chaūce, by the space of one yeare, he robbed and toke so many Foistes & galleis of the Turkes, as he had recouered not onely that, which he loste by marchaundise, but also more then twise so muche as whereunto those losses did amounte. Wherfore, well punished with the first sorow of his losses, knowing his gaines to multiplie, as he needed not returne the seconde time, he thoughte with himselfe, that the same which he had gotten, was sufficiente: and therefore determined presētly, to returne to his owne house with his gotten goods. And fearing the hinderance which he susteined in traffique of Marchaundise, hee purposed to imploie his moneye no longer that wayes: but in that barque wherewith hee had gained the same, with his ores hee tooke his course homeward. And being vppon the maine Sea, in the night the wind rose at the Southeast, which was not onely contrary to his course, but also raised such a tempest, as his smal barque was not able to indure the Seas. Wheruppon he toke harborough in a Creke of the Sea, whiche compassed a litle Iland, there expecting for better wind. Into which creke within a while after, with much a do, for auoyding of ỳ tempest, arriued two great Argoseis of Genoa, that were come from Cōstantinople. The Mariners of which greate shippes: when they sawe the litle barque, they closed vp the waye, that the pinnas could not goe out.

And

And then vnderstanding of whence he was, and knowinge by repoꝛt, that he was very riche, determined (being men naturally giuē to ſpoile, & loue of money) to take her. And ſetting a ſhoꝛe part of their men well armed, and furniſhed with croſſebowes, they conueied themſelues, to keepe and defende ẏ none within the Pinnas (except they woulde be ſhot thꝛough) was able to eſcape. Then retiring into their ſkiftes, with helpe of the Tide, they appꝛoched Lādolpho his barque, which without any great difficultie, in a ſmall ſpace, they toke with all the company, not looſing ſo much as one man. And carying Landolpho aboꝛde one of their cockes, and all within boꝛde his little Pinnas, they ſoncke the ſame. and al the Mariners, and kept Landolpho, ſuffering him not to haue about him, any kind of armure, not ſo much as an haberion. The next day the winde chaunged, & the ſhippes hoiſted vp ſailes toward Leuant, and all ẏ day pꝛoſperouſlie ſailed on their voyage. But vpon the cloſing of the night, a ſtoꝛme roſe againe, & ſeparated ẏ two ſhips, one from another. And by foꝛce of the wind, it chaunced ẏ the ſhip wherein poꝛe Landolpho was, ſtrake with great violence vpon a ſande, in the Iland of Cephalonia. And as one would thꝛow a glaſſe againſt a wall, euen ſo the ſhippe opened, & fell in peeces: where by the ſoꝛowfull Mariners, ẏ ſtoode aboue (the ſeas being couered with goodes, coaffers and plancks of the ſhip, ẏ ſwam aboue water, which chaũceth many times, in ſuch like accidẽts, ẏ night being darke, and ẏ billowes going high & ſtreinable (ſuch as were able to ſwim, began to take holde of thoſe thinges, which Foꝛtune gaue vnto them. Amonges whom wꝛetched Landolpho, ſeinge death befoꝛe his face (which he ſo greatly deſired, & ſo many times craued, the day befoꝛe, rather then to retourne home in that poꝛe eſtate) was afraied, & caught hold of a boꝛde amonges the reſt, truſting it might chaũce that God woulde pardon him of dꝛowninge, and ſende him ſome refuge foꝛ his eſcape. And as hee was a boꝛſe-

backe,

backe, and fletinge vpon a plancke, so wel as he could (driuen here and there with the Sea and winde) he helde faste the same, till it was day lighte: which when he perceiued, he looked about him, and saw nothing but the cloudes, the Seas and a coaffer, swimminge aboue water, which was driuen so nere him, ꝑ it made him manye times to feare, ꝑ it would be his ouerthrow. And the nerer it came, ꝑ more hee laboured to put it backe (so well as he could) with his hande, although his force and power was gone. But how soeuer it chaunced, a gale of winde blew out of the skies, ꝑ strake the coaffer against the borde, whereuppon Landolpho was, who by that meanes driuen backe, was forced to giue ouer the plãcke and with a billow, was beaten vnder the water, and afterwardes remounting aloft againe, hee swam more through feare then force. And seing the borde caried a farre of from him, fearinge lest he should not be able to fasten the same againe, he drewe toward the coafer, which was nere ynough vnto him. And laying his breaste vpon the couer thereof, he made it go (so right as he could) with his armes. And in this maner driuen by the Sea, now here now there, without eating (as hauing not wherwithall) and drinking more then he would, he continued al that day and night following not knowing wher he was, for he sawe nothing but sea. The next morning, eyther by the will of God, or throughe the windes force, Landolpho (which was then transformed into a sponge) holding faste with both his handes, the brimme of the coafer (like as we see them that feare to be drowned, do take hold of the next thinge that commeth to hande) arriued at the shore of the Isle of Corfu, wher, by fortune a poore woman, was scowring her vessell with Sand and salt water, who seing him draw nere, and perceyuing in him no forme or fashion of a man, was afraid, and crying out, ranne backe. He not able to speake, and see but very litle, could say nothinge, but as the Sea droue him nere the shore, the woman discryed the

like-

likenes of a coafer, and beholding ẏ ſame moze aduiſedlye, ſaw at length his armes vpon the ſame, & therewithal his face, marueiling wᵗ her ſelfe who it ſhould be: wherfoze moued with compaſſion, ſhe wente into the Sea a litle waye, which then was calme, and catching him by the heare, ſhe pluckte him and the coafer to lande. And with much a doe vnfolded his armes, that were about ẏ coafer, cauſing her maide that was wᵗ her to carrie the coafer vpon her head. And ſhe bare him to lande (like a litle childe) which done, ſhe put him into a hotte houſe, and with warme water, by frotting and robbing him, his naturall heate, and other his ſences loſt, began to come againe, into their fozmer courſe. And when he ſaw time ſhe toke him out, cheriſhing and cõfoztinge him with wynes and bzothes, and ſo well as ſhee could, made him at length to recouer his foze in ſuch wiſe, as he knew wher he was. Then the woman deliuered him his coafer, which he had ſaued, and badde him to ſeeke his aduẽture. And thus this good wife delt with Landolpho. Who litle eſteemed the coafer, but yet he conſidered, that it coulde not be of ſo ſmall valour, but that it was able to beare his charges, foz certaine dayes. Howbeit, feelinge it to be lighte, he was cleare voyde of hope, to haue anye ſuccour and reliefe thereof. Neuertheleſſe (when the good wyfe was out of the dooꝛes) he bzake open the ſame, to ſee what was within, where he found many pzecious Jewels, ſome bound together, and ſome looſe, wherein he had pzetie ſkill. And knowing them to be of great valour, giuing thanckes to God, which had not yet foꝛſaken him, was wholy recomfoꝛted. Howbeit, foꝛ ſomuch as in a litle ſpace he had bin twiſe cruellye diſtreſſed and tozmented by Foztune, fearing the third time, he thought that it was needeful foꝛ him to take heede, how to diſpoſe his things in ſafetie, till he came home to his owne houſe. Wherefoze, hauing beſtowed thoſe pzecious Jewels, in certaine ragges and cloutes, ſo well as he could: he ſaid to the good wife, ẏ

he had

he had no neede of the coafer, but if shee woulde giue him a bagge, he would bestow the same vppon her. Which the good wife willingly did. And Landolpho geuing her so great thanckes, as he coulde, for the kindnes which he had found at her hãds: toke his leaue, and imbarking himselfe, he passed to Branditio, & from thence from place to place, till hee came to Trani, where findinge diuers of the Citie wherein he dwelt, that were Drapers, he was apparelled of them (in a maner for Gods sake) to whom he told ꝑ discourse of all his fortune, except the coafer, who lent him a horse, and sente diuers in his company, to bring him home to Rauello. And when he was in safety arriued, he thanked God, that had brought him thither, where he searched his bouget, with more leasure then he did at the first, & founde that he had manye stones of so greate valour, that sellinge them at price reasonable, for lesse thẽ they were worth, his substaunce did amount, to so much more then it was when he departed from his house. And when he had founde the meanes to dispatch and sell his Iewels, he sent to Corfu a good peece of money, to the woman that toke him oute of the Sea, to recompence the kindnes, that he had found at her handes: and the like to them of Trani, that had giuen him apparell, the rest he take to himselfe, and would be no more a marchaunte, but liued at home in honest estate, to the ende of his life.

Andreuccio.

¶ Andreuccio of Perugia, being come to Naples to buy horses, was in one night surprised, with three marueilous accidentes. All which hauinge escaped with one Rubie he retourned home to his house.

The xxxvi. Nouell.



Here was at Perugia a yong man, called Andreuccio di Pietro, a horse cozser, who vnderstanding of a horse faire at Naples, did put fiue hundred Crownes in his purse, and neuer traueling before from his owne house, went thither with certaine other marchants: who arriued at Naples, vpon a Sonday at night. The next morninge, accordinge to the instructions giuen him by his host, he went to the fayre, where he viewed and saw many horses, whereof diuers did very well like him, and demaūded their prises: but with none he could agree of price. And to shew himselfe a right wel able man, to paye for that he boughte, many times (like a dolte and foole, as he was) hee drew out his purse stuffed with crownes, in the presence of them that passed to and fro. It chaunced ỳ a ponge woman of Scicilia (which was very fayre, but at euery mans commaundement, and that for little hire) passed by as he was shewinge his purse, not marked or perceiued by Andreuccio, who sodenlye saide to her selfe: What is she in all this towne, ỳ should be like vnto me, if all those crownes were mine? And so passed forth. There was with this yong peate an old womā, a Scicilian also: who so soone as she espied Andreuccio, forsoke her companion, & ran affectuouslye to imbrace him. Which ỳ yong woman percepuinge (not speaking a word) she gaue good heede to ỳ they said: Andreuccio tourninge himselfe to the olde woman, immediatlye knewe

knew her, and reioyſed muche, that he had ſo happely met her: whom after greate gratulacions, & manye welcomes, ſhe promiſed to viſite at his lodging, which done, ſhe departed from Andreuccio, and hee retourned to buy his horſſe, howbeit that morning, he bought none at all. The ponge dame, which had firſt ſeene this purſſe, and marked the acquaintaunce between the old woman and him, to aſſaie by what meanes ſhe might get that moneye, or at leaſte, ſome part thereof, ſubtelly aſked the old woman, what man that was, of whence, what he did there, and how he knew her. To whom the olde woman particularlye recompted her whole acquaintaunce, how ſhe dwelt of long time in Scicilia with his father, and afterwards at Perugia. And likewiſe ſhe told her, when he retourned, & for what cauſe hee was come to Naples. This iollie wenche, wholy informed of Andreuccio his parentes, and of their names, made a plat and foundation, by ſubtill and craftie meanes, how to obtaine her purpoſe. And when ſhe was come home to her houſe, ſhe ſent the old womã about buſineſſe for that day, becauſe ſhe might not retourne to Andreuccio. She had dwelling with her a prætie girle, well noſeled and brought vp, in doing of arrantes, whom about euening, ſhe ſent to ỹ lodging of Andreuccio to make inquirie for him: where by fortune ſhe chaunced to finde him ſtanding alone, at his hoſtes dooze, whom the girle did aſke, if he knew not an honeſt man of Perugia, called Andreuccio di Pietro, ỹ hoſted there? Yes my girle (q̃ he) I am the ſame man. Then ſhe toke him a ſide, and ſaide vnto him. Sir, there is a gentlewomã of this Towne, that would gladly ſpeake with you, if it were your pleaſure. Which when Andreuccio heard, by and by hee called to minde, and ſeemed to himſelfe, that hee was a goodly ponge man of perſon, and that without doubte, the ſame woman was in loue with him, becauſe in all Naples, he thought ther was none ſo proper a ſtripling as himſelfe. Whom incontinently he aunſwered, that he

would waite vpon her, demaunding when he should come, and to what place. To whom she made answere. Euen whē it pleaseth you sir. For my maistresse attendeth at home for you. Andreuccio vpon that, without any word spoken to his hoste, whither he was gone: said to the wench. Go thou before, and I will follow. And the girle did conduct him, to her maistres house, which dwelt in a streate called Marpertugio, a name shewing the honestie of the streate, wher she dwelt. But he knowing & suspecting nothing, thought the place to be right honest, that he went vnto, and ẏ wife likewise honest and good, and boldlie entred the house, the wenche going before. And mountinge vp the staiers: This ponge gristle, called her maistres, sayinge vnto her, that maister Andreuccio was come. Who redie at the vpper steppe, seemed as though she attended for him. This Ladie was fine, & had a good face, well apparelled, and trimmed after the beste maner. And seinge maister Andreuccio at hand, descended two steppes of the staiers, with her armes open to imbrace him, foldinge the same aboute his necke, and pansed a certaine space, without speaking any word, as thoughe great loue, and earneste affection, enforced her so to doe. Then weeping, she kissed his face, & with a voice halfe vttered, betwene howling and speaking, she said vnto him. O Andreuccio mine owne deare hart, most hartely welcome. Andreuccio marueyling at those tender words, all amazed aunsweared. Gentlewoman, and you also well found out. Afterwards she toke him by the hand and conueied him vp into a parlour, and from thēce (without further talke) into a chamber, which was all perfumed with Roses, with flowers of Orenges, & other sweete smelles: where he sawe a bedde well furnished, and diuers sortes of apparell, placed vppon pzelles (accordinge to the maner of that countrie) and many other faire and riche ornaments. By reason whereof Andreuccio, which was but a freshe water Souldiour, thought that shee had been a great Ladie. And

die. And they two sittinge together vppon a cheste, at her beds frete: She begã thus to saye vnto him. Andreuccio, "I am assured you do greatly wonder, at these faire wozds, "this curteous interteignement, and at the teares, which I "let fall. And no marueile, although you do not know mee, "and peraduenture neuer heard tel of me befoze. But I wil "declare vnto you, a thing moze straunge and marueilous, "then that is. And to tell you plaine, I am your owne sister, "and I say vnto you, that sith it hath pleased my Lozd God, "to shew me so much grace and fauour, that I doe now see, "one of my bzethzen befoze I die (althoughe I desire to see "them all) I care not when hee do call mee, from this wzet- "ched wozld: I am so in minde comfozted and releued. And "where it may chaūce, that you neuer vnderstoode so much "befoze this time, I will tell you the whole discourse. So "it is, that Pietro my father and yours, dwelt of long time "(whereof it is possible, that you haue heard repozt) at Pa- "lermo, where thzough the goodnesse, and frendlye behaui- "oure of him, there be yet some remayninge that did beare "him singular good wil and frēdship. But amonges other, "which loued him moste, my mother (which was a gentle- "woman, & then a widow) without doubt did loue him best. "In such wise, that shee forgetting the loue of her father, & "of her bzethzen, and the loue of her owne honour and repu- "tation, they dealed so together, as they begat mee, and am "here as you see. Afterwardes, when your father and mine, "had occasion to depart from Palermo, he retourned to Pe- "rugia, leauing my mother behinde, & me his yong dough- "ter, neuer after that (so farre as I knowe) caringe neither "foz my mother oz me: whereof if he were not my father, "I coulde blame him very much, consideringe his ingrati- "tude towards my mother. Albeit he ought to vse towards "mee, so muche affection and fatherlye loue, as to his owne "doughter, being come of no kitchin maide, ne yet of anye "base woman: Foz my mother otherwise not knowinge

what

what he was, did commit into his handes (moued of mere
loue) both herselfe, & all that she had. But what? Thinges
ill done, and so longe time past, are more easie to be repre-
hended, then amended. Thus the matter went, he left mee
a litle infante at Palermo, where, when I was growen to
yeares, my mother which was riche, gaue mee to wife, to
one of the house of Gergenti, a gentleman of great honesty
and reputation, who for the loue of my mother and me, re-
tourned to dwell at Palermo, where greatly fauouringe ỹ
faction of the Guelphi, hee began to practise a certaine en-
terprise, with oure king Charles, which being knowen to
king Frederick, before ỹ same enterprise could take effect,
we were forced to flie out of Scicilia. At what time I had
thought, to haue been the chiefest Ladie, that euer dwelte
in that Island: wherfore taking with vs such fewe things,
as wee were able to carie (fewe I maye well call them, in
respect of them we possessed) and leauinge our houses and
Palaces, we came vnto this citie. Where we found kinge
Charles, so beningne towards vs, that he hath recompen-
ced part of our losses, which we sustened in his seruice. For
he hath giuen vs possessions and houses, with good proui-
sion of housholde to my husband, and your brother in law,
as you now see & perceiue. And in this maner I do remaine
here, where (sweete brother) I thancke God (and not you)
that at this present I see you: and therwithall she toke him
about the necke, weeping tenderly, & then kissed his face a-
gaine. Andreuccio hearing this tale spoken in order, and
disgested from poinct to poinct with good vtterãce, wher-
of no word stucke betwene her teeth, or was impeached by
default of tongue: And remembring how it was true, that
his father dwelt at Palermo, knowing also by himselfe, the
maner of youg men, which in their youth, be prompte and
willinge to loue: and seinge her tender teares, her imbra-
cinges and honeste kisses, thoughte all that shee had spo-
ken, to be moste certaine and true. And after shee had

done her tale, he answered in this wise. Madame you may not thincke vnkindnesse, if I doe marueile at this, for that in verye deede, I haue no acquaintaunce of you, no more then if you had neuer beene borne. But whether my father hath spoken of you, or of your mother at any time, truly I do not now remember, but so much the more I do reioyce, that I haue founde a sister here (as I truste) because I am here alone. And certainely I knowe none so honourable, but you may seeme agreeable vnto him, so well as to mee, which am but a poore marchaunt: howbeit, I do beseeche you to tell me, how you did know, that I was in the City. To whom she aunswered. This morning a poore womã, which oftentimes repaireth to my house, gaue mee knowledge thereof, because of long time (as she told me) she did dwell with your father at Palermo, and at Perugia. And because I thought it more conuenient and meete, to bidde you home, to mine owne house, then to seke you in another mans, I thought good to send for you. After these words, she began in order to inquire of the state of his parents, calling them by their proper names: whereunto Andreuccio made aunswere, ẏ now he perceiued, he had better cause to giue credite vnto her words, then before. Their discourse & talke of thinges being long, & the weather hot, shee called for Greke wine & Comfits, & made Andreuccio to drinke. Who after ẏ bãquet, desirous to depart to his lodging (for it was about supper time) shee by no meanes would suffer him, but making as though she were angrie, said vnto him. Oh God, I see now most euidently, that you do make litle accompte of mee, being your owne sister, whom you neuer sawe before, and in her house: whereunto you ought to resorte, when so euer you come to towne. And will you nowe forsake the same, to suppe in an Inne? But of trouth you shall not chose, but take part of my supper. And although my husbande be not at home (whereof I am righte sorie) yet you shall knowe, that his wife is able, to make you

some

some good chere To whom Andreuccio, not knowing wel what to say els, made this aunsweare. I do loue you, as I ought te to loue a sister. But if I goe not to mine Inne, I know they will tarie for mee all this night, before they go to supper, to my great reproch and shame. Praised be God (q she then) I haue seruauntes to aduertise your host, that you be here with me, to the intente hee shall not tarrie for you. But pleaseth you sir, to do me this great curtesie, that I may sende for your companiõs hither, to beare you company, that afterwardes, if you will needes depart, ye maye goe all together. Andreuccio aunswered, that he would send for none of his company that night: but for so much as she was so importunate, he himselfe was righte well content, to satisfie her request. Then she made as thoughe shee had sent to his Inne to giue word, that they should not tarie for him. And after much communication, supper was placed vppon the table, serued in with manye deuises, and sondrie delicates abundantly, and she with like sleights cõtinued the supper, till it was darke night. And when they rose from the table, Andreuccio made hast to departe, but shee would not suffer him, tellinge him that Naples was a towne so straight of orders, that none might walke abrode in the night, and specially straungers. And that like as she had sent word, how they should not tary for him at supper, euen so she had done for his bedde. All which Andreuccio beleeuing, and taking pleasure, that he was with his sister (deceiued though he were of his false beliefe) was wel cõtented to tarie. Their talke and cõmunicatiõ after supper was of purpose dilated and protracted, and one part of the night being spent, she left Andreuccio in his chamber going to bedde, and a litle boye to waite vpon him to see that he lacked nothinge, and shee with her women went into another chamber. The time of the yeare was very hotte, wherefore Andreuccio being alone, striped himselfe, and laid his hose and doublette vnder his beddes head, and de-

sterous to go to the priuie, he asked the boie where it was, who pointing to the dooze, in a cozner of the chamber, said vnto him: Goe in there. Andreuccio safely wente in, and chaunced by Foztune to set his foote vpon a bozde, which at both endes was loose from the ioyst, whereuppon it lay, by reason whereof the bozd and he tombled downe into the Jakes: and God so loued him, that in the fall he receiued no hurt, although it were of a good height, sauing he was imbzoined and arraied, with the dunge of the place, wherof the Jakes was full. Which place (to the intent you may the better vnderstand, what is said, and what shall follow) euen as it was I wil describe vnto you. There was in a litle straighte entrie (as manye times we see betweene two houses) certaine bozdes laied vppon two Joistes, betwene the one house and the other. Uppon which, was placed the seate of the priuie, one of which bozdes was the same, that fell downe with Andreuccio, who now being in ỹ bottome of the Jakes, sozowfull foz that sodaine chaunce, cried oute to the boie foz helpe. But the boie so soone as hee hearde, that hee was fallen, wente in to tell his maistres, whoe by and by ranne into his Chamber, to seeke foz his clothes: and when she had founde them, & in the same his money, which Andreuccio like a foole, without mistruste, still caried about him: she now possessed ỹ thing, foz which she had before laied ỹ snare, in fayning herselfe to be of Palermo, & the doughter of one of Perugia. And caring no lõger foz him, she straight way shut fast ỹ priuy dooze, wherat he went forth when he fell. Andreuccio seing ỹ the boie would not aunswere, began to cry out a loude, but all was in vaine: wherfoze suspecting the cause, & beginning somewhat to late, to vnderstande the deceipt, he lept ouer a litle wall, which closed ỹ place from the sight of the streat. And when he was in the open streate, he went to the doze of the house, which he knew well ynough, makinge a noise, rapping hard & long at ỹ dooze, but it was in vaine. Foz which

cause,

cause, he began to complaine and lamente, like vnto one ẏ manifestly saw his misfortune, saying. Alas, in howe litle time haue I lost fiue hũdred crownes, and a sister. And after many other words, he begã againe to bouse at ẏ dooze, and to crie out. He rapped so long, and cryed so loude, as he waked manye of the neighbours there aboutes, who not able to suffer that noyse, rose out of their beds, & amonges others, one of the maides of the house (fayning her selfe to be slepie) looked out at the window and said in great rage. What noise is beneath? Oh saide Andreuccio, do yee not know me? I am Andreuccio, ẏ brother of madame Floredelice. Thou hast dronke to much me thinketh (quoth the maide) go sleepe and come againe to morow. I know none called Andreuccio, nor yet do vnderstand what thou meanest by those foolish words, get thee hence good man, & let vs sleepe I pray thee. Why (q Andreuccio) doest thou not heare me, what I say? Thou knowest me well ynough, if thou wilt, but if the Scicilian kinred, be so sone forgotten: Giue me my clothes, which I haue left behinde me, and I will go hence with al my hart. Whereat ẏ maide laughed and saide, I thincke the man is in a dreame, and with that she tourned her selfe & shut fast the window. Andreuccio now sure & certaine of his losses, attached with incredible sorow, conuerted his anger into rage, thoughte to recouer by anoiaunce, that which he could not get with fayre wordes. Wherefore taking vp a bigge stone, he began againe with greater blowes, to beate at the dooze, Which when manye of the neighbours (that before were waked oute of their sleepe and risen) did heare, thinking that it was some troublesome felow, ẏ counterfeited those words, to anoye the good wife of the house, and all they likewise troubled with the noyse: loking out of the windowes, began to rate him with one voice (like a sorte of Curres of one streate, which doe baule and barke at a straunge Dogge that palleth by) sayinge. This is to much shame and villanie,

"to come to the houses of honest women, at that time of the
"night, and to speake such londe wordes. Wherefore (good
"man) gette thee hence for Gods sake, and let vs sleepe. If
"thou haue any thing to do with the good wife, come againe
"to morrow, and disquiet vs no more to night. With which
wordes, as poore Andreuccio was somewhat appeased,
one that was within the house, a Ruffian (that kept ỹ good
wife) whom Andreuccio neuer saw, nor heard before: looked
out of the windowe, and with a bigge & horrible voice,
demaunded who was beneath: Whereat Andreuccio lifting
vp his head, saw one, that so far as he could perceiue,
seemed to be a long lubber & a large, with a blacke beard,
and a sterne visage, looking as though he were newly ryssen
from bedde, ful of sleepe, gaping and rubbing his eyes.
Whom Andreuccio aunsweared in fearefull wise, saying:
I am the good wiues brother of the house. But the Ruffian
interrupting his answeare, speaking more fiercely then
"at the first, said: I know not who thou arte, but if I come
"downe, I will so codgel and bombaste thee, as thou shalte
"not be able to sturre thy selfe, like an asse and dronkē beast
"as thou art, which all this night wilt not suffer vs to sleepe.
"And with these wordes turning himselfe aboute, he shutte
"the windowe. Diuers of the neighbours (which knewe
better the conditions of that terrible Ruffian) speakinge
faire to Andreuccio, saide vnto him. For Gods sake good
man, depart hence in time, & suffer not thy selfe to be slaine:
gette thee hence (q̃ an other) and saye not but thou haddest
warning. Whereat Andreuccio being appalled, & with
the Ruffians woordes and sight amazed, moued likewise
by the counsaile of the neighbours, that spake to him as he
thoughte, in charitable wyse, toke his waye to retourne to
his Inne, the sorowfulles mā that euer liued, and in greatest
despaire, for losse of his money. Turninge that way,
wherein he was guided by a litle girle the daye afore, and
anoyed with the stenche that he felt about him: desirous, to

go to

goe to the sea side to washe him, hee declined to muche on the left hande, taking the waye vp to the streat called La Ruga Catellana, and as hee was marching vp the highest parte of the citie, by chaunce he sawe twoo men before him, with a lanthorne light, in one of their handes, coming towardes him, for auoyding of whom (because he feared that it was the watche, or some other ill disposed persones) hee hidde him selfe in an olde house harde by. But they (as of purpose) went to the very same place. Where one of them discharging hym selfe, of certaine instrumentes of yron, whiche he bare vpon his backe, both of them did bewe, and surueie those yrons, debating of diuers thinges touching the same, and as they were talking togethers, one of them sayde: what meaneth this? I smel the foulest stenche, that euer I felte in all my life. And when he had sayd so, he lifted vp the Lanthorne, and espied miserable Andreuccio, couching behinde the wall, and being afrayde, asked who it was, Andreuccio helde his peace. But they approching neare him with their lighte, demaunded what hee made there, so late thely araied. To whom Andreuccio rehersed ỹ whole aduenture as it chaũceth. Who considering ỹ cause of that misfortune, sayd one to an other: this no doubt was done in the house of Scarabone Butta Fuoco: and tourning towardes Andreuccio, one of them sayde vnto him. Good mã, although thou hast lost thy money, yet thou hast great cause to prayse God: that it was thy chaunce to falle, and not to enter againe into the house. For if thou haddest not fallen, assure thy selfe, that when thou haddest bene a sleepe, thy throte had bene cutte, and so with thy money, shouldest haue loste thy life. But what auaileth it nowe, to wepe and lamente. For thou shalt so sone plucke the starres out of ỹ Skye, as euer recouer one peny of thy losse. And without doubt he will kill thee, if hee vnderstande that thou make any wordes thereof. When they had sayde so, and had giuẽ him that admonition, they comforted him in this wyse.

Good

"Good felowe, we doe lament thy ſtate. And therefore, if
"thou wilt ioyne thy ſelf with vs, about an enterpriſe, which
"we haue in hande: we warraũt thee, thou ſhalt get a great
"deale more then thou haſt loſte. Andreuccio like one in ex-
treame diſpaire, was content. The date before was buried
one Meſſer Philippo Minutulo, an Archebiſhop of Na-
ples, in riche pontificalles and ornamentes, with a Rubie
vpon his finger, that was worth fiue hundred Ducates of
golde, whome they purpoſed to robbe and diſpoile, telling
Andreuccio the whole order of their intent: who more co-
uetous, then well aduiſed, went with them. And going to-
wardes the great church: Andreuccio his perfume began
"to ſente very ſtrong, whereupon one of them ſayde. It is
"not poſſible to deuiſe a waye, that this ſhitten beaſte maye
"waſhe him ſelfe in ſome place, that he ſtinke no more thus
"filthelie? Yes, quod the other. There is a pitte here harde
"by, ouer whiche there hangeth a pulley, and a great buc-
"ket, where we may preſently waſhe him. When they were
come to the pitte, they founde the rope, hanging ſtill vpon
the pulley, but the bucket was taken away: wherefore they
thought beſte to tie him to the rope, & to let him downe the
pitte to waſhe him ſelfe. And that when he was waſhed, he
ſhould wagge the rope, and they woulde hoiſte him vp a-
gaine. Whiche they did. But it chaunced, that whiles he
was thus clenſing him ſelfe in the pitte: The watche of
the citie (becauſe they ſwette, and the night was very hot)
being drie and thirſtie, came to the pitte to drinke. The o-
ther twoo, perceiuing the watche at hande, left Andreuc-
cio in the pitte, and ranne awaye. The watche, whiche was
come thether to drinke, perceiued not, thoſe two that were
fledde. And Andreuccio being ſtill in the bottome, when
he had clenſed him ſelfe, began to wagge the rope. The
watche ſitting downe by the pittes ſyde caſte of their clo-
kes, and layde downe their halbardes, and other wea-
pons, and began to drawe vp the rope, thinking that the

bucket

bucket full of water, was tied to the same. When Andreuccio was haled vp, to the brincke of the pitte, hee forsoke the rope, and cast him selfe with one of his handes vpō the syde of the same. When the watche sawe that, they for feare ranne away so facte as they could, without speaking any worde. Wherof Andreuccio did marueile very much. And if he had not taken good holde, he had fallen agayne downe to the bottome, to his great hurt, and peraduenture not without peril of his life. Notwithstanding, being out of the pitte, and finding halberdes, & other weapons there, which he knew wel, his fellowes brought not with thē: he then began muche more to wonder. But betwene feare & ignorance of that which happened, complaining him self of his harde fortune, without touching of any thing, he determined to go from thence, and wandred he could not tell whether. But as he was departing from that place, he met his fellowes, retiring backe to drawe him vp. And when they perceiued him alredie haled out of the pitte, they wer wonderfully abashed, and asked who drewe him out. Andreuccio made aunswere, that he coulde not tell, rehearsing to them in order, what had chaūced, and of the things he founde without. They vnderstanding the matter, laughed, and tolde him againe the cause, wherefore they ran awaye, and what they were that drewe him vp. And without further talke (being then about midnight) they repaired to the great churche. Into the whiche they easely entred. And wente to the Tombe, whiche was of Marble, verie huge and weightie: The couer whereof being verye great, with their crowes of yron, and other tooles, they lifted vp so farre, as one man was able to enter, which doen, one asked an other, who should goe in? Not I quod one, and not I (quod the other) No, nor I quod Andreuccio. The other twoo hearing Andreuccio saye so, stepped vnto hym, saying. Wilte thou not goe in? By the faythe wee owe to God: if thou goe not in, we will so beate thee, with

one of

" one of these yron barres, as thou shalt neuer sturre againe,
" out of this place. Andreuccio being made their common riding foole: greatly fearing, when he heard them saye so, went in. And when he was in the graue, he sayde vnto him selfe. These good felowes do make me goe in, because they would deceiue me. For when I haue geuen them all, that is here, and I readie to come out, they meane to runne awaie to saue them selues, and to leaue me behinde, without any parte thereof: Wherfore he purposed first, to take his owne portion to him selfe. And remembring the Ring of great valour, whereof they tolde him: so sone as he was in the graue, he pulled it of from the Archebishops finger, & put it vpon his own. And afterwardes taking the Crosse, the Miter, & the Gloues, dispoyling him euen to his shyrt, he gaue them all saying. That there was nothing els. But they pressing vpon him that there was a ring behinde, willed him throughly to make searche for it: howebeit he still aunswered that he could not finde it. And because he would make them to tarie a litle longer, he fained as though he had made a further searche. The other so subtile and malicious as he, bad him to seke still: & whē they saw time, they toke away the proppes, that staied vp the Tombe, and ran awaye, leauing poore Andreuccio fast shutte in the graue. Whiche when Andreuccio perceiued, what chaunced to him then, eche man may consider. Then he assaied some times with his shoulders, sometimes with his head, to remoue the couer, but all was in vaine. Wherefore euen for verie sorowe, he fell in a sownde vpon the dead bodie of the Bishop. And if a man had seene them both at that instant, it coulde not well haue bene discerned, whether was the dead corps, the Archebishoppe dead, or poore Andreuccio dying. But after he was come to him selfe, he begā piteously to complaine, seing hee was arriued, to one of these twoo endes, either in the Tombe to die for hunger, and with the stenche of the dead bodie, putrifying with wormes, if no

man

man came to open it: or els to be hanged as a theefe, if hee were founde within. And as he was in these cõsiderations, tormented with sorowe: he heard a noyse in the church of diuers men, who as he thought, came to the like facte, that he and his felowes had done before, wherewith his feare began much more to augmente. But after they had opened the graue and stayed it vp, it came in question amõgs them, who should go in. And when they had contended a good space about the same. A priest that was in the companie sayde. Why are ye afrayde? Doe ye thinke that hee will eate you? The dead neuer eate men: I will go in my selfe. And when he had sayde so, he laied him downe vpon his breste at the side of the graue, and thrusting his feete in before, he went downe. Andreuccio seing that, erected him selfe vpright & caught the Priest by one of the legges, making as though he would haue drawen him in: which whẽ the priest perceiued, he cried out a loude, speeding him selfe out, so fast as he could. Wherewithal the rest dismaied, almoste out of their wittes, leauing the graue opẽ, toke their legges and ran, as though a hundred thousand deuels had bene at their tailes: whiche seing Andreuccio (more ioyful then he looked for) lepte out of the graue, and ran as faste as he could out of the Churche, at the place where he came in. At what time dayelight began to appeare, and he with the ringe on his finger, wandred he wiste not whether, tyll he came to the Seaside, and at length recouered his Inne, where he founde his companie and his hoste al that night, taking greate care for him. To whome recompting that whiche chaunced, his hoste gaue him aduise incontinently, to get him out of Naples, whiche presently he did: and returned to Perugia, hauing bestowed his .v.C. crownes vpon a ringe, whiche he thought to haue imploied vpon horses: For whiche cause he made that iourney.

¶ The

The Erle of Angiers

¶ The Erle of Angiers being falsely accused, vvas banished out of Fraunce, and left his twoo sonnes in sondry places in Englande, and retourning (vnknowen) by Scotlande, founde theim in great authoritie, afterwardes he repayred in the habite of a seruaunte, to the Frenche kinges armie. And being knowen to be innocent, was againe aduaunced to his first estate.

The. xxxvj. Nouell.

THe Romaine Empire being transferred from the Frenche, vnto the Almanes: there rose a great discencion betwene bothe the nacions, and in the ende a cruell and continuall warre. For whiche cause, as well for the defence of his kingdome, as to offende his ennemies, the Frenche king and one of his sonnes, with all the power of their owne Realme, and of their frendes and allies, assembled a great hoste of menne, to encountre with their enemies: and before they proceaded, because they would not leaue their realme without a gouernour, knowing Gualtieri, Erle of Angiers, to be a gentle & sage knight, and their moste trustie frend, and that he was a man moste expert in the art of warfare, seming vnto thē (notwithstanding) more apt to pleasure, then paine, lefte him Lieutenaunt generall in their place, for the gouernement of the whole kingdome of Fraunce: and proceded in their enterprise. The Erle then began with great knowelcdge, and by good order, to execute his office committed vnto hym, doynge nothinge withoute the consente of the Queene, and her fayre daughter in lawe, althoughe they were lefte to be vnder his custodie and gouernement, yet neuertheles, he honoured them as his Maistresses and superiours.

periours. The Erle Gualtieri was a beautiful personage, about the age of fourtie yeares, so familiar and well conditioned, as any gentleman could be, and besides that, hee was the moste excellent and trimmest knight that was knowen in those dayes, and one moste comelie in his apparell. It chaunced that the king and his sonne, being at the warres aforesaide, the wife of the Erle died in the meane whyle, leauing him onely twoo litle yong children, a sonne and a doughter, whiche he had by her. He then frequenting the court, of the aforesaid ladies, talking many times with theim about the affaires of the Realme: the wife of the kinges sonne, fixed her eyes vpon him, and with great affection (for his persone and vertues) feruently embraced hym with secrete loue. And knowing her selfe to bee ponge and freshe, and him to be without a wyfe, thought (sodainly) to bring to passe, that whiche shee desired, and thinking that nothing could lette it, but onelye shame to discouer it, shee purposed vtterlye to abandone the same. And vppon a daye beyng alone, shee sente one to seeke the Erle, as though shee would haue communicated with him of other matters. The Erle whose mynde was farre different, from the Ladies, incontinentlye came vnto her: who beyng sette downe together vppon a bedde (whiche she desired) alone in a chamber, he asked her twyse, vpon what occasion she sent for hym: and she hauing nothing to saye vnto hym, pressed in the ende, and rapte with loue waxed verie shamefaste and almoste wepinge, and quaking for feare, with faynte woordes, began to saye as foloweth. My
» derely beloued and louing frende, and Lorde, you may ea-
» sely knowe (beyng a wyse man as you bee) the frailtie of
» men and women: and by diuers considerations, the weake-
» nesse to be more in the one, then in the other. Wherefore
» (before a iust iudge) one fault of diuerse qualities, ought
» not of reason to receiue one like punishement. Moreouer,
» who is he that will saye, that a poore man or woman, which
» getteth

" getteth their liuing with the labour of their bodie, ought
" not more to be reprehended, if they become amourous, and
" subiect to their lustes, then the riche Ladye whiche taketh
" no care for her liuing, or wanteth any thing that shee desi-
" reth. Truely I beleue there is none that will saye so: for
" which reason I suppose, that the things beforesayd, ought
" to serue the greatest part of the excuse, to the aduauntage
" of her that doth possesse them: If it happen that shee geue
" her selfe fully to the conductions of loue: and the superflu-
" sage of her saide excuse, ought to consiste, in that shee hath
" chosen her a sage and vertuous frende, if shee that loueth,
" hath done so in dede. Whiche twoo thinges as they ought
" to be (in my iudgement) so they are in me, and many other
" also: whiche ought to induce me to loue, accordingly as my
" youth requireth, and the great distaunce that is betweene
" my husbande and mee. It behoueth nowe then, that they
" should aduaunce them selues in your presence, for the de-
" fence of my burning loue: and if the same do raine in you,
" whiche haue power in the wise, then I beseche you to geue
" me counsayle and aide in the thing which I shal demaūde.
" True it is, that for the long absence of my husbande (not a-
" ble to resist the prickes of the flesshe, and the force of loue)
" whiche be of suche great effect, that they haue many times
" past, and yet daily do banquishe and ouercome, not only fe-
" ble and weake women, but also the strongest men. I liuing
" in ease and idlenes as you se, and forced to folowe the plea-
" sures of loue and to become amourous: and as I do knowe
" well, that suche thinges (if they were knowen) should not
" be reputed honest. Neuertheless, the same being kepte se-
" crete, I truste shall not be reprocheful. Notwithstanding,
" dame Loue is so fauourable vnto mee, that not onely shee
" hath geuen me true iudgement, in choise of a frende, but
" hath reueiled vnto me, that it is you, whiche is worthy to
" be beloued, of such a Ladie as I am. For if I be not great-
" ly deceiued, I doe make accompte, that you be the fayrest
personage,

perſonage, the ſemelieſt, the moſte curteous, and wyſeſt gentleman, in all the Realme of Fraunce. And as I maye ſaye, by reaſon of his abſence, that I am without a huſband ſo may you affirme, that you be without a wife: wherefore I beſeche you, for the loue that I beare vnto you, that you will not denye me your loue and frendſhip, and that you will haue pitie vpon my young yeares, whiche doubtles do conſume for you, as I ſee againſt the fierie flames. At which worde the teares ran downe in ſuch aboundance, as where ſhe thought to make further ſupplication & praiers ſhe had no more power to ſpeake. But holding downe her head, like one that was ouercome, ſhe threw her ſelf downe into the Erles lappe, who like a faithfull knight, began to blame (with ſharpe rebukes) her fonde and fooliſhe loue: puſhing her from hym, as ſhee was about to clepe him aboute the necke, and ſwore great othes, that rather hee woulde be drawen in peces, then conſent to ſuche a thing, to bee done by him, or any other, againſt the honour of his Lorde and maiſter. Whiche wordes the Ladie hearing, ſodainly forgat her loue, and in great rage, ſayde vnto him. Shall I then be fruſtrate, thou arrent villayne, in this wyſe of my deſired ioye? But ſithens thou goeſt about, to ſeke my deſtruction: I will cauſe thee to be put to death, or els to be banyſhed the worlde. When ſhe had ſayde ſo, by and by ſhe caught her ſelfe by the heare of the head, and almoſte tare it of cleane, and then layde handes vppon her garmentes, renting the ſame in peeces, and after wardes cried out aloude. Helpe, helpe: The Erle of Angiers, wil rauyſhe me by force. The Earle ſeeing that (and farre more doubting of the enuie, and malice of the Courte, then his owne conſcience, for any committed facte, fearing alſo, that more credite would be geuen, to the wickednelſe of the Ladie, then to his innocencie) conueighed him ſelfe from that place, and ſo ſoone as hee coulde, hee wente out of the palace, and fledde home to his owne houſe, where

without any further aduise, he placed his children on horse-
backe, and so well as he coulde caried them to Callice. At
the brute and noyse of the Ladie, many people assembled.
Who seing and hearing the occasion of her crie, not onely
beleued her wordes, but also affirmed, that the pompouse
state of the Erle, was vsed by him to bring to passe, the effect
of his desire. Then they ranne to the houses of the Erle, in
great furie, to arreste his persone: but not finding hym
there, they firste sacked his houses, and afterwardes ouer-
threwe them to the grounde. The newes hereof (so wicked
as might be deuised) arriued at the King and Dolphins
Campe, whereof they were so troubled & offended, as they
condempned the Erle, and all his progenie to perpetuall
exile: promising great giftes and rewardes, to them that
would present them quicke or dead. The Erle being offen-
ded in his conscience, for that he was fled, innocent of the
facte, made himself culpable therof, and arriued at Callice
with his children, dissembling what he was, and forthwith
passed ouer into England, and in poore apparell, trauai-
led vp to London. And before he entred the citie, he gaue
his childrē diuers admonicions, but specially of two things.
Firste, that they should beare pacientlye the pouertie, wher-
unto fortune (without their offence) had brought theim.
Afterwardes, that wisely they should take heede, at no time
to manifeste, and declare, from whence they came, and
whose children they were, as they loued the price of their
owne lyues. The sonne was named Levves, almoste of the
age of nyne yeares, and the doughter called Violenta, was
about the age of. vii. bothe whiche children, as their age
could suffer them, did well obserue their fathers heste, as
afterwardes it did right wel appeare. And because ẏ this
might the better be brought to passe, it semed good vnto
him, to alter their names, naming the sonne Perotto, and
the doughter Gianetta. And when they were arriued at
London, in maner of beggers: they craued their almosse, &

being

being by fortune for that purpose, one morning at a church doore, it tame to passe that a great Lady, which was one of the Marshalles of Englandes wiues, in going out of the Church, sawe the Erle and his two litle children begging their almose, of whom she demaunded, what countrie mã he was, and whether those children were his owne, or not. To whom the Erle answered, that he was a Picarde, and by reason of a wicked facte, done by his eldest sonne (that was an vnhappie boye) he was forced to departe his countrie, with those his twoo children. The Ladie whiche was pitifull, fixed her eyes vpon the girle, who pleased her verie much, because she was beautifull, gentil, and amiable, saying. Good man, if thou be content to leaue vnto mee, this thy litle doughter, which hath a good face, I will willingly take her, & if she become a duetiful maiden, when shee is mariagable, I wil marie her in honest wise. This demaũde greatly pleased the Erle, who redely aunswered, that hee was contented, and with teares trickeling downe his eyes he deliuered, and commended his pretie doughter vnto her. And when he had thus well bestowed her, he determined to tarrie no longer there, but in begging his almose, trauelled through the countrie, with his sonne Perotto, & went into Wales, not without great labour and paine, as one neuer accustomed to trauayle on foote. Where dwelte one other of the kyng of Englandes Marshalles, that was of great authoritie, and kepte a noble house: To whose courte the Erle & his sonne, oftentymes repayred, to practise and begge their liuing: where one of the Marshalles sonnes, and other Gentlemens children, doyng certayne childyshe sportes and pastymes, as to runne and leape, Perotto began to entermedle hym selfe amonges them (who in those games dyd so excellentlye well, as none was his better) whiche thyng diuers tymes the Marshall perceiuing, well pleased with the order of the childe, asked of whence hee was. It was tolde him, that hee was a poore

mans sonne, which many tymes came thyther, to begge his almose. The Marshall desiring to haue the childe, the Erle, whiche prayed vnto God for nothing els, liberallye gaue hym vnto hym, although it greeued hym, to departe from him. The Erle then hauing bestowed his sonne and his doughter, determined no longer to tarrie in England, but so well as he coulde, he passed ouer into Irelande, and when he was arriued at Stanforde, he placed him selfe, in the seruice of a man of armes, belonging to an Erle of that countrie, doing all thinges that did belong vnto a seruing man, or page: and not knowen to any man, hee continued there a long time, with great paine and toile. Violenta named Gianetta, that dwelt with the Ladie at Londō, grewe so in yeares, in beautie, in personage, and in such grace and fauour of her lord & lady, & of all the reste of the house, & so well beloued of al them ẏ knew her, ẏ it was meruailous to see. All men that sawe her maners and countenaunce, iudged her to be worthy of great honour & possessions, by reason wherof, ẏ Lady that receiued her of her father, not knowing what shee was, but by his report, purposed to marrie her honourablie, according to her worthinesse. But God the rewarder of all mens desertes, knowing her to be a noble woman, & to beare (without cause) the penaunce of an other mans offence, disposed her otherwise, and to the intent, that this noble gentlewoman, might not come into the handes, of a man of ill condicions, it must be supposed, that that whiche came to passe, was by Gods own will and pleasure, suffred to be done. The gentlewomā, with whome Gianetta dwelte, had but one onely sonne by her husband, whiche both shee and the father, loued derie dearelye: as well because hee was a sonne, as also that in vertue and good merites hee greatlye excelled. For hee surpassed all other in good condicions, valiaunce, goodnes, and beautie of personage, being about fire yeares elder then Gianetta: who seyng the mayden, to be both fayre and comelye, be-

came

came so farre in loue with her, as he esteemed her aboue all thinges of the worlde. And because he thought her to be of base parentage, he durst not demaunde her, of his father & mother to wyfe. But fearing that he should lose their fauour: he kept his loue secret, wherby he was worse tormẽted, then if it had bene openly knowẽ. And thereby it chaũced, through Loues malice, he fel sore sicke: For whose preseruation, were many Phisitions sent for, who marking in him, all signes and tokens of sickenes, and not knowing ỹ disease: were altogether doubtfull of his health: whereof the father and mother tooke so great sorowe and griefe, as was possible, and many times with pitifull praiers, they demaunded of him, the occasion of his disease. To whome he gaue for answere, nothing els but heauie sighes, and that he was like to consume, and die for weakenesse. It chaunced vpon a daye there was brought vnto him a Phisicion, that was very ponge, but in his science profoundlie learned, and as he was holding him by the poulces, Gianetta (who for his mothers sake, attended him very carefully) entred vpon occasion into the chamber, where he lay sicke, and so sone as the ponge gentleman perceiued her, & that she spake neuer a woorde, or made any signe, or demonstration towardes him, he felte in his hart, to arise his most amourous desire, wherefore his poulces began to beate, aboue their common custome, whiche thing the Phisicion immediatly perceiued and marueiled, standing still to see howe long that fitte would continue. Gianetta was no sooner gone out of the Chamber, but the beating of the poultes ceased: wherefore the Phisicion thought, that he had founde out some part of the gentlemans disease, and a litle while after, seming to take occasiõ to speake to Gianetta holding him still by the armes, he caused her to bee called in, and she incontinently came: but she was no sooner entred the chambre, but the poulces began to beate againe: & whẽ she departed, the beating ceased. Wherupon the Phisicion

was throughly perswaded, that he vnderstode the effecte of his sickenes, and therwithall rose vp and taking the fa-
ther and mother aside, sayde vnto them. The healthe of your
sonne, doth not consiste in the helpe of Phisicions, but re-
maineth in the handes of Gianetta your maide, as I haue
perceiued by moste manifest signes, which maide the yong
man feruently doth loue. And yet (so farre as I perceiue)
the maide doth not knowe it: you therfore vnderstand now
what to doe, if you loue his life. The gentleman and his wife hearing this, was somewhat satisfied: for so muche as remedy might be founde, to saue his life, although it greued them greatly, that the thing whereof they doubted, should come to passe, whiche was the mariage betwene Gianetta and their sonne. The Phisicio departed, and they repaired to their sicke sonne: the mother saying vnto him in
this wyse. My sonne, I would neuer haue thought, that
thou wouldest haue kept secret from mee, any parte of thy
desire: specially, seing that without the same, thou doest re-
maine in daunger of death. For thou art, or ought to be as-
sured, that there is nothing that may be gotten, for thy co-
tentment, whatsoeuer it had bene, but it should haue bene
prouided for thee, in as ample maner as for my selfe. But
sithe thou hast thus done, it chaunceth that our Lord God,
hath shewed more mercy vpo thee, then thou hast done vpo
thy selfe. And to the ende thou shalt not die of this disease,
he hath declared vnto me, the cause of the same: whiche is
none other, but the great loue, that thou beares to a ponge
maiden, wheresoeuer she bee. And in deede thou oughtest
not to be ashamed, to manifest thy loue, because it is meete
and requisite for thyne age. For if I wist thou couldest not
loue, I would ẏ lesse esteme thee. Now thē my good sonne,
be not afraid, franckly to discouer thine affection. Driue a-
way the furie & thought, which thou hast taken, & wherof
this sickenes commeth: And comfort thy selfe. Being assu-
red, that thou shalt desire nothing at my handes, that may

be done

be done, but it shall be accõplished of mee, that loueth thee better then mine owne life: and therefore expell from thee this shame and feare. And spare not to tell me, if I be able to doe any thing, in that whiche thou loueſt. And if thou perceiue, that I be not carefull to bring it to passe, repute me for the cruelleſt mother, that euer bare childe. The ponge gentleman hearing theſe woordes of his mother, was first ashamed, but after thinking with him selfe, that none was so well able to pleasure him as shee (driuing awaye all shame) sayed to her in this wise. Madame, there is none other thing that hath made me, to kepe my loue so secrete, but that, whiche I see by cõmune proofe in many, who after they be growen to yeares of discretion, doe neuer remembre that they haue bene ponge. But for so much as herein I doe see your Ladiship discrete and wyse, I will not onely affirme that to be true, whiche you haue perceiued in me, but also I will confeſſe what it is, vpon condision, that the effect shall folowe your promise, so farre as lieth in you, and whereby you shalbe able to recouer my life. Whereunto ỳ mother trusting to much in that, which she ought not to haue accomplished, for certaine considerations, which afterwardes came into her minde: Answered him liberally, that he might boldly discouer all his desire, and that forthwith she would bring the same to passe. Madame (sayde the ponge man then) the great beautie, and cõmendable qualities of your maiden Gianetta, whom as yet not only I haue no power to intreate, to take pitie vpõ me, but also I haue made no wight in the world, priuie of this my loue. The not disclosing and secrecie of whose loue, hath brought me in case you see: And if so be the thing, whiche you haue promised, doe not by one meane or other come to passe, assure your selfe, that my life is but shorte. The Ladie knowing, that it was more tyme to comforte, then to reprehende, sayd vnto him smiling. Alas my sonne, were you sicke for this? Bee of good chere, and when you are

whole let me alone. The yonge gentleman being put in good hope, shewed in litle time tokens and signes, of great amendement. Wherof the mother was marueilous glad, disposing her selfe to proue, howe she might obserue that, which she had promised. And on a day calling Gianetta vnto her, demaunded in gentle wise, by waye of mery talke, "if she had not gotten her a louer. Gianetta with face al blu-"shing, aunswered Madame, I haue no nede therof, & much "more vnsemely, for so poore a damosell as I am, to medita-"te or thincke vpon louers, whiche am banished, from my "frendes and kinsfolke: remaining in seruice as I doe. To "whom the Lady saide. If you haue none, wee will bestowe "one vpon you, whiche shall content your minde, and make "your life more delectable & pleasaunt. For it is not meete, "that so faire a mayde as you be, should continue without a "louer. Whereunto Gianetta answered. Madame, waying "with my selfe, that you haue taken me from my poore fa-"ther, and brought me vp as your doughter: It becommeth "me to do that whiche pleaseth you. Notwithstãding, I in-"tende neuer to make any cõplaint to you, for lacke of such, "but if it please you, to geue me a husbande, I purpose duti-"fully to loue and honour him. For my progenitours haue "left me none other inheritaunce, but honestie, whiche I "meane to kepe, so long as my life indureth. These woordes to the Ladye, semed contrary to that, whiche shee desired to knowe, to atchieue her promyse made to her sonne, although (lyke a wyse Ladie) to her selfe, shee greatly praysed the Damosell, and sayde vnto her. But Gianetta, what "if my Lorde the Kyng (whiche is a younge Prince, and "you a fayre mayden) woulde take pleasure in your loue, "woulde you refuse him? Whereunto the mayde sodaynlye "aunswered. The Kyng maye well force mee, but by con-sent, he shall neuer obtayne the thing of mee that is dishonestie. The Ladye conceyuyng the courage, and stoutnesse of the mayden in good parte, sayde no more vnto her:

ber: but thinking to put the matter in prooke, she tolde her sonne, that when he was whole, she woulde put them both in a chamber that he mighte haue his pleasure vppon her. For she thought it dishonest, to intreate her maide for her sonne, because it was the office of a Ruffian. The yong mā was nothing contented therewith, whereby hee sodainlye waxed sicke againe: which the Ladye perceiuinge, opened her whole intēt to Gianetta: but finding her more constāt, then euer she was before: she told her husband, all that she had done, whoe agreed (althoughe against their willes) to giue her to be his wife, thinkinge it better (their sonne liuing) to haue a wife vnagreeable to his estate, then to sufer him to die for her sake. Which after great consultatiō, they concluded, whereof Gianetta was marueilouslye well pleased, and with deuout harte gaue thankes to God, for ỳ he had not forgotten her. And yet for all that, shee woulde neuer name her selfe otherwise, then the doughter of a Picarde. The yong sonne waxed whole incontinently, & was maried, the best contented man aliue, and began to dispose himselfe, louingly to lead his life with her. Perotto which did remaine in Wales with the other Marshall of ỳ king of England, semblably increased, and was welbeloued of his maister, and was a very comely & valiaunt personage, that the like of him, was not to be found in all the Island, in such wise as at Torneis, Iustes, and other factes of armes, there was none in al the Countrie, comparable vnto him: wherefore by the name of Perotto the Picarde, hee was knowen and renowmed. And like as God had not forgotten his sister, euen so he shewed his mercifull remembraunce of him. For a certaine plague and mortalitie, happened in that countrie, which consumed the one halfe of ỳ people there: besides that the most part of them that liued, were fledde for feare into other countries, wherby ỳ whole prouince, seemed to be abandoned and desolate. Of which plague, the Marshall his maister, his wife, and his sonne, &

many

many other brothers, neuewes, & kinsfolke died, of whom remained no more, but his onely daughter, which was mariageable, and some of his seruauntes, together with Perotto, whom (after the plagues was somewhat ceased) the yong gentlewoman toke for her husband, through ẏ counsaile and consente, of certaine of the countrie people that were aliue, because he was a valiaunt & honest personage, and of all that inheritaunce, which her father lefte, shee made him lord. A litle while after, the king of Englande vnderstanding that the Marshall was dead, and knowing the valour and stoutnesse of Perotto the Picarde, he made him to supplye the rowme of the deade Marshall. In this sorte in shorte time, it chaūced to the two innocent children of the Erle of Angiers, which were left by him as lost and quite forlorne. It was then the xviii. yeare sithens the Erle fledde from Paris, hauing in miserable sorte suffred manye aduentures. Who seinge himselfe to begin to ware olde, was desirous (being yet in Irelande) to knowe (if hee could) what was become of his children. Wherefore, perceyuinge ẏ he was wholy altred from his wonted forme, & feeling himselfe more lustie (throughe the longe exercise & labour which he had sustained in seruice) then he was in ẏ idle time of his youth, he departed from his maister (verye poore and in ill apparel) wᵗ whom hee had continued in seruice a long time, and came into England to ẏ place where he had left Perotto, and founde him to be Marshall of the countrie, & saw that he was in health, lustie, and a comelye personage, which reioyced him maruelously, but he would not make himselfe to be knowen to him, till hee had seene what was become of his doughter Gianetta: wherfore taking his iourney, he rested in no place, till he came to London. And there secretely inquyring of the Lady, with whō he had left his daughter, and of her state, he learned, that his doughter was her sonnes wife, whereof hee toke exceeding great pleasure. And from that time forth, he compted

his

his aduersities past, as nothing, sith he had found his chil-dren liuing, and in such great honour. And desirous to see her (began like a poore man) to harbour himselfe neare vn-to her house, whereuppon a certaine daye, beinge seene of Giacchetto Lamyens: (for that was the name of the hus-bande of Gianetta,) who hauinge pitie vppon him because he was poore and old, commaunded one of his seruaunts, to haue him into the house: & to giue him meate for Gods sake, which the seruaunt willingly did accõplish. Gianetta had many children by Giacchetto, of which the eldest was but eight yeares olde: the fayrest and best fauoured chil-dren of the worlde. Who when they sawe the Erle eate meate, they all came about him, and began to make much of him, as though by natures instruction, they had knowẽ him to be their Graundfather. And hee knowinge his ne-phewes, began to shew them tokens of loue and kindnesse. By reason whereof, the children would not go from him, although their gouernour did call them away. Wherfore the mother beinge tolde the same, came oute of a chamber vnto the place where the Erle was, and threatned to beate them, if they would not do as their maister bad them. The children begã to crie, and said, ẏ they would tary by ẏ good man: that loued them better, then their maister did, wher-at the Lady and the Erle began to laugh. The Erle not as a father, but like a poore man, rose vp to doe honour to his daughter, because shee was a noble woman. Conceyu-ing marueilous ioy in his minde to see her: but she knewe him not at all, neither at that instant, nor after, because he was so wonderfully transformed: and chaunged from that forme, he was wonte to be: Like one that was old, & gray headed, hauinge a beard leane and weather beaten, re-sembling rather a common personne, then an Erle. And the Ladye seinge that the children woulde not departe from him, but still cryed when they were fetched awaye, shee willed the maister to let them alone. The children

remay-

remayning in this sort, with the honest poore man, the father of Giacchetto, came in the meane time, & vnderstode this of their maister: He ẏ cared not for Gianetta, said. Let them alone with a mischiefe, to keepe companye with beggers, of whom they come. For of the mothers side, they be but verlettes children, & therfore it is no marueile, though they loue their company. The Erle hearing those words, was very sorowfull, notwithstanding (holding downe his head) he suffred that iniurie, as well as he had done manye other. Giacchetto which knew the mirth and toy, that the children made to the poore man (although he was offended with those words) neuertheless, made as much of the poore Erle, as he did before. And when hee sawe him to weepe, he commaũded that if the honest poore man, would dwel there to do some seruice, he should be reteyned. Who aunswered, that he would tarrie there with a good will, but he said that he coulde do nothinge els, but keepe horse, whereunto he was accustomed all the dayes of his life. To whom a horse was appointed to keepe, and dailye when he had dressed his horse, he gaue himselfe to play with ẏ children. Whiles that Fortune thus dealt (according to ẏ maner abouesaid) with the Erle of Angiers and his children, it chaũced that the French king (after many truces made with ẏ Almaynes) died, and in his place was crowned his sonne: whose wife shee was, that caused the Erle to be banished. When the last truce with the Almaynes was expired the warres began to grow more sharpe, for whose aide the king of Englãd sent vnto him (as to his new kinsemã) a greate nomber of people, vnder the gouernement of Perotto his Marshall, and of Giacchetto Lamyens, sonne of his other Marshall, with whom the poore Erle went: and not knowen of any manne, remained a greate while in the Campe, as a seruaunt, where notwithstanding, like a valiaunt man, with his aduise and deedes, he accomplished notable thinges (more then hee was required.) It chaunced

that

that in the time of the warres, the Frenche Queene was very sore sicke, & perceyuing herselfe at the point of death, repenting her of all her sinnes, and was confessed deuoutly to the Archbishop of Roane, who of all men, was reputed an holye, and vertuous man: and amonges all her other sinnes, she tolde him of the great wronge that she had done to the Erle of Angiers: and was not onely contented, to reueale the same to him alone, but also rehearsed the whole matter, before many other personages of great honour: desiring them that they would worke so with the king, that if the Erle were yet liuinge, or anye of his children: they might be restored, to their state againe. Not long after the Queene departed, & was honourablie buried. Which confession reported to the Kinge (after certaine sorowfull sighes, for the iniuries done to the valiaunt man) hee made Proclamation throughout all the Campe, and in many other places, that whosoeuer could bring forth the Erle of Angiers, or any of his children, shoulde for euery of them, receiue a great rewarde, because he was innocente of that matter, for which he was exiled, by the onely confession of the Queene: and that he entended, to exalte him to his former estate, and more higher then euer hee was. Which thing the Erle hearing (being in the habite of a seruaunt) knowing it to be true, by and by he wente to Giacchetto, & prayed him to repaire to Perotto, that they might come together, because he woulde manifest vnto them, the thinge which the kinge sent to seeke for. And when they were all three assembled together in a chamber: the Erle saide to Perotto, that now he thought to let him vnderstand, what he was, saying these woordes: Perotto Giacchetto whoe thou seest here hath espoused thy sister, and neuer had yet any Dowrie. And because she maye not be destitute of her Dowrie, I purpose that he and none other, shall haue the reward, which ỹ king hath promised to be so great. Thou shalt manifest thy selfe Perotto, to be the sonne of the Erle

of

"of Angiers, and Violenta the wife of Giacchetto, to be thy
"sister, and me to be the Erle of Angiers thy father. Perotto
bearing this, and stedfastly beholding him, began to know
him: and weeping, threw himselfe downe at his feete: and
"afterwards imbracing him, said. My deare father, you are
"right hartely welcome. Giacchetto hearing first what the
Erle had saide, and after seinge what Perotto did, he was
incontinently surprised, with so great marueile and ioye,
that he knew not what to do: notwithstandinge, geuinge
credite to his words, as being ashamed of the opprobrious
talke, which he had vsed towards ỳ Erle, as to a seruaũt,
weeping, fell downe at his feete: and humblie asked par-
don, for all his rashe behauiours towards him: which was
curteously graunted vnto him by the Erle, who toke him
vp. And after euerye of them, had a while debated of their
Fortune, and had well bewailed the same, and reioysed one
with another: Perotto and Giacchetto would haue newly
apparrelled the Erle, but he in no wise would suffer them.
And beinge desirous that Giacchetto, mighte haue assu-
raunce of the rewarde promised, he woulde that he shoulde
first present him to the king, after that sort in the habite of
a seruaunte as he was, that hee mighte make him the more
ashamed. Then Giacchetto with the Erle (and Perotto
after) came before the king: and offred to present the Erle
and his children, if it should please him to reward him, ac-
cording to the Proclamation. The king incontinently cau-
sed to be brought forth a reward of marueilous value, (as
Giacchetto thoughte) and commaunded him forthwith to
present the Erle & his children, according to his promise.
Giacchetto then tourned about: and placed before him, the
"Erle his seruaunt, and Perotto, saying. Sir, beholde the
"father and the sonne, the doughter which is my wyfe, is
"not here. But by Gods helpe you shal see her shortly. The
king hearing this, beheldе the Erle: and albeit he was so
greatlye chaunged, from his former fauour, after hee had
well

well viewed him, he knew him, and with teares standinge in his eyes, hee caused the Erle to rise vp, that kneeled before him, kissing and imbrasing him, and very graciously receiued Perotto: & commaunded forthwith that the Erle should be restored to apparell, seruaunt, horses, and furniture, according to his state and degree: which incontinently was done: And moreouer the kinge greatly honoured Giacchetto, and forthwith desired to know, all their Fortunes passed. And when Giacchetto had taken the great reward, for bringing forth the Erle and his children, ỳ Erle said vnto him. Take these royall rewards of the king, my soueraigne Lord: and remember to tel thy father, that thy children, his nephewes and mine, be no beggers borne, of their mothers syde. Giacchetto toke the reward, and caused his wife and his mother in Lawe, to come to Paris, likewise thither came the wife of Perotto, where, with great ioy and triumphe, they taried a certaine space with the Erle, to whom the kinge had rendred all his goodes: and had placed him in greater authoritie, then euer hee was before. Then euery of them toke their leaue, and retourned home to their owne houses: and from that time forth the said Erle, to thende of his life, liued in Paris, in greater honour and authority, then euer he did before.

Giletta

¶ Giletta a Phisitions doughter of Narbon, healed the French King of a Fistula, for reward whereof she demaũded Beltramo Counte of Rosiglione to husband. The Counte being maried against his will, for despite fled to Florence, and loued another. Giletta his wife, by pollicie founde meanes to lye with her husbande, in place of his louer, and was begotten with childe of two sonnes: which knowen to her husband, he receiued her againe, and afterwards he liued in great honour and felicitie.

The xxxviii. Nouell.

IN Fraunce there was a gentleman called Isnardo, the Counte of Rosiglione, who because he was sickely and diseased, kepte alwayes in his house a Phisition, named maister Gerardo of Narbona. This Counte had one onely sonne called Beltramo, a very yonge childe, amiable and fayre. With whom there was nourished and brought vppe, many other children of his age, amonges whom one of the doughters of the said Phisition, named Giletta, who frequently fell in loue with Beltramo, more then was meete for a maiden of her age. This Beltramo when his father was deade, and left vnder the royall custody of the king, was sente to Paris, for whose departure, the maiden was very pensife. A litle while after, her father being likewise deade, shee was desirous to go to Paris, onelye to see the yonge Counte, if for that purpose she could get any good occasion. But being diligẽtly loked vnto by her kinsfolke (because she was riche and fatherlesse) she could see no conuenient waye, for her intended iourney: and being now mariageable, ỳ loue she bare to the Coũte, was neuer out of her remembraũce, and refused manye husbandes, with whom her kinsfolke would

would haue matched her, without making them priuie, to the cause of her refusall. Now it chaunced that she burned more in loue with Beltramo, then euer shee did before, because she hearde tell, that hee was growen to the state of a goodly yong gentlemã. She heard by report, that ỹ Frẽch king had a swelling vpon his breast, which by reason of ill cure, was growen to be a Fistula, which did put him to marueilous paine and griefe, and that there was no Phisition to be found (although many were proued) that could heale it, but rather did impaire the griefe & made it worse and worse. Wherfore the king, like one in dispaire, would take no more counsell or helpe. Wherof the yong mayden was wonderfull glad, thinckinge to haue by this meanes, not onely a lawfull occasion to go to Paris: but if ỹ disease were such (as she supposed) easelye to bringe to passe, that shee might haue the Counte Beltramo to her husbande. Whereuppon with such knowledge, as she had learned at her fathers hands before time, shee made a pouder of certaine herbes, which she thought meete for that disease, and rode to Paris. And the first thing she went about when she came thither, was to see the Counte Beltramo. And then she repayred to the king, praying his grace to vouchsafe to shew her his griefe. The king perceyuing her to be a fayre ponge maiden and a comelie, would not hide it, but opened the same vnto her. So soone as shee saw it, shee put him in comforte, that shee was able to heale him, saying. Sir, if it maye please your grace, I truste in God, without anye greate paine vnto your highnesse, within eighte dayes, to make you whole of this disease. The king hearing her say so, began to mocke her, saying. How is it possible for thee, beinge a yong woman to do that, which the beste renowmed Phisitions in the world can not? Hee thancked her, for her good will, and made her a direct aunsweare, that hee was determined no more, to followe the counsaile of any Phisition. Whereunto the maiden aunsweared: Sir,

cc you dispise my knowledge, because I am ponge, and a wo-
cc man, but I assure you, that I do not minister Phisicke by
cc profession, but by the aide and helpe of God: and with the
cc cunninge of maister Gerardo of Narbona, who was my fa-
cc ther, and a Phisition of great fame, so longe as he liued.
cc The king hearing those words, sayd to himselfe. This wo-
cc man peraduenture, is sente vnto me of God, and therefore,
cc why should I disdaine to proue her cunninge: for so muche
cc as she promiseth to heale me within a litle space, wout any
cc offence or griefe vnto mee. And being determined to proue
cc her, he said. Damosel, if thou doest not heale me, but make
cc me to breake my determinatiõ, what wilt thou shal folow
cc therof. Sir said ỳ maiden: Let me be kept in what guard
cc and keeping you list: and if I do not heale you within these
cc eight dayes, let me be burnt: but if I do heale your grace,
cc what recompence shall I haue then? To whom the kinge
cc aunswered. Because thou art a maiden and vnmaried, if
cc thou heale me according to thy promise, I wil bestow thee
cc vppon some gentleman, that shalbe of right good worship
cc and estimation. To whom she aunswered: Sir I am very
cc well content, ỳ you bestow me in mariage: But I beseech
cc your grace let me haue such a husband, as I my selfe shall
cc demaund: without presumption to any of your children, or
cc other of your bloud. Which request, the king incontinent-
cc ly graunted. The yong maiden began to minister her Phi-
cc sicke, and in short space before her appointed time, she had
cc throughly cured the king. And when the king perceiued
cc himselfe whole, said vnto her. Thou hast well deserued a
cc husbande (Giletta) euen such a one as thy selfe shalt chose.
I haue then my Lord (quoth she) deserued the Countie Bel-
tramo of Rossiglione, whom I haue loued frõ my youth.
The king was very loth to graũt him vnto her: but for ỳ he
had made a promise, which he was loth to breake, he caused
cc him to be called forth, & said vnto him: Sir Coũtie, know-
cc ing full well ỳ you are a gentleman of great honour, oure

pleasure

pleſure is, ꝯ you returne home to your owne houſe, to ordꝛer your eſtate, accordꝛing to your degree: & ꝯ you take wͭ you a Damoſell, which I haue appointed to be your wife. To whom the Countie gaue his humble thanks, & demaũded what ſhe was? It is ſhe (q the king) that wͭ her medecines hath healed me. The Counte knew her wel, & had already ſeen her, although ſhe was faire, yet knowing her not to be of a ſtocke, conuenable to his nobility, ſkornefully ſaid vnto the king, Will you then (ſir) giue me a Phiſition to wife? It is not the pleaſure of God, ꝯ euer I ſhould in ꝯ wiſe beſtow my ſelfe. To whom the king ſaid: Wilt thou then, ꝯ wee ſhould breake our faith, which wee to recouer health, haue giuen to the damoſell, who for a reward aſked thee to huſband? Sir (q Beltramo) you may take from me all ꝯ I haue, and giue my perſon to whõ you pleaſe becauſe I am your ſubiect: but I aſſure you, I ſhal neuer be contented wͭ that mariage. Wel, you ſhall haue her (ſaid the king) for ꝯ maiden is faire and wiſe, & loueth you moſt intirely: thinking verely you ſhal leade a more ioyful life with her, then with a Lady of a greater houſe. The Countie therewithal held his peace: & the kinge made great preparation for the mariage. And when the appointed day was come, ꝯ Coũte in the preſence of ꝯ king (although it were againſt his wil) maried the maiden, who loued him better then her owne ſelfe. Which done the Coũte determining before, what he would do, praied licence to retourne to his coũtrye to conſummat ꝯ mariage. And when he was on horſeback hee went not thither, but toke his iourney into Tuſcane, where vnderſtanding ꝯ the Florentines and Senois were at warres, he determined to take the Florentines parte, and was willingly receiued, and honourablie intertaigned and was made captaine of a certaine nomber of men, continuing in their ſeruice a long time. The new maried gentlewoman, ſcarce contented with his vnkindnes, hoping eby her well doinge to cauſe him to retourue into his countrye, went to

Rosiglione, where she was received of all his subiects, for their Lady. And perceyuing that through the Cõtes absence, all thinges were spoiled and out of order: shee like a sage Ladye, with greate dilligence and care, disposed his thinges in order againe, whereof the subiectes reioysed very much, bearing to her their harty loue & affection, greatly blaming the Counte, because he coulde not content himselfe with her. This notable gentlewoman, hauing restored all the countrie againe to their auncient liberties, sent word to the Counte her husband, by two knights, to signifie vnto him, that if it were for her sake, that hee had abandoned his countrie, vppon retourne of aunsweare, she to do him pleasure, would departe from thence. To whom he churlishly replyed. Let her do what she liste. For I so purpose to dwell with her, when she shall haue this ring (meaning a ring which he wore) vpon her finger, and a sonne in her armes begotten by mee. He greatly loued that ring, and kepte it very carefully, and neuer toke it from his finger, for a certaine vertue that he knew it had. The knights hearinge the harde condition, of two thinges impossible: and seinge that by them he could not be remoued from his determination, retourned againe to the Lady, tellinge her his aunsweare: who very sorowfull, after shee had a good while bethoughte her, purposed to finde meanes, to attaine the two thinges, that thereby she might recouer her husbande. And hauinge aduised her selfe what to doe, shee assembled the noblest and chiefeste of her Countrie, declaring vnto them in lamentable wyse, what shee had alreadye done, to winne the loue of the Counte, shewinge them also what folowed thereof. And in the ende saide vnto theim, that shee was lothe the Counte for her sake, should dwell in perpetuall exile: therefore shee determined, to spende the reste of her time in Pilgrimages and deuotion, for preseruation of her Soule, prayinge theim to take the charge and gouernemente of the Countrie, and

trie, and that they would let the Counte vnderstande, that shee had forsaken his house, and was remoued farre from thence: w purpose neuer to returne to Rosiglione againe. Many teares were shed by the people, as she was speaking those wordes, & diuers supplications were made vnto him to alter his opinion, but all in vaine. Wherefore commēding them all vnto God, she toke her way, with her maide, and one of her kinsemen, in the habite of a pilgrime, well furnished with siluer and precious Iewels: telling no man whither shee wente, and neuer rested, till shee came to Florence: where arriuinge by Fortune, at a poore widowes house, shee contented her selfe, with the state of a poore pilgrime, desirous to heare newes of her Lord, whom by fortune she sawe the next day, palling by the house (where she lay) on horsebacke with his company. And although shee knewe him well enoughe, yet shee demaunded of the good wife of the house what hee was: who aunswered that hee was a straūge gentleman, called the Counte Beltramo of Rosiglione, a curteous knight, and wel beloued in ỹ City, and that he was marueilously in loue with a neighbour of hers, that was a gentlewoman, verye poore and of small substance, neuertheless of right honest life & good report, and by reason of her pouerty, was yet vnmaried, & dwelte with her mother, that was a wise and honest Ladye. The Countesse well noting these wordes, and by litle & litle debating euery particular point thereof, comprehending the effecte of those newes, concluded what to do, and when she had well vnderstanded, which was the house, and the name of the Ladye, and of her doughter, that was beloued of the Counte: vppon a day repaired to the house secretely, in the habite of a pilgrime, where finding ỹ mother and doughter, in poore estate amonges their familie, after she had saluted them, told the mother, that shee had to saye vnto her. The gentlewoman rysing vp, curteously intertayned her, and being entred alone in a chamber, they sate downe, and

"the Countesse began to speake vnto her in this wise. Ma-
"dame, me thincke that ye be one, vpon whom Fortune doth
"frowne, so wel as vpon me: but if you please, you may both
"comfort me, & your selfe. The Lady answered, that there
"was nothing in the world, wherof she was more desirous,
"then of honest comfort. The Countesse proceeding in her
"talke, said vnto her. I haue neede now of your fidelitie and
"truste, whereuppon if I do staye, and you deceiue mee, you
shall both vndoe me, and your selfe. Tell me then what it is hardlie (said the gentlewoman:) for you shall neuer bee deceiued of mee. Then the Countesse beganne to recite her whole estate of loue: tellinge her what she was, and what had chaunced to that present daye, in such perfite order as the gentlewoman beleeuinge her, because shee had partly heard report before, began to haue compassion vppon her, and after that the Countesse had rehearsed the whole cir-
"cumstaunce, she continued her purpose, saying. Now you
"haue heard amonges other my troubles, what two things
"they bee, which behoueth mee to haue, if I doe recouer my
"husband, which I know none can helpe me to obtaine, but
"onelye you, if it be true that I heare, which is, that the
"Counte my husband, is farre in loue with your doughter.
"To whom ꝑ gentlewoman sayd. Madame, if the Counte
"loue my doughter, I knowe not, albeit the likelyhoode is
"greate: but what am I able to doe, in that which you de-
"sire? Madame, aunsweared the Countesse, I will tell you:
"but first I will declare what I meane to doe for you, if my
"purpose be brought to effecte, I see your faire doughter of
"good age, readie to marie, but as I vnderstande the cause,
"why shee is vnmaried, is the lacke of substance to bestowe
"her. Wherfore I purpose, for recompence of the pleasure,
"which you shall doe for mee, to giue so much readie money
"to marie her honourablie, as you shall thincke sufficient.
The Countesse offer was very well liked of the Ladie, because she was poore: yet hauing a noble hart, she said vnto her,

ber. Madame, tell me wherein I may do you seruice: and if it be a thinge honest, I will gladlye performe it, and the same being brought to passe, do as it shall please you. Thē said the Countesse, I thincke it requisite, that by some one whom you truste, you giue knowledge to the Counte my husband, that your doughter is, and shalbe at his commaūdement. And to the intent she may be well assured, that hee loueth her in deede aboue anye other, she must praye him to sende her a ring that hee weareth vppon his finger, which ring as she knoweth, he loueth very dearely. And when he sendeth the ring, you shal giue it vnto me, and afterwards sende him woorde, that your doughter is readie to accomplishe his pleasure, and then you shall cause him secretelye to come hither, & place me by him (in steede of your doughter) peraduenture God will giue me the grace, that I may be with child, and so hauing this ring on my finger, and the childe in mine armes begotten by him, I maye recouer him, and by your meanes continue with him, as a wife ought to do with her husbande. This thinge seemed difficulte vnto the Gentlewoman: fearing that there would folowe reproche vnto her doughter. Notwithstandinge, considering what an honest part it were, to be a meane, that the good Ladie might recouer her husbande, and that shee mighte doe it for a good purpose, hauinge affiaunce in her honest affection, not onely promised the Coūtesse, to bring this to passe: but in fewe dayes with greate subtiltie, folowing the order wherein she was instructed, she had gottē the ringe, although it was with the Countes ill will, and toke order that the Countesse in steede of her doughter did lye with him. And at the first meeting, so effectuously desired by the Counte: God so disposed the matter that the Countesse was begottē with child, of two goodly sonnes. and her deliuery chaunced at the due time. Whereuppon ỹ gentlewoman, not onelye contented the Countesse at that time, with the companye of her husbande, but at manye

other times so secretly, as it was neuer knowen: ꝯ Counte not thinkinge that he had lien with his wife, but with her whom he loued. To whom at his vprising in the morning, he vsed many curteous and amiable woords, and gaue diuers faire and precious Iewels, which the Countesse kept most carefully: and when she perceiued herselfe with child, she determined no more to trouble the gentlewoman, but said vnto her. Madame, thanckes be to God and you, I haue the thing that I desire, ꝯ euen so it is time, to recompence your desert, that afterwards I may depart. The gẽtlewoman said vnto her, that if she had done anye pleasure agreeable to her minde, she was right glad thereof, which she did, not for hope of reward: but because it appertayned to her by well doing so to doe. Whereunto the Countesse
" said, your sayinge pleaseth me well, and for my part, I doe
" not purpose to giue vnto you, the thing you shal demaunde
" in reward, but for consideration of your well doing, which
" dutie forceth me to do. The gentlewoman then constrained with necessity, demaunded of her with great bashfulnesse, an hundred pounds to marie her daughter. The Countesse perceiuinge the shamefastnesse of the gentlewoman, and her curteous demaunde, gaue her fiue hundred pounds, and so many faire and costly Iewels, as almost amoũted to like valour. For which the gentlewoman more then contented, gaue most harty thankes to the Countesse, who departed from the gentlewoman, ꝯ retourned to her lodging. The gentlewomã to take occasion from the Counte, of anye farther repaire, or sendinge to her house, toke her doughter with her, and went into the country to her frẽds. The Counte Beltramo, within fewe dayes after, being reuoked home to his owne house by his subiectes, (hearinge that the Countesse was departed from thence) retourned. The Countesse knowinge that her husbande was goone from Florence and retourned home, was verye gladde,

continuing in Florence, till the time of her childbedde, being brought a bedde of twoo sonnes, whiche were very like vnto their father, and caused them carefully to be noursed and brought vp, and when she sawe time, she toke her iourney (vnknowen to anie) and arriued at Monpellier, and resting her selfe there for certayne dayes, hearing newes of the Counte, and where he was, and that vpon the daye of al Sainctes, he purposed to make a great feaste, & assembly of Ladies & Knightes, in her pilgrimes weede she repaired thither. And knowing ỳ they were all assembled, at the palace of the Counte, readie to sitte downe at the table, shee passed through the people, without chaunge of apparell, with her twoo sonnes in her armes. And when shee was come vp into the hall, euen to the place where the Counte sat, falling downe prostrate at his feete, weeping saying vnto hym: My Lorde, I am thy poore infortunate wyfe, » who, to thintent thou mightest retourne and dwel in thine » owne house, haue bene a great whyle begging aboute the » worlde. Therefore I nowe beseche thee, for the honoure of » God, that thou wilt obserue the conditions, which the twoo » (knightes that I sent vnto thee) did commaunde me to doe: » for beholde, here in myne armes, not onely one sonne be- » gotten by thee, but twayne, and likwyse thy Ryng. It is » nowe time then (if thou kepe promise) that I should be re- » ceiued as thy wyfe. The Counte hearing this, was greatly » astonned, and knewe the Ryng, and the children also, they were so like hym. But tell me (quod he) howe is this come to passe? The Countesse to the great admiration of the Counte, and of all those that were in presence, rehersed vnto them in order all that, whiche had bene done, and the whole discourse thereof. For which cause the Counte knowing the thinges she had spoken, to be true (and perceiuing her constant minde, and good witte, and the twoo faire young boyes to kepe his promise made, and to please his subiectes, & the Ladies that made sute vnto him, to accept

her,

her from that tyme forth, as his lawefull wyfe, and to honour her) abiected his obstinate rigour: causing her to rise vp, and imbraced and kissed her, acknowledging her againe for his lawefull wyfe. And after he had apparelled her, according to her estate, to the great pleasure and contentation of those that were there, & of al his other frendes not onely that daye, but many others, he kept great chere, and from that time forth, hee loued and honoured her, as his dere spouse and wyfe.

¶ Tancredi Prince of Salerne, caused his doughters louer to be slayne, and sent his harte vnto her, in a cup of golde: vvhiche afterwardes she put into poysoned water, and drinking thereof died.

The. xxxix. Nouell.



Ancredi Prince of Salerne, (an vniuersitie in the region of Italie) was a curteous Lorde, and of gentle nature: had he not in his age, imbrued his handes, with the bloud of his owne doughter. It chaunced that this prince in al his life time, had but ỳ doughter: but more happie had he ben, if she had neuer ben borne. That doughter he loued so well, as a father might loue his childe: & for the tender loue he bare her, he was not able to suffer her to be out of his sight. And could not finde in his harte to marie her, although she had many yeres passed the time, that she was mariageable: notwithstanding, in thende he gaue her to wife, to one of the sonnes of ỳ Duke of Capua, with whom she continued no long time, but was a widowe, and then retourned vnto her fathers house againe. This Ladie was very faire & comely of bodie and face, as any creature could be, yonge, lustie, and more wise, peraduenture, then a

woman

woman ought to be. And thus dwelling with her louing father, she liued like a noble Ladie, in great pleasure: And seing that her father, for the loue he bare vnto her, had no mynde or care to marie her agayne, and also she thinking it skarce honest to require him thereunto, deuised secretly (if it were possible) to retaine some valiaunt man to be her louer. And seyng manye gentlemen and others, frequenting her fathers courte (as we cõmonly see, in the courtes of Princes) and marking the behauiour and order of many (amonges all) there was a young man, one of her fathers seruauntes, that liked her well, whose name was Guiscardo, of very base birth (but in vertue and honest condicions, more noble then the reste) and many times when she sawe him, she wonderfully delited in him, alwayes prayling his doinges aboue all others. The younge man, not hauing good consideration of him selfe, perceiuing her feruent affection: so fixed his minde that he disposed the same vpon nothing els but to loue her. One louing an other secretly in this sorte, and the Ladie verie studious to finde occasion, that she might talke with him, vnwilling to committe the secrecie of her loue, to any man: she imagined a newe deuise to geue him knowledge thereof. And wrote a letter, signifying vnto him, what he should doe the next day, & howe he might vse himself, to come to talke with her, & then putting the letter into ỹ cane of a rede, she gaue it vnto Guiscardo, in sporting wise & said. Thou shalt this night, make a paire of Bellowes for thy seruaũt, wherwith she may kindle the fire. Guiscardo toke it, & thought that shee did not geue it vnto him, without some special purpose, went to his chamber, and loking vpon the Cane, perceiued it to be hollowe, and openyng it, founde the letter within, whiche shee had written. And when he had well perused it, vnderstandyng the tenour thereof, hee thought hym selfe the happiest man in the worlde, and began to put hym selfe in readinesse, to mete with his Ladie, by suche wayes and meanes, as shee had to

had to him appointed. There was in a corner of the Princes palace a Caue, long time before made, vnder the syde of a hille, whiche Caue receiued light by certayne ventes made of force within the sayd mountaine, and because the same was not frequented and vsed, it was ouergrowen with bushes and thornes. Into which Caue was a diseēt, by a secrete payre of stayers, into one of the lowest chambers of the Palaice, wherin the ladie lay, which was out of all mens minde, because it was not occupied, many a day before and shut vp, with a very strong doore. But Loue (in the eyes wherof, nothing is so secrete, but will come to knoweledge) had brought the same againe, into the remembraunce of the amorous Lady. The opening of which doore (that no man might knowe it) many dayes did trouble her wittes: afterwarde when she had founde the waye, she went downe alone into the Caue, & viewing the vente, whereunto she had geuen order for Guiscardo to come, she tolde him of what height it was from the ground. For the execution whereof, Guiscardo prepared a rope with knots and degrees, to goe vp and downe, and putting vpon him a leather coate, to kepe him from the thornes and bushes, went downe the next night at the saide vente, vnknowen of any man: and fastening one of the endes of the rope, to the stocke of a tree, that grewe at the mouth of the vente, hee slipte downe into the Caue, and taried there for the Ladie, who the nexte daye fayning her selfe to slepe after dinner, sent her maydes out of her chamber, and locked her selfe within alone: and then opened the doore, and went downe into the Caue, where finding Guiscardo, they marueilously reioyced one with an other. And from thence went vp together into her chamber: where they remained togethers, the moste parte of that day, to their great delight. And hauing geuen good order, for the affaires of their loue, & the secrete vse therof, Guiscardo retourned into the Caue, and the Ladie locked the doore, and came out amonges her

maides.

maides. The nert night after, Guiscardo issued out of the vente vpon the rope, wherewith he descended, and conueied him selfe into his chamber. And hauing learned the waye, he resorted thither many times after. But Fortune enuious of that pleasure, so long and great, with dolorous successe, tourned the ioye of those twoo louers, into heauie and sorowefull ende. The Prince accustomed sometimes, to resorte alone into his doughters chamber, and there for a whyle to tarie and talke with her, and so to departe. Upon a daye after dinner, when the Ladie (whose name was Gismonda) was in the garden withall her maidens, he repaired vnknowen or seene of any man into her chamber. But being loth to trouble his doughter of her pleasure, & finding the wyndowes of her chamber shut and the curtēs of her bedde drawen, he satte down vpon a stoole at the bedes feete, and leaning his head to the bedde, the Curteine drawen ouer him (as he had bene hidden of purpose) he fel a slepe. And the king being thus a slepe, Gismonda that (in euill time) the same day had appointed Guiscardo to come, left her maydens in the Gardeine, and entred very secretly into her chamber, locking fast the dooze after her. And not knowing any man to be there, shee opened the dooze of the Caue to Guiscardo, who was redie to wayte for her comming. Then they caste them selues vpon the bedde, as they were wonte to doe, solacing the time together, vntill it chaunced that the Prince awaked, heard and sawe, what Guiscardo and his doughter did. Whereof being verie sorowfull, he would vpon the first sight haue cried out: but that he thought it better, for that time to holde his peace, still to kepe him selfe secrete, to the intent that he might more priuelie, and with lesse shame accomplishe that, which he purposed to do. The twoo louers continued togethers a great time, as they were wont to do, without any knowe-ledge of the Prince his being there, & when they saw time, they went downe from the bedde: and Guiscardo retour-

ning to

ning to the Caue, shee went foorthe of her chamber, fro whence Tancredi (as olde as he was) conueyed him selfe into the Gardeine, out at a wyndowe of the same, vnseen, and not perceiued of any. Who like a pensife mã, and carefull euen vnto death, repaired to his owne chamber, and the next night, about one of the clocke, he caused Guiscardo to be apprehended, by an order that he had prescribed, at his comming forth of the Caue, euen clothed as he was, with his leather coate: and by twoo men was secretly cõueyed to the Prince. Who so sone as he sawe him, sayd vnto him with teares, standing in his eies. Guiscardo, the beneuolence and goodnes towardes thee, haue not merited this outrage and shame, that thou hast cõmitted this daye, in mine owne house, which I sawe with mine owne eyes. To whom Guiscardo gaue no other aunswere, but that Loue was of greater force, then either any Prince, or hym selfe. Then the Prince cõmaunded him to be kept, in a chãber adioyning. The next day the king (Gismonda being ignoraunt hereof) reuolued in his minde, diuers and sundrye matters, and after diner as he was accustomed, he wente into his doughters chamber, and caused her to be called vnto him, & shutting the chamber dooze, in lamentable speche sayd vnto her. Gismonda, I had so much affiaunce & truste, in thy vertue and honestie, that it coulde neuer haue entred into my mynde (although he it had bene tolde me, if I had not sene it with mine owne proper eyes) but that thou haddest not onely in deede, but also in thoughte, abandoned the companie of all men, except it had bene thy husbande: whereof I shalbe right pensife and sorowefull so longe as this litle remnaunt of life (that mine olde age doth preserue) indureth in mee. And sithe thou couldest not conteyne from suche dishoneste loue, I woulde it had pleased God, that thou haddest taken a manne, equall to thyne estate. But amonges so many that do frequente my court, thou hast chosen this young man Guiscardo, whose birthe

is very

is very vile and base, and brought vp (as it were for Gods sake) from a childe, to this present daye, in our Court. For whiche consideration, I am verie sore disquieted, not knowing how to take this at thy handes. For with him (whom I haue caused to be taken this nighte, in going out of the Caue, and nowe kepte as prisoner) I haue already concluded, what to do. But with thee what I shal do, God knoweth. Of the one side, the loue that I still beare thee, more then any father euer bare to his doughter, doth drawe me, on the other side, a iust displeasure and indignation, taken for thy great follie, doth moue me. The one mocion would that I should pardon thee, the other forceth me against my nature, to be cruell vnto thee. Notwithstanding, before I doe make any certaine resolucion, I desire to heare, what thou canst saye for thy selfe. When hee had spoken those woordes, he kissed her face, weping verie bitterly like a childe, that had ben beaten. Gismonda hearing her father, and knowing that not only her secret loue was discouered, but also her louer Guiscardo to be in prison, conceiued an inestimable sorowe, vttering the same many times, with outeries and schreches, according to the maner of women, howe beit, her great courage surpassed her weakenesse, & did sette a bolde face on the matter, with marueilous stoutnesse determining, before she made any sute for her selfe, no longer to liue, seing that her frende Guiscardo was alreadie dead. Wherefore, not like a sorowefull woman, or one taken in any faulte, but as a desperate persone, with a drie & stoute countenaunce, not troubled or vexed, she said thus to her father. I doe not purpose deare father, to stande in deniall, nor yet by humble sute to make requeste. For the one wyll nothyng auayle mee, and the other is to none effecte. Moreouer I doe not intende by any meanes, to beseche your clemencie and loue towardes mee, to be benuolente and bountifull, but confessinge the trouthe, I will first with true reasons and argumentes, defende myne honour,

"nour, and afterwardes prosecute in vertuous wyse, by ef-
"fectes, the stoutnesse of my courage. True it is, that I haue
"loued, and do loue Guiscardo, and will loue him so long as
"I liue, which shalbe but a litle time. And if so be that a wo-
"man may loue a man, after death, I will not cease to loue
"him. But womanly frailtie and feminine weakenesse, hath
"not so much induced me hereūto, as the litle care you haue
"had, to bestow me in mariage, and the great vertues, that
"daily I haue seene in Guiscardo. You ought deare father
"to knowe, that your selfe is of flesh, and of flesh you haue
"engendred me your doughter, and not of Stone or Iron.
"In likewyse you ought, and must remēber (although now
"you be arriued to olde yeares) what ponge folkes bee, and
"of what great power, the lawe of youth is. And although
"you were (during the force of your youthlie dayes) trayned
"and exercised in factes of armes, yet nowe you oughte to
"knowe, what great puissaunce resteth in the idle and deli-
"cate life, as well in the aged, as amonges ponge people. I
"am then as you be, begotten of flesh, and my yeres so few,
"as yet but ponge, and thereby full of lust & delight. Wher-
"unto the knowledge, which I haue had alredy in mariage,
"forceth me to accōplishe that desire: and to the same be ad-
"ded marueilous forces, against whiche it is impossible for
"me to resiste, but rather to folowe, whereunto they drawe
"me. I am become amorous, like a ponge woman, and like a
"woman as I am, and certainly I would haue imploied my
"whole force that waye, so farre as I could not to committe
"any shame to you, or to my selfe in that, whereunto my na-
"turall offence hath forced me. To which thing, pitiful loue,
"and gentle fortune haue founde out, and shewed a waye se-
"cret enough, whereby without knowledge of any man, I
"am come to the effecte of my desires: whiche thing I will
"not denie (who so euer tolde you of it, or by what meanes
"so euer you are come to the knowledge of it) I haue not ta-
"ken Guiscardo to be my louer by chaunce, as many womē

haue

haue done, but I haue chosen him by long aduise and deli- »
beration, aboue all others, and haue brought him into me »
in this wise, inioying with our wise continuaunce of longe »
time, the accomplishment of my desire, wherof me thincke »
(althoughe I haue not offended but by loue) that you doe »
purpose to prosecute rather the vulgar opinion, then the »
truth, purposinge in this wise moste bitterly to comptroll »
me, saying, that you had not had such an occasion of anger, »
if I had chosen one that had been a gentleman. Wherein »
you do not consider, that the faulte is not mine, but rather »
to be ascribed to fortune who ought to be blamed, because »
many times shee exalteth the vnworthie, & treadeth vnder »
foote, those that be moste worthie: but nowe let vs leaue of »
further talke of this matter, and consider the beginninge »
hereof. First of all you see, that of one masse of flesh, we »
haue all receiued flesh, and that one Creatour, hath created »
euery lyuing creature, with force and puissaunce equally, & »
wyth equall vertue: which vertue was the first occasion ẏ »
made the difference, and distinction of vs all, ẏ were borne, »
and be borne equall, and they that obtayned the greateste »
part of vertue, & did the workes of her, were called noble, »
the rest continuing vnnoble. And albeit cõtrary vse, after- »
wards obscured this Law: yet therefore, shee is not remo- »
ued ne abandoned from nature, or good maners. In like- »
wise, hee that by vertue performeth all his doinges, doth »
manifestlie shewe himselfe to be noble. And he that doth o- »
therwise terme him, doth commit the faulte, & not he that »
is so called. Behold all your gentlemen, and examine well »
their vertue, their conditions and maner of doinges. On »
the other part, behold the qualities and conditiõs of Guis- »
cardo, then if you please to giue iudgement wythout affec- »
tion, you shall say that he is righte noble: and that all your »
gentlemen be villaines in respecte of him. The vertuous & »
excellencie of whom, I beleeue cannot be placed in any o- »
ther wight, as in hym, aswell by your owne report as by ẏ »

cc choyse of mine owne eyes. Who euer praysed man so, and
cc with such ample commendacions praise worthie, wherein
cc an honest man ought to be praised, as you haue done? And
cc truly not without cause. For if mine eyes be not deceiued,
cc you neuer gaue hym anye praise, but that I haue knowen
cc more in him, then your wordes were able to expresse. Not-
cc withstanding, if I haue bin deceiued herein, it was you, by
cc whom I haue bin deceiued: wil you then say that I couple
cc my selfe, with a man of base condition? Truly you cannot
cc well say so. But if you will saye, perchaunce with a poore
cc man, I confesse it. And verely it is to your shame, that you
cc haue not vouchsafed to place in highe estate a man so ho-
cc nest, being your owne seruaunt. Neuertheless, pouertie
cc doth not deprive anye parte of nobilitie, but riches hath.
cc Many kinges and greate Princes, haue bin poore in olde
cc time, and manye ploughmen and sheepeheardes in times
cc past, haue bin aduaunced to riche estate. And the last doubt
cc which troubleth you, is, that you be doubtfull, what to doe
cc with me: caste boldly out of your minde that doubte, and if
cc you do intend in the extremity of your age, to vse that, which
cc in your youth you neuer did, I purpose to become cruel al-
cc so. Use your cruelty against me, for the auoyding where-
cc of, I haue not determined to make any supplicatiõ to you,
cc as giltie of this fault if faultes may be rehearsed. Assuring
cc you, that if you do not vnto me, that which you haue done,
cc or will doe to Guiscardo, mine owne handes shall doe it.
cc Wherefore goe to, and let fall your teares with women,
cc and if you purpose to be cruell, kill him and let mee also
cc drincke of the same Cuppe, if you thincke wee haue deser-
ued it. The king hearing the stout words of his doughter:
thoughte not that shee woulde haue done in deede, as her
wordes pretended, and as she said she would doe. Where-
fore departing from her, and not willing to vse any maner
of crueltie towardes her, hee thoughte by the destruction
& slaughter of Guiscardo, to coole her burning loue. And

there-

therefore commaunded two of his seruauntes (that had Guiscardo in keeping) without any noise, to strangle him the next nighte, and afterwardes plucking his harte out of his bodie, to bringe it vnto him: who did as they were commaunded. And the next day, the king caused a faire Cuppe of gold to be broughte vnto him, wherein he laid the harte of Guiscardo, which he sent (by one of his trustiest seruaũtes) vnto his doughter: and commaunded him, when hee presented the same vnto her to say these wordes. Thy father hath sent thee this presente, to comforte thy selfe with the thing, which thou doest chiefly loue, as thou haste comforted him of that, which he loued most. Gismonda not amoued from her cruel determination, caused to be brought vnto her (after her father was gone) venemous herbes and rootes, which she distilled together, and made water therof to drincke sodenly, if that came to passe, which she doubted. And when the kinges seruaunte, was come vnto her, and had deliuered his presente, he said as he was commaũded. Gismonda toke the Cuppe with stoute countenaunce, and couering it, so soone as she sawe the harte, and vnderstoode the woordes, shee thoughte verelye, that it was the hart of Guiscardo, wherefore beholding the seruaunt, she saide vnto him: Trulye it behaueth that such a hart as this is, shoulde be intombed in no worse graue, then in golde, which my father hath most wisely done. Afterwards lifting the Cuppe to her mouth, she kissed it saying, I haue in all thinges, euen vnto this time (being the last ende of my life) alwayes found the tender loue of my father towards mee: but nowe I knowe it to be greater, then euer I did before. And therefore in my behalfe, you shall render vnto him, the laste thanckes that euer I shall giue him, for so great a presente. After those woordes, tourning herselfe towardes the Cuppe, which shee helde faste, beholdinge the hart, shee said thus. Oh sweete harborroughe of my pleasures, cursed be the crueltye of him, that hath caused mee

cc at this time to loke vppon thee, with the eyes of my face: it
cc was pleasure ynoughe, to see thee euery howre, amonges
cc people of knowledge and vnderstãding. Thou hast finished
cc thy course, and by that ende, which Fortune vouchsaked to
cc giue thee thou art dispatched, and arriued to ẏ ende, wher-
cc unto all men haue recourse: thou hast forsaken the miseries
cc and traueyles of this world, & haste had by the enemy him-
cc selfe, such a sepulture as thy worthinesse deserueth. There
cc needeth nothing els to accomplishe thy funerall, but onely
cc the teares of her, whom thou diddest hartelye loue, all the
cc dayes of thy lyfe. For hauing wherof, our Lord did put in-
cc to the head of my vnmercifull father to send thee vnto me,
cc and truly I will bestow some teares vppon thee: although
cc I was determined to die, without sheading any teares at
cc all, stoutlie, not fearefull of any thinge. And when I haue
cc powred thẽ out for thee, I will cause my soule, which thou
cc hast heretofore so carefully kepte, to be ioyned wyth thine.
cc For, in what company can I trauell, more contented, or in
cc better safegard in places vnknowen, then with thy soule?
cc Truly I am well assured, that it is yet here within: ẏ hath
cc respecte to the place, aswell of his owne pleasures, as of
cc mine, being assured (as she who is certaine, that yet he loo-
cc ueth me) that he attendeth for myne, of whom he is great-
ly beloued. When she had thus sayd, she beganne to let fall (as thoughe there had been a fountaine in her head) so many teares, as it was a myracle to beholde her, oftentimes killing the dead harte. Her maydens that stoode aboute her, knewe not what hart that was, nor whereunto those woords did tende: but beinge moued with compassion, they all wepte: pitifullie demaundinge (althoughe in vayne) the occasion of her sorowfull plaintes: and comforted her so well as they could. Who after she had powred forth sufficient teares, lifted vppe her heade: and when
cc she had wiped her eyes, she sayd. Oh louing hart, all my
cc dutie is fulfilled towardes thee, hauinge nowe nothinge

to doe, but onely to yelde foorth my ghoste, to accompany »
thyne And this sayd, she caused the glasse of water, which »
she had made the daye before, to be brought vnto her: and
poured it out into the cuppe where the hart laye, all bained
with a multitude of teares: whiche shee putting to her
mouthe, without feare, dronke vp all. And that done, went
into her bedde, with the cuppe in her hand, tolling her bo-
die, as decently as she could vppon the same, holding the
harte of her dead frende, so nere as shee coulde, vnto her
owne. Her maidens seing this (although they knewe not
what water it was, ỳ she dranke) sent worde to the king,
who fearing that whiche happened, incontinentlye wente
downe into his doughters chamber: where he arriued euen
at that instante, that she had cast her selfe vpon the bedde,
and being come to late to succour her, with swete woordes
he began (seing her in those pangues) to wepe bitterly. To
whome his doughter sayde: Father, kepe in those vndesi- »
red teares and bestowe them not vpon me, for I desire thē »
not: who euer sawe man beside you, to bewayle the wilful- »
nesse of his owne facte. Howe be it, if there do yet reste in »
you any sparke of that loue, which you haue alwayes borne »
towardes me: graunt me this last requeste, that although »
you were not contented, that I should liue secretly and co- »
uertly with Guiscardo, yet at lest, cause our bodies to bee »
openly buried togethers, where it pleaseth you to bestowe »
them. The anguishe & sorowe, would not suffer the Prince
to aunswere one woorde for weping. And the Ladie perceiu-
ing her ende approche, cieped and strained the dead hart,
harde to her stomacke, saying. Farewell sweete harte in
God, for I am going to him. And therewithall she closed
her eyes, and lost her senses, departing out of this dolorous
life. In this maner sorowefully ended the loue of Gismon-
da and Guiscardo, as you haue hearde, whome the Prince
after he had wepte his fill, and taken to late repentaunce
for his crueltie: caused honorablie to be buried, and intom-

bed both in one graue, not without great sorowe of all the people of Salerne.

¶ Mahomet one of the Turkishe Emperours, executeth curssed crueltie vpon a Greeke maiden, whome hee tooke prisoner, at the wynning of Constantinople.

The xl. Nouell.

IF you doe euer make any proofe of trial, to knowe of what trampe the Arrowes of Loue be, and what fruite they bynge to them, that doe vse and practise them: I am assured you shall be touched with some pitie, when ye vnderstãde the beastlie crueltie of an Infidell louer, towards his Ladie. He of whome I wyll declare the history, is Mahomet, not the false Prophete, but the great graundfather of Soliman Otiman, Emperoure of the Turkes, whiche raigned at that tyme. He it is, that to the shame and eternall infamie, of all Christian Princes of his tyme, did wynne Constantinople, and tooke awaye the Easte Empire from Constantine, a Christian Emperour, the yeare of our Lord 1453. Mahomet then hauing obteined so great victorie at Constantinople: amonges the spoyle of that riche Citie, there was founde a Greeke mayden, of suche rare and excellent beautie, as she allured the eyes of euery wight, to wonder and beholde her, as a thing miraculous, whose name was Hyerenee, of the age of sirtene or seuentene yeares. Whome a Capitaine to gratifie his Lorde, did presente: a Jewell (as hee thought) moste acceptable to him, aboue all thinges of the worlde. The Emperour Mahomet, young and wanton beyonde measure, after he had caste his eye vpon the mayden, and had grauen her beautie in his harte, gaue a straighte charge, that shee shoulde bee

kept for

kept for hym, hoping after the tumulte of the warre was ended, to bestowe conuenient tyme vpon her. The retracte sounded, and the affaires of the Empire, reduced to sure estate, remembring him selfe of the beautie of Hyerenee, whiche had made a breache and entrie into his harte, commaunded that shee should be brought forth vnto him, and hauing viewed her at his pleasure, he felte him selfe so surprised with that newe flame, that hee conceiued none other delight, but to playe and dallie with her, in suche sorte, as his spirites being in Loues full possession, Loue dealt with hym so cruellie, as he coulde take no reste daye nor night. Who yelded him selfe suche a praie, to his darling Hyerenee, that he felte none other contentation in his mynde, but that whiche he receiued of her. And this amorous passion indured, the space of three continuall yeares, taking suche vigor and increase by litle and litle, that he began to forget that, whiche appertained to the ornament and honour of his Empire, leauing the whole administration of publique causes to his Baschats, be him selfe being so negligent, as he reposed in them, all matters concerning the state of the Empire. During this disorder, the vulgar people began secretly to grudge, as well for the confusion and disorder of the Empire, as for the il gouernment of ỹ same (and specially, because ỹ Baschats corrupted with auarice imployed them selues to their particuler profite, and to inriche them selues, with the spoile of the people). The Ianissaries on the other side, a warlike people, and brought vp in continuall exercise of armes, began with open voyce, to detracte and slaunder their Lorde, commonlie complaining, howe hee consumed his life, like an effeminate persone, without inferring or doyng anye profite to the Empire. To bee shorte, the matter came to suche desolation, as it might rather haue bene called a sedition, then a murmure: and yet there was none so hardie, as durst attempte, to declare the same to the Emperour, knowing hym to be of nature

terrible, cruell, and rigorous, that with a woorde woulde put him to death, that went about to withdrawe him from his desire. Therewithall he was so dronke with the beautie of the Greeke, that the lesse matter, wherewith they might geue occasion, to withdrawe him from his negligēt life, was enough to driue him into rage & furie. This poore Emperour was so bewitched, as not onely hee consumed, dayes and nightes with her, but he burned with continual Ielousie, whose beautie was so liuelie painted, in the inward partes of his hart and minde, that he remained thus ouerwhelmed in beastly pleasure, euery man in particuler, and all in generall, conspired against him, with one determinate minde, to yelde no more obedience vnto him in time to come, and purposed to chose some Emperour, that were more marciall and warlike, through whose succour and counsaile, they might not onely conserue the thinges gotten, but also amplifie the boūdes, and limites of their Empire. Mustapha which was brought vp with ỹ Emperour, a gentle personage, franke of talke, and so nere to his maiestie, that he might go into his chāber, although ỹ Greeke was present: when he perceiued conuenient time, suche as he desired to haue, repaired to the Emperour vpon a daye, who liking well his deuises, walked with him alone in his Gardeine, to whom after he had made great reuerence, according to their custome, he sayde. My soueraigne lord and
" maister, if I might speake freely, without seruile feare,
" whiche staieth mee, or if the terrour of your displeasure
" might not abash me, I would willingly declare vnto your
" maiestie, that which concerneth not onely your securitie &
" saulfegarde, but (which is more) the saulfetie of your whole
" Empire. Whom Mahomet aunswered with merie countenance in these wordes. Cast away such colde feare as staieth thee, and speake hardly thy minde. Shewe me what it
" is that toucheth me. I doubt, and it shall please your ma-
" iestie, leste I shall seeme ouer presumptuous, and rashe,

if I

If I discouer the secretes of my hart, but our auncient edu- »
cation, the dutie of my conscience, with the experience, that »
you haue alwayes had of my fidelitie, haue so much forced »
mee, as being no longer able to rule my selfe, (I am con- »
strained, by what vertuous prouocatiõ I know not) to ma- »
nifest thinges vnto you, that both time and necessitye, will »
make you to thincke them good and necessarie: Althoughe »
(it may so be) that now your eyes be so bounde vppe, in the »
vaile of your disordinate affection, that you cannot digeste, »
or take the same in good part. The life (my Lorde) which »
you haue ledde, sithens the taking of Constantinople, and »
the excessiue pleasures, wherin you haue bin plunged these »
three yeares, is occasion, that not onelye your souldiours, & »
the rest of your popular people, but the most faithfull lords »
of your Empire, do murmure, conspire, & coniure against »
you. And pardon me (my Lorde) if I speake so vnreuerent- »
ly, in thinges touching your preseruation. For there is no »
man, but doth very much marueile, of this great and newe »
alteration that appeareth in you, which doth so abase you, »
and maketh you to degenerate from your auncient genero- »
sitie and valiaunce. Your owne selfe hath giuen ouer your »
selfe, to be a spoile and praye to a simple woman: that you »
wholie depend vpon her flatteries and allurementes: rea- »
son or counsaile can take no place in your passionate and af- »
flicted hart. But I humblie beseech your maiestie, to en- »
ter a little into your selfe, and make a suruey of your life, »
that you haue ledde these three yeares paste. The glory of »
your auncestours and predecessours, acquired and wonne »
by sheading of so much bloud, kepte by so great prudence, »
conserued by so happy counsell, haue they no representati- »
on, or shew before your face? The remembraunce of their »
memorable victories, doth it not touche the depthe of your »
conscience? The magnanimitie and valiaunce, whereby »
they be immortalized, and their fame regestred throughe »
ỹ whole world, is it extinguished in you? Their Trophees »

and

cc and Monumentes grauen, and aduaunced to all ỹ corners
cc of the earth, be they throwen downe and defaced, from the
cc siege of your remembraunce? But where is now the ardẽt
cc desire, which boiled in you from your infancie, to make I-
cc talie tributarie vnto you, & to cause your selfe to be crow-
cc ned at Rome, Emperour aswel of Thorient, as of the Oc-
cc cidente? This is not the way to amplifie and inlarge your
cc Empire, but rather to restraine and diminish ỹ same. This
cc is not the meane to preserue it, but to dispoile it and make
cc it lesse. If Ottoman the first tronke or stocke of your gen-
cc tle familye and kinred, had thus giuen himselfe to be cor-
cc rupted in idlenes, you had not now inherited ỹ noble king-
cc dome of Greece, nor gouerned the countries of Galatia &
cc Bithinia, and many other prouinces, which enuironne the
cc greate sea. Semblablie his sonne Orcan (a liuely Image
cc of his father and a folower of his valiaunt factes) had not
cc triumphed ouer Licaonia, Phrigia, Caria, nor dilated the
cc boundes of his Empyre, to Hellesponte. What shall I
cc speake of Amurates, the successour of Orcan, who was the
cc first that inuaded Europa, conquered Thracia, Syria, Rasia
cc and Bulgaria? And Baiazet likewyse, did not he cut of the
cc head of the greate Tamburlain, which called himselfe the
cc scourge of God, & brought into ỹ field foure hundred thou-
cc sande Scithians a horsebacke, and sixe hundred thousande
cc footemen? Shall I passe ouer with silence the vertuous
cc exploites of your grandfather Mahomet, who conquered
cc Macedonia, & made the Countries to feele the edge of his
cc sword, euen to the sea Ionicum, lettinge passe many won-
cc derfull expeditions and iourneis, by him made against the
cc Lidians & Scicilians? But nowe I cannot reuiue the me-
cc morie of your father Amurate, but to my great sorow and
cc gricke, who by the space of xl. yeres, made the Sea & earth
cc to tremble and quake, and with the furie of his stronge
cc hand, vsed such cruell reuengment ouer the Grekes, ỹ the
memorie of the woundes do remaine at this present, euen

to the

to the mountaines of Thomao and Pindus, he subiugated
the Phocians: made tributarie Athenes, Beotia, Aetolia,
Caramania, and all the barbarous nations, frō Morea to ẏ
straits of Corinthe. What neede I here to bring in ẏ cruel
battell that he fought with the Emperour Sigismunde, &
Philip Duke of Burgūdia, wherin he ouerthrew ẏ whole
force of the Christians, toke the Emperour prisoner, & the
Duke of Burgundie also, whō he sent to Andrionopolis?
Or to remēber other fierce armies which he sent into Hū-
garie, wherof your maiesty is a faithfull witnes, your selfe
being stil there in your owne person. Iudge then my Lord
what diligence, & intollerable trauell, he vsed in his mani-
folde glorious enterprises, and famous victories. Do you
thincke, that if hee had bin idle in his palace, amonges the
Ladyes you had inherited your Empyre, or had nowe bin
Lord of so many excellent Prouinces: which he is not suf-
ficient to rule, ẏ cannot prouide to confirme, & establish the
same. There be many of your subiectes and vassals at this
day, which do obey & honour your Maiestie more for feare,
then good loue they beare you) that woulde rebell against
you, if Fortune would turne her backe. The Christians of
long time (as you know) haue swore your ruine & destruc-
tiō. Moreouer they say ẏ their high bishop ẏ pope of Rome
hath conuocated all his prelates to vnitie, & reconciled the
Princes & Monarches of Christēdome together, to ouerrun
you, and to take ẏ Scepter out of your hands, & to dispoile
you of your Empire. But what know we whither they wil
ioyne their force with the power of the Persian Sophi, your
capital enemie, or wᵗ the Souldan of Aegipt, your auncīēt
aduersary: which if they come to passe (as God forbid) your
Empire wilbe cōsumed. Gather your wits then together,
frō henceforth my Lord, & call againe reasō, which so ma-
ny peres you haue banished frō you. Awake out of ẏ deepe
sleepe, which hath sealed vp your eyes. Imitate & folow ẏ
trade of your aūcestors, which euer loued better one day of
honour

" honour, then a hundred liuing yeares of shame & reproch.
" Attend to the gouernment of your Empire. Leaue of this
" effeminate life, Receiue againe the smell of your generosi-
" ty and vertue. And if you cannot at one time, cutte of & re-
" moue, all that amorous heate, which vndermineth so your
" hart, moderate the same by litle and litle, & giue some hope
" to your people, which thincke you to be vtterlye loste, and
" desperate of recouerie. Or if so be the Greeke do delighte
" you so much, who shall let you to carye her with you in all
" your iourneis & expeditions? Why, cannot you together,
" both enioy her beauty, and vse the practise of armes? Wee
" thincke that your pleasure shalbe greater, after you haue
" wonne some victory, and subdued some countrye, to inioye
" her in your armes, then to remaine in a house, with eternal
" infamie, and continuall grudging of your subiectes. But
" proue I pray you, to separate your selfe certaine dayes frō
" her, and you shall certainly iudge, how farre more passing
" the pleasures be so differred, then those that be daily vsed.
" Yet one thinge more, and it please your Maiestie, there re-
" steth to be saide, which is, that all the victories of your pro-
" genitours, or the conquestes, which your selfe hath made
" be to small purpose, if you doe not keepe them and increase
" them, ẏ keeping of a thing gotten, being of no lesse glory &
" praise, then the conquest. Be now then a conquerour of
" your selfe, humblie beseching your Maiestie, that if I haue
" spoken any thing, disagreable to your minde, according to
" your wonted clemencie to pardon the same, and to impute
" the fault to my bounden duty, and the care that I haue of
" your honour and safetye. Mahomet after he had heard ẏ
longe discourse of his slaue, stoode as still as a blocke, and
fixing his eyes vppon the grounde, with sodaine chaunge
of colour, declared by outward signes, the agitations and
vnquietnes of his minde in such wise, as ẏ poore slaue Mu-
stapha, seing in him those alterations, was in doubt of his
life: whose woords so pricked the Emperours harte, that

he knewe

he knew not what to do, or whereupon to be resolued, and feeling his conscience troubled, with a furious battel: knowing euidentlye that Mustapha had spoken the truth, and that he uttered the same like a trustie seruaunt to his maister. But on the other side the beautie of the Greeke, was still before his eyes, and the minde he had to abandon her, gaue him suche alarme, that he seemed at that instante, as though his hart had been torne out of his belly. And thus moued with diuers tempestes, and disquieted with sundry thoughtes, hauing his eyes inflamed, with great rage and furie, he said vnto him. Althoughe thou hast spoken vnreuerently inough, yet our education together, and the fidelitie ỳ I haue proued in thee in time paste, shalbe thy pardon for this time. To the purpose. Before the Sunne doth compasse the Zodiacke, I will let it be knowen to thee and other, what puissaunce & power, gouerne I my selfe, whether I am able to bridle mine affection or not. Take order in the meane time that all my noble men, the Baschats, and the principall of my men of warre, be assembled together to morowe, in the middes of the greate halle of my palace. This determination finished, the Emperour went into the Greeke, with whom he reioysed all that day and night, and made more of her then euer he did before. And the more to flatter her, he dined with her, and commaunded that after dinner, she should adorne herselfe with her most precious Iewels, and decke her with the costliest apparell shee had. Whereunto the poore wenche obeied, not knowinge ỳ it was her funeral garmentes. On the other side, Mustapha vncertaine of the Emperours minde, at the houre appointed, caused all the nobilitie to be assembled in the hall, euerye of theym marueilinge what moued the Emperour so to do, sithens he had so long time shut vp himselfe, without shewing his person abrode. Being thus assembled, and euerye man talking diuerslye of this matter, accordinge as their affection serued: beholde, the Emperour entred the hall,

hall, leading the Greeke by the hand, who being adorned, otherwise then she was wont to be, was accompanied and garnished with beautie, so rare and excellent, as she resembled rather an heauēly Goddesse, thē a humaine creature. The Turke being come into the hall, after that the Lords had made their reuerence, according to their wonted maner, he holding still the faire Greeke by the left hande, and stoode still in the middest of the same loking furiously roūd about him, he said vnto them. So farre as I vnderstand, all ye do mutine and grudge, because I (being vanquished with Loue) cannot be deuided nor yet content my selfe day nor night, from ꝑ presence of this Greeke. But I do know none of you all so continente, and chaste in Loue, that if hee had in possession, a thing so rare and precious, so amiable indowed with beautie so excellent, but before he could forget her, and giue her ouer, hee woulde three times be well aduised. What say you to the matter? Euery of you shall haue free liberty, franckly to tel me your minde. But they rapt with an incredible admiration, to see so faire a thing, sayde that he had with greate reason passed his time wyth her. Wherunto the barbarous cruel Prince aunsweared. Well, now then I wil make you to vnderstand, that there is no earthlie thing that cā bind vp, or captiuate my sences so much, but that from hencefoorth I will folow the glorie of mine aunceſtours, and immitate the valiaunce of the Ottomans, which is so fixed in my breaſte, as nothinge but death is able to blotte it out of my remembraunce. Those wordes finished, incontinently with one of his handes, hee catched the Greeke by the heare of the head, and with his other hand, he drew out his falchion from his side, and folding his handes about her golden lockes, at one blow hee strake of her head, to the great terrour of them all. When he had so done, he said vnto them: Now ye know, whether your Emperour is able to represse, and bridle his affections, or not. Within a while after, meaninge to discharge

the

the reſt of his cholere, he addreſſed a Campe of foure ſcore, or an hundred thouſand men: with whom percing Bouſſine, he beſieged Belgrade, where Fortune was ſo contrary vnto him, that he was put to flight, and loſte there a notable battaile againſt the Chriſtians, vnder the conduct of Iohn Huniades, ſurnamed le Blanck, who was father of ỹ worthie and glorious king Mathie Coruin.

¶ A Ladie falſlie accuſed of adultrie, was condempned to be deuoured of Liõs: the maner of her deliuerie, and how (her innocencie being knowen) her accuſer felt the paines for her prepared.

The. xli. Nouell.

IN the Countrie of Aquitane, there was ſometime a Lord, whoſe lands and lordſhips laye betweene Liſmoſine and Poictou, and for the antiquitye of his houſe was renowmed, both for bloude and wealth, amonges the chiefe of all the Countrie. Being allied in kinred wyth the beſt, hee had full acceſſe and fauour, as well in the houſes of the auncient Dukes of Guienne, and Countes of Poictou, as in the Royall Courtes of the French kinges. This Lorde (whom Bandello the aucthour of this hiſtory, affirmeth to be Signor de la Rocca Soarda, but the tranſlatour & augmentor of the ſame in French, called Francois de Belle Foreſt, leaueth out his name, for good reſpect as he alleageth) kept a great Court & liberal houſehold, & ſingularlie delighted (after ỹ maner of ỹ Frẽch nobilitie) in hũtinge, & hawking. His houſe alſo was had in greater admiracion (the rudenes & ignorannce of that tyme was ſuch) becauſe

because he had gotten beastes of straunge countries, chefly Lions, wherein he had great pleasure, aswell for ỳ rarenesse of that beast in Fraunce, as for a certaine generositie, that he knew to be in the same, which resembled the magnanimitie and courage of noble men, whose mindes & spirites, doe not esteeme thinges that be vaine, and cannot be affraide in doing of deedes, whereunto honour is offred for reward. This Lord maried a Lad..., the doughter of one of his neighbours, a woman worthie for such a husbande: whose beautie was so rare, as there was none comparable vnto her: which ỳ more increased, for that shee was indued with perfite vertue, and furnished with so good behauiour, as right good mindes and wittes should be occupied, naie, rather put to their shiftes to decide, whether gifte were greatest, either the exquisite workemanshippe of her excelling beautie, or whether Nature had imploied al her cunning, to frame a body to appeare before men miraculous, or els her honest porte, her good grace, curtesie, and graue mildnes, accompanied with vertue, not vulgare or commõ to many men, which made this Ladie to shine, like the glisteringe Planet of Mars, amonges other the wanderinge starres. In such wise as the very sauage and brute, were forced with splendent fame, to praise her to be such a womã, whose equall they neuer knew, to be in all their Cõtrie, who made the house of her husband glorious, and him a contented man, to beholde such a starre to lie by his side, which sufficed to illustrate and beautifie a whole countrie, by her onely presence, & to nobilitate a race, although the bloud of auncestours did faile, for the accomplishmente of their perfection. Such is the great force of vertue, which not onely did aduaunce her aboue other creatures, but also did constraine the enuious to haue her in admiration. But these admiratours, and praisers of vertue, doe not vse like indeuour for ỳ merites of vertue, rather they imploie their onely industrie, to gather some profite of vertue, and then

(follow-

(following the nature of the dogge) they retourne to their vomite, and vomite forth their venime, hidden in their serpents breast. As it came to passe, and was euident in a certaine man, that was Stewarde of this noble mans house (truly a very happye house, as well for the honest loue, betwene the Lord and the Lady, as for the vertue and clemẽcy, wherewith both the one and the other were accompanied) who in the beginninge, as honestie and duetie did require, was a louer of good maners, and commendable demeanour of his Lady and maistresse, afterwardes (forgetting the fidelitie, which he did owe vnto his Lorde, the nobilitie of his predecessours, and the perill of his owne life) began to loue her, and serue her in harte, and to wishe for ꝑ faireſt thinge, which outwardlye did appeare to be in her, where he oughte not so much, as with the loke of his eye, to giue any atteint of liking, for the reuerẽce of him, which was the right owner, and iuste possessor of the same. This maister foole then, not measuring his forces, and lesse followinge the instincte of reason, became so amourous of his Madame, as continually he imagined by what meanes he mighte giue her to vnderstand the paines and languores, wherein he liued for the loue of her. But (alas) these deuises vanished, like a litle dispersed cloude, at the rysinge of ꝑ Sunne. For thinkinge vppon the vertue of his maistresse, his desires were soner remoued from his hart, thẽ he was able to impresse them in the seate of his iudgement, therby to take anye certaine assuraunce. Notwithstandinge his heade ceased not to builde Castels in the ayre, and made a promise to himselfe to enioye her, whom he worshipped in his hart. For he toke such paynes by his humble seruice, that in the ende he acquired some part of his Ladyes good grace and fauour. And for that he durste not be so bolde to manifest vnto her, the vehemence of his griefe, he was cõtented a long time, to shew a counterfaict ioy, which raised vnto him a liuely spring of sorowes & displeasures, which

ordinarily did frette and boyle his minde so muche: as the force of his weping for vaine hope, was able to suffocate the remnant of life, that rested in his tormēted hart, which caused certaine litle brokes of teares to streame downe, assailing the minde of this foolishe Louer. This faire and chaste Ladie was so resolued, in the loue of her husbande, that she toke no regarde of the countenaunces, and foolishe fashions of this maister Louer. Who seing his mishappe to growe to dispaire, and from thence foorthe no remedie, that whether by reioyse, well hoping of better lucke, or for sodaine and miserable death, he determined to proue Fortune: and to see if the water of his hope, coulde finde any passage, stedfastlye determined, that if he were throwen downe hedlong into the bottome of Refusal, and contempned for his seruice, not to retire againe, but rather further to plondge, for the accelerating of the ruine of him self, and his desires. For he thought it impossible, ẏ his harte could indure more intollerable heate, of that inuisible fier, then it had felt alreadie, if he founde no meanes for the smoke, to haue some vent and issue. For whiche consideration, cleane beside himselfe, bewitched with foolish Loue, like a beast throughly transformed into a thing, that had no sense of a reasonable man (such as they be accustomably, that be inrolled in the muster bookes of Venus soune) was purposed to open to the Ladie (when occasion serued) both the euill, & also the griefe that he susteined, in bearing towarde her, so great and extreme affection. Behold here, one of the effects of humane follie: this was the firste acte of the Tragedie, wherein loue maketh this brainlesse man to playe, the first and principall parte vpon the Stage. This poore gentleman (otherwyse a good seruaunt, and carefull for the profite and honoure of his maister) is nowe so voyde of him selfe, and blinde in vnderstanding, as hee maketh no conscience to assaile her (to defraude her of her greatest vertue) the simple name of whom, ought to haue made him trēble

for feare

for feare, and to blushe for shame, rather then for her beautie sake, and naturall curtesie, to dispoyle her of her honestie, and to attempte a thing vncertaine to winne, and also more daungerous to practise. Nowe, whiles he liued, in the attemte of his hoped occasion, it chaunced that the Ladie (thinking no malice at all) began to beholde the Steward, with a better eie and looke more familier, then any of the gentlemen, and domesticall seruauntes of the house, as well for the painted honestie of this Galant, as to se him so prompte & redie to obey her. And therefore vpon a daye, as she walked in the Gallerie, she called him vnto her, and verie familierly communicated, certaine affaires, touching the profite of the house. He that marched not but vpon one foote, and burned with Loue, and whose harte leapte for iope, and daunced for gladnesse, thought that he had nowe obteined the toppe of his felicitie, & the whole effect of his desire: sodainly he cast away, the dispaire of his former conceiptes, obiecting him selfe to the daunger, wherin he was like to bee ouerwhelmed, if the Ladie accepted not his request, with good digestion. In the end, recouering force, he discoursed in minde this wicked opinion, wherwith foolish and wilfull fleshly louers, doe blason and displaye, the honour and chastitie of Ladies, when they make their vaunte that there is no womã, be she neuer so chaste, continente, or honest, but in the ende yeldeth, if she be throughly pursued. O, the wordes and opinion of a beast, rather then of a man knowing vertue. Is the nomber of chaste women so diminished, that their renowme at this daye, is like a Boate in the middes of some tempestious sea, whereunto, the mariners do repaire to saue them selues? It is the only vertue of Ladies, which doeth constraine them, to vomite foorthe their poyson, when they see them selues deceiued, of their fonde and vncomely demaundes. A man shall neuer heare those woordes proceede, but from the mouthes of the moste lasciuious, whiche delight in nothing els, but to corrupte

the good names of Ladies, afterward to make them ridiculous to the woꝛlde. Retourne we then to our purpoſe, this valiaunt ſouldiour of loue, willing to geue the firſt onſet, vpon his ſwete enemie, began to waxe pale, and to trẽble, like the Reede, blowen with the wynde, and knoweth not in what part, oꝛ by what meanes, to beſtowe the firſte ſtrokes of his aſſault. At lengthe with foltring tongue, and trembling voyce, he ſpeaketh to his Ladie in this wyſe.

"Alas madame, how happie were the courſe of our tranſitorie life, if the commõ paſſions, receiued no increaſe of troubles, by newe & diuers accidents, which ſeme to take roote in vs, foꝛ the very great diminution of that libertie, which euery man doth ſtudie ſo much to conſerue. But truly that ſtudie is vain, and the paine therof vnpꝛofitablie beſtowed. Foꝛ he inforceth him ſelfe, to liue free from paſſion, which in the middes of his inforcement, feeleth him ſelfe to be violently conſtrained, and ſeeth the taking away of his libertie, to be a certaine impeachemente, whiche thereunto hee would geue. Alacke, I haue pꝛoued that miſchiefe, and am yet in the greateſt exceſſe, & pangues of my diſeaſe. I fele (alas) a diuerſitie of anguiſhes, and a Sea of troubles, which toꝛmente my minde and yet, I dare not diſcouer the cauſe, ſeing that ẏ thing, which is the foũtaine of my griefe, to be of ſuche deſert, as my ſeruice paſte, and all that is to come, is not able to geue the pꝛooſe, if one ſpeciall grace and fauour, doe not inlarge, the litle power that is in mee, to counteruaile the greatneſſe, and perfectiõ of that, which thus doth variat and alter, bothe my thoughtes and paſſions. Pardon mee (madame) if I doe ſpeake obſcurelye, foꝛ the confuſion of my minde, maketh my wooꝛdes coꝛreſpondent, to the qualitie of the ſame. Notwithſtanding, I wyll not kepe ſilente from you, that whiche I doe ſuffer, and muche leſſe diſſemble, what paſſion I indure, beyng aſſured, foꝛ your vertue and gentlenes, that you (moued with compaſſion) will ſuccour me, ſo muche

as ſhall

as ſhall lie in you, for preſeruacion of the life of him, that
is the beſt and moſt obedient ſeruaunt amonges them all,
that do you hũble ſeruice. The Lady which neuer thought
of the wickednelle, which this inſenſate man began to ima-
gine: aunſwered him verye curteouſly. I am ſorie trulye
for your miſhap, and do marueile, what ſhould be the effect
of that paſſion, which as you ſay, you feele with ſuch dimu-
nicion of that, which is perfect, and accompliſhed in you.
For I do ſee no cauſe that ought to moue you to ſo ſtrãge
infirmitie, whereof you told mee, and wherewith I had al-
readie foũd fault, although you had ſaid nothing. I would
to God I knew, which way to helpe you, aſwel for my lord
my huſbandes ſake, whoe I am ſure doth beare you good
will, as for the honeſtie, which hetherto I haue knowen to
be in you, wherein I thincke all other reſembling you, for
vertue and good conditions, doe deſerue that accompt and
conſideration. He that thought her already to be taken in
his nettes, ſeing ſo faire awaye open and cleare, to diſcloſe
that, which he had kept couerte ſo long, in the depth of his
hart, aunſweared. Ah madame, are ye ignoraunte of the
forces of Loue, and how much his aſſaultes, can debilitate
the liuelihoode of the bodies and ſpirites of men? Knowe
ye not that he is blinde and naked, not caring whither hee
goeth, manifeſting himſelfe there, wher occaſion is offred?
Alas madame, if you haue not pitie vppon mee, and do not
regard that, which I do ſuffer for the loue of you, I know
not how I am able to auoyde death, which will approche
ſo ſone to cutte of, and abridge my yeares, as I ſhall vnder-
ſtande a refuſall of that, which the extreme Loue I beare
you (madame) forceth mee to require: which is to receiue a
new ſeruice, of your auncient and faithfull ſeruiture: who
inflamed by the brighte beames of your deuine face, know-
eth not how to chaunge his affection, and much leſſe to re-
ceiue helpe, but of the place, where hee receiued the pricke.
Excuſe (Madame I beſeech you) my raſhneſſe, and pardon

cc my follie, accuse rather, either your celestiall beautie, or els
cc that tyrant Loue, who hath wounded me so luckelie, as I
cc esteme mine euill, fortunate, and my wounde happie: sithe
cc by his meane, my thoughtes and cogitations, doe onelye
cc tende to do you seruice, and to loue you in mine hart, which
cc is the Phenix of the faireſt and moſte curteous Ladies,
cc within all our Prouince. Alas, that excellencie, which thus
cc maketh me your seruaunt shall one daye be my ruine, if by
cc your good grace (speaking it with weaping teares) you doe
cc not fauour him, which liueth not, but to obey you, & which
cc lesing your good grace, will attempte to depriue him selfe
cc of life, which being depriued through your cruelties, will
cc goe to complaine of his boide attempt, and also of your ri-
cc gor amonges the ghoſtes, and shadowes of them that bee
cc alreadie dead, for like occasion. The chaſte Ladie was so rapte of wittes, for the straungenes of the case, and for the griefe whiche she conceiued, to see the vnshamefast hardineſſe of the varlette, as she could not tell how to make him aunswere: But in the ende breaking silence, and fetching a great sighe, from the bottome of her harte, her face stayned with a freshe Vermilion rudde, whiche beautified her colour, by reason of disdaine, conceiued against this impudent Orator, she aunswered him verie seuerely. O God,
cc who would haue thought, ỳ from a hart nobly brought vp,
cc and deriued from an honourable race, a vilanie so greate,
cc could haue taken roote, and spring vp with such deteſtable
cc fruite? What maiſter Stewarde? haue ye forgotten the
cc dutie of a seruaunt, towarde his Lorde and maiſter? Haue
cc ye forgotten I saye, the dutie of a vertuous gentleman, wel
cc nourished and trayned vp, towarde suche and so great a la-
cc die as I am? Ah Theſe and Traitour. Is this the venime
cc whiche thou kepeſt so couert and secrete, vnder the swete-
cc neſſe of thy counterfaicte vertue? A vaunte varlet, a vaūt:
cc Goe vtter thy staffe, to them that be like thy self, whose ho-
cc nour and honeſtie is so farre spent, as thy loialtie is light

and

and vayn. For if I heare thee ſpeake any more of theſe fol- »
lies, be aſſured that I wil mortifie that raging flame, which »
burneth thy light beleuing harte, and will make thee feele »
by effecte, what maner of death that is, wherein thou re- »
poſeſt the reſte of thy trauell. As this deceiued Orator, »
was framing his excuſe, and about to moderate, the iuſt
wrath of his Ladie, diſpleaſed vpon good occaſion, ſhe not a-
ble to abyde any more talke, ſayde further. And what ſig- »
nes of diſhoneſtie haſte thou ſeen in mee, that moue thee, to »
perſwade a thing ſo wicked, and vncomely for mine eſtate, »
yea and ſo preiudiciall, to me, to my freudes, and the houſe »
of thy maiſter, my Lorde and ſpouſe? I can not tell what it »
is that letteth me, from cauſing thee to be caſte foorthe a- »
monges the Lions (cruell and capitall enemies of adulte- »
rie, amonges them ſelues) ſithe thy pretence is, by violating »
my chaſtitie, to diſhonour the houſe, whereunto thou oweſt »
no leſſe, then al the aduancements thou haſt: from the taſte »
whereof thou haſt abandoned Vertue, the beſt thing wher- »
with thou were affected. Auoyde nowe therefore, let me »
heare no more of this, vppon payne of thy life, otherwyſe »
thou ſhalt feele the rewarde of thy temerite, and vnder- »
ſtande the bitterneſſe of the litle pleaſure, whiche I haue »
conceiued of thy follies. So the good Ladie held her peace, »
reſeruing in her harte, that whiche ſhould bee her helpe in
time and place: howbeit ſhe ſayde nothing hereof vnto her
huſbande, aſwell for raiſing offence or ſlaunder, as for pro-
uoking him againſt him, whiche ſuſteined the puniſhement
him ſelfe, ſithe that this refuſe, did more ſtraungely pinche
him, nerer at the harte, then euer the Egle of Caucaſus
(whereof the Poetes haue talked ſo muche) did tier the
mawe of the ſubtile theefe Prometheus. And yet the vnhap-
pie ſtewarde not contented, with the miſchiefe committed
againſt ỹ honour of his maiſter, ſeing ỹ it was but loſt time
to continue his purſute, & that his gaine would bee no leſſe
thē death, if ſhe accordīg to her promiſed threates, did ther-

of aduertiſe her huſband, being a cholericke man, & lighte of beliefe, and becauſe the ſaid Steward, for ſuch an enterpryſe had receiued a ſimple recompence, although correſpondent to his deſert, pzemeditated wozſe miſchiefes, moze noiſome then the firſt. He was in doubte, whether it were better foz him to tarie oz to departe, ſith two thinges in a maner, were intolierable foz him to ſuffer. Foz he coulde not forſake the houſe, where from his cradle, he had been ſo finely bzought bp, the lozd wherof made ſo much of him, as of his owne perſon. On the other ſide, he knewe that ſo long as the Lady was aliue, he could haue no maner of ioy oz contentation. Foz that cauſe, conuerting extreeme loue (which once he bare to ỹ Lady) into cruel hatred, vnſeemely foz a bzutal beaſt, and into an inſaciable deſire of reueng: he determined to addzeſſe ſo ſtrong an ambuſhe, trained wᵗ ſo great ſubteltie, that ſhe was not able to eſcape, without daunger of her life and honour, whereof ſhe declared herſelfe to be ſo carefull. Alas, what blindnes is that, which captiuateth the wittes & ſpirite of him, that feedeth himſelfe of nothing els, but vpon the rage of fātaſtical deſpite, and vpon the furie of diſpaire. Do wee not ſee, that after Reaſon giueth place to deſired reuenge of wzong thought to be receiued, man diſpoyleth himſelfe of that, which appertayneth to the kinde of man, to put on the fierce nature, of the moſte bzute and cruell beaſtes, to runne headlonge without reaſon, toward the place wher the diſozdinate appetite of affections, doth conduct him? Whereof I will not aduouche any other example, but of this traitour, who paſſionated not with Loue, but rather with rage and fury, ceaſeth not to eſpie all the actions, and behauiour of his Ladie, to the intente he mighte bzinge to ende his deuiſed treaſon againſt her, that thoughte (perchaunce) no moze of his folies, but honeſtlie to paſſe the time, with her deare & welbelouer huſbande. Truly, if this Lady had been of the diſpoſition of ſome women (that care not to moleſte theyr huſ-

huſbands, for the firſt Flie that buzzeth before their eyes, conceyuing a friuolous and ſodaine opinion of their chaſtitie, not ſo much aſſailed, or to charpely defended, chaunting glorious Hympnes and high prayſes of their victorie) certainly ſhe had not tombled herſelfe into ẏ daunger, whereunto afterwards ſhe fell. Not for that I will blame them, that do reueale to theyr huſbandes the aſſaults which they receiue of impoꝛtunate ſuters, that doe aſſaie to deflower their Chaſtitie. Yet I will ſaye that Modeſtie in the ſame (as in euery other humaine action) is greatly to be required, ſith that ſuch a one, by thincking to extolle her honour and honeſtie, and to make proofe of her chaſtitye, rendreth the ſame ſuſpicious, and giueth occaſion to talke to the people, that is more apt and redie to ſlaunder and defame, then by good repoꝛt to prayſe them, which by vertue do deſerue commendation, bringing the lyfe and fame of her huſband, to ſuch extremitie, as it had been better vertuouſly to haue reſiſted the force of Loue, and the flattering ſute of ſuch louers, then to manifeſt that which might haue been kept ſecrete, without preiudice of eyther. And truly that womã deſerueth greater glorie, which of herſelfe defendeth her honeſtie, and quencheth the flames liuelye kindled in the hartes of other, with the coldnes of continencie, by ẏ meanes vanquiſhing two, then ſhe doth, which manifeſting the vice of an other, diſcloſeth as it were, a certaine apparatice of her frailtie, & the litle reaſon wherewith ſhe is indewed, to vanquiſh him, that confeſſeth to be her ſeruaunt, & whoſe wil depẽdeth at her commaundement. And when ẏ whole matter ſhalbe rightlye iudged, ſhee that reuealeth the imperfection of a Suter, ſheweth her opinion and minde to be more pliant to yelde, then indewed with reaſon to abãdone pleaſure, and to reiect the inſolencie of the ſame, ſith Reaſons force, doth eaſely vanquiſh light affections of ſenſuall partes, whoſe fancies imprinted wyth ficklenes, do make them ſo inconſtant, as they perſwade themſelues to

be ſa

be so puissaunte and mightie, as all thinges be, and rest at their commaundement.

Retourning nowe then to our former discourse, ỹ Steward so laboured with might and maine, till he had found meanes to be reuenged, of the receiued refusall, with such subtilty and Diuelish inuention, as was possible for mã to deuise, which was this. Among the seruauntes of this great Lorde, there was one no lesse ponge of witte and vnderstanding, then of age. And albeit that he was fayre and comely, yet so simple and foolishe, as hee had much a do, to tell the nomber of sixe. This foole by reason of his follye and simplicitye, was the onelye sporte and pastime, of the Lord and Lady. The Lady many times toke pleasure, to talke with this maister foole, to bringe him into a choler & chaufe, thereby to prouoke laughter. And therefore all the household, vsed to call him in mockerie, My Ladyes darelinge. In whom the Lorde toke singuler pleasure and delight, esteeming him so wel as any of his other seruaunts. The malicious Steward, seing the familiaritie of the Lady wt the foole (like one that had already catched his pray, within his snares) began also to make much of that ponge Cockescome, in such wyse as he had brought him into such fooles paradise, as he might make him do and saye, what he liste. Who seing him diligent to his desire, one day toke him a side, and after he had whitled him well, he sayd vnto
"him. Dicke, I can tell thee a knacke, that thou shalt make
"my Lady laugh wel, but thou must say nothing, till she do perceiue it. The poore Idiot glad to please his maistres, was desirous to knowe what it was, and promised to doe
"what soeuer he would bidde him. Thou must (sayd ỹ Ste-
"ward) in the eueninge before she go into her chamber, hyde
"thy selfe vnder her bedde, & tary there till it be an hower or
"two before day, & then I wil tell thee what thou must doe besides. This plat deuised, the foole the same euening, executed the deuise of hys diuelish counsaylour, who seing his

desire

desire to take effecte, went to an olde gentleman, ẏ was of great honestie and vertue, for which he was of all men so wel knowen, as they esteemed his word so true as the Gospell. To that gentleman this craftie villaine, full of poison and malice, wholy bent to mischiefe, told and reported the fact, not as it was in deede, but to the great preiudice, and dishonour of ẏ Lady, geuing him to vnderstand, how much she had forgotten herselfe, how without the feare of God, reuereuce of her husband, and respect of her owne honestie, she had filthely giuen herselfe ouer to him, which was called her Dareling. The good gentlemã hearing this straũge case, was astonned like one ẏ had been stroken, w̃ a flashe of lightening, then drawing nere to ẏ accuser, he aunswered. Is it possible that suche wickednes, can lye hidden in the breast of our Madame? I sweare vnto thee by God, ẏ if any other had told it me besides you, I would not haue beleued it, and truly yet I am in doubt therof. No, no, saide this wicked blasphemer, I will make you see that, which you cãnot beleue: And hauing lessoned his foole, in his cõceiued follie, the next day he procured the gentleman thyther, who seing the Ladies minion, going out of her chamber (which many times lay seuerally frõ her husbãd) could not refraine weeping, lamẽting the ill fortune of his Lord, who thinkinge ẏ he had had an honest wyfe, was abused w̃ an impudent and vnshamefast whore. Then he began to frame a long Oracion, against the incontinencie of womẽ, moued rather through the good will, bee bare to his mayster, then to the truth of the matter, which vndiscretely he spake against the order of women kynd. So ignorant was he of the treason & indeuour of the Steward, who demaũded of him, what was to be done in that matter. What, sayd the old gentleman? Such wickednesse ought not to be vnpunished. My Lorde must be aduertised hereof, that the house maye be purged of suche a plague and infection, that hee maye euidentlye vnderstande the hypocrisye of her,

"her, that ſo longe time hath kepte cloſe her incontinencie,
"vnder the vaile of fayned chaſtitie. But the righteous God
made openly to appeare before mens eyes, ỳ ſecrete ſinnes
of the wicked, to thintent greater ſlaunders ſhould not in-
creaſe. The Steward very ioyful that he had gotten ſo ho-
neſte a man, to be a witneſſe of his accuſation, approued his
aduiſe, for that it agreed wel with his intent. So they two
togeather went to the Lord, with countenaũce ſad & heauie,
correſpondent to their minde, and ſpecially the Traitour,
whoſe ſenſe was ſo confounded with gladneſſe, that think-
king to begin his tale, his wordes ſo ſtucke in his mouth,
as he was not able to vtter a word. Whereat the Lorde
was wonderfully abaſhed, marueyling what that timidite
did meane, till he had heard the vnfaithfull Stewarde tell
"his tale, who ſayde to him in this maner. My Lord, I am
"ſory, ỳ it is my lotte, to declare vnto you a matter hitherto
"vnknowẽ, and not marked or taken heede of by any, which
"wyl ſo much offend you, as any pleaſure that euer till this
"day, did pleaſe and content you. And God knoweth what
"griefe it is to me (in your preſence) to be an accuſer of a per
"ſon in the world, which I haue eſteemed nexte vnto you, a-
"boue anye other creature that lyueth. But being in ỳ place
"I am, I might (by good deſerte) be accuſed of treaſon and
"felonie, if cõcealing ſuch a deteſtable crime, I ſhould leaue
"the dutie of fidelitie to an other, leſſe deſirous to do you ſer-
"uice then I am. Who beleueth there is no ſecond perſon,
"that deſireth better to acquite the goodnes and preferm̃et
"which I haue receyued of your Lordſhip, then I do. This
"it is my Lord. My Lady miſpriſing her duty to your lord-
"ſhip, and the honour of the houſe whereof ſhee came, hath
"not diſdayned to receiue into her chamber at inconuenient
"time, the foole that is called her Darelinge, & in the place
"into which none but your honour, ought to haue peaceable
"entrie: whereof this gentleman preſent (whom you know
"to be without compariſon) ſhalbe witneſſe. Touchinge my

ſelfe,

ſelfe, the fayth and truſt, which alwayes I haue vſed in all
your aſſayres, & the litle affection, which I haue to things
contrary to vertue, ſhal giue true teſtimonie, of that which
I haue ſaide. The Lorde hearing theſe pitifull newes,
which pearced his harte more deepe, then anye two edged
ſword, at ꝑ firſt was ſo aſtonied, that he could not tell what
to ſay or do, ſauing the ardente furie of Cholere, made him
diſtill a certaine Melancholique humour into his eyes,
which receyued the ſuperfluous vapours of his braine. At
length breakinge that forth, which troubled him within, &
grindinge his teethe for furie, with ſtutteringe and vncer-
taine voice, fetching ſighes betweene, ſaide. O God what
newes be theſe that I heare? Is it poſſible, that the faireſt
and chaſteſt Lady that liueth, hath in this wiſe defaced her
honour: and ſo wickedly blemiſhed my reputation? Alas
if it ſo be, that ſhe hath in this wiſe diſparaged herſelfe, no
truſt is to be repoſed in any other, what ſoeuer ſhe bee. Ah
God vnder what Planet was I borne, that after ſo longe
pleaſure receiued with my beloued fere and companion, I
ſhould by her feele a diſpleaſure, an hundred times worſe
then death? Is there no remedie but that my houſe muſte
receiue & ſee an enterpriſe ſo vilanous, by her onely meane,
which ought rather to haue been the ornamente and beau-
tie of the ſame? Then he chauked vp and downe the cham-
ber, without ſpeaking any more wordes, with his eyes rol-
ling in his heade, making ſtraunge countenaunces, which
did well expreſſe the grieſe, that vexed and tormented his
minde. In the ende halfe pacifyed, he tourned his face to-
ward the accuſer, ſaying. My frende if this be true, which
thou haſt told mee, I ſweare by God, that I will make her
feele the ſmarte, of ſuch greeuous puniſhmente, as ſhalbe
ſpoken of forever. But if my wyfe be ſlaundred, and accu-
ſed wrongfully, aſſure thy ſelfe that I wil be reuenged vp-
pon thee. I know the vertue of this gentleman very well
(hauing had good proofe thereof) and of thy fidelitie I am

nothing

"nothing at all in doubt. But alas, the loue that I beare vn-
"to my wife, and her former vertue, which maketh mee to
"loue and eſteeme her ſo much, doth throughlye pearce my
"hart, and much adoe I haue to liue, hearing this report:
"which doth deface and blotte all the honeſtie and vertue, ỹ
"euer remayned in mee. And that was it my Lord (anſwea-
"red the Traitour) which did deceiue you. For the ſhewe of
"that painted vertue, did ſo delude you, that you be almoſte
"bewitched from vnderſtanding the wronge, ſo manifeſtlye
"perpetrated againſt you, & all your houſe. Now to thend,
"that you thincke not the accuſacion to be falſe, I truſt (if it
"pleaſe you to aſſiſt me) to let you ſee the thing, whereof wee
"haue giuen you intelligence. I wil do (ſayd the Lord) what
"you will haue me, although it be to my great griefe and ſo-
"row. To morow morning then (anſweared the Traitour)
"one hower before day, I will let you ſee, the harlet goinge
"out of her chamber with ſo great ioy, as I do conceiue hea-
"uines and griefe, for the ſimple remembraunce of ſo greate
wickednes. Whē they were agreed hereupon, this knaue
moſt deteſtable, weauing the toile wherin he himſelfe was
caughte, wente to ſuborne the perſonage of his foole, holy
made and inſtructed in his trumperie: leauinge the poore
Lord with a hamer working in his head, that he was lyke
to runne out of his wittes. So great is the furious force of
the poiſon of Jaloſie, whych ones hauing diſperſed the ve-
nime ouer the harte and intrayles of men, the wyſeſt ſorte
haue loſt the due diſcretion of theyr wittes. In the mor-
ning about the hower, that the amourous foole (ignorant
wherfore he went in) ſhould iſſue out of his maiſtreſſe cham
ber, the Stewarde rauiſhed with inexplicable ioye and
gladneſſe, like to the pleaſure of hym, that had attayned
the ſumme of his deſires, called hys Lorde, to ſee that hea-
uye and dolourous ſighte. The good gentleman, percey-
uing the report to be true, and thincking that ſhe had vſed
the foole to be her bedfelowe, was lyke to haue dyed for

heard tell before, of suche a kinde of death, was assembled in great multitude, tarying to see the ende of that executiõ, and talking diuersly of that sodaine iudgement, prayed all with one voyce, for the preseruation of the Ladie, of whose chastitie they were alredy right well assured. Now as they attended for the time of execution, the Lady was placed in the mid of the Parke, not without teares & sighes of the Assistantes, who murmured at the remembraunce of the horror, of a sight so furious. The innocent Ladye kneeled
" downe vpon her knees, and both by gesture and mery coũ-
" tenaunce, shewed how ioyful she went to suffer that, which
" she had neuer deserued: Then recommending her soule to
" God, for whose saluation she stedfastly hoped, she pronoun-
" ced this praier, a loude. O my Lorde God, whiche diddest
" ones deliuer Daniell, from a daunger like to this, where-
" to the false accusation of the wicked, haue wrongfully cast
" me hedlond: And diddest discharge Susanna, from the slaũ-
" der of the peruerse and adulterous Iudges, pleaseth the
" pitifully to behold, thy poore creature. Pardon O Lorde,
" forgiue I humblie beseche thee, the simplicitie of my deare
" husband, who dealeth thus with mee, rather through the
" circumuention of deceiptfull cauilling slaunderers, then
" by his owne malice and crueltie. Receiue O my God, and
" mercifull father, Receiue my soule betwene thy blessed
" handes, which thou hast redemed by the bloudshedding of
" thy sonne Iesus, vpon the Tree of the Crosse. As she had
" ended these wordes, she sawe the Lions come forth rãping,
and bristling vp their heare, stretching forth their pawes with roaring voice, cruelly looking round about them: Of whom the Lady thought to be the present pray. But the goodnesse of God, who is a iust Iudge, & suffreth his owne elect to be proued to ẏ extremitie, of purpose to make their glorie the greater, & the ruine of ẏ wicked more apparaũt, manifested there an euident miracle. For the Lions (being cruell of nature, and that time hungrie and gredie of pray)

in lieu of tearing the Ladie in pieces, to gorge their rauening paunche, they fill to licking and fawning vppon her, making ſo much of her, as if they had familiarly ben nouriſhed with her own breaſtes. A thing no leſſe pleaſaunt to the Ladye then meruellous to all the people ſtanding round about, who ſeing a chaũce ſo miraculous cried out, incõtinently for the deliuerie of the Ladie, & for vengeaũce to be takẽ of him, which ſo wickedly had protruded her into that daunger: which for her vertue, ought to be extolled and praiſed of the whole world. When the noble man was certified of this ſtraunge aduenture, hee cauſed his Steward to be apprehended and impriſoned, whoſe conſcience forced great remorſe, yet not knowing the ende of the tragedie, condempned himſelfe by his countenaunce. During his impriſonement the depoſition of the beloued foole was taken, who ſaide, that by the ſuggeſtion of the malicious Steward, many times (ignoraunt to the Lady) he cõueied himſelf in her chamber, not knowing wherunto, the intent of him that cauſed him ſo to do did tende. The other gentleman made excuſe (although he was blame worthy) that he was deceiued by the ſame falſe practiſe, that the Lorde himſelfe was. The Steward openly confeſſed the treaſon, which he had deuiſed againſt the Ladie, and the whole occaſion thereof, and thinking to be reuenged of the refuſall of loue, by her denied, he framed this ſlaunder, to make her loſe her life. Which the Lord hearing could not abide, that his death ſhould any longer be reſpected, but without other forme of Lawe, he was thruſt out to the Lions, & was preſently ſeaſed vpon, and torne in peeces by thoſe beaſtes, which by Gods iuſte iudgement, did abſteine frõ the good Ladie, for the puniſhement of the deteſtable ſinne of this varlet. In the meane time the chaſte and innocent Ladie, being brought before her huſbande, after he had kiſſed and imbraſed her, with humble reuerence ſhe ſayde vnto hym.

"My Lorde, I render my humble thankes to God, for that

thꝛough his holy grace, and inſcrutable Iuſtice, he hath let »
you to vnderſtande, twoo diuers affections, in two ſeuerall »
perſones of this woꝛlde, which you loue ſo well. In one, the »
treaſon ſo pernicious, which pꝛouoked you, to ſoile and im- »
bꝛue your handes (not without cauſe till this daye pꝛoued »
contrarie) in the bloud of your faithfull and dere beloued »
wife. In thother, a will and minde ſo good to obey you, and »
to perſiſt in continuation of that effecte, which maketh her »
generally to be pꝛayſed, and woꝛthy of your earneſt loue, »
foꝛ ſo much as ſhe is your very affectionate ſpouſe. Not- »
withſtanding, iuſtly may I make my complaint of you, foꝛ »
that without excuſe foꝛ my diſcharge, oꝛ hearing any thing »
that might ſerue foꝛ my purgation, you condempned her, »
foꝛ whoſe honour and defence you ought, to haue imployed »
both goodes and life. But God ſhalbe iudge betwene your »
litle diſcretion, and my rightcouſueſſe, betwene mine obe- »
dience, and your crueltie, wherewith you haue abuſed the »
nobilitie, of the race whereof I came. The huſbande hea- »
ring this wiſe and iuſt complaint, on the one ſide tranſpoꝛ-
ted with ioye, leapt and reioyſed, to ſee his deare compaꝰ
in libertie, and declared to be innocent, on the other parte
he bluſhed foꝛ ſhame, that hee had ſo lightly, and without
better pꝛoofe and trial condempned her, whom God by his
grace, had pꝛeſerued from the Lions thꝛoates, and durſte
not lift vp his head, by reaſon his harte freated, at the re-
membꝛaunce of his light credite & furie immoderate. Fi-
nallie imbꝛacing his wife, and kiſſing her louingly ſaid vn-
to her. Madame, and deare beloued wife, I can not denye, »
but fooliſhely I haue attempted, to blemiſhe the honoꝛ of »
her, that whilome made me to ſhine & gliſter, amongſt the »
beſt & chief of al this countrey, but he that doth wel marke »
and beholde, the galle and diſdaine of a huſband louing his »
wyfe, and then vnderſtandyng her little care and greate »
foꝛgetfulneſſe whiche ſhee hath, bothe of his honour, and »
gloꝛie of his comfoꝛte, will eaſely excuſe and pardon my »

cc fault, whiche I will not by any meanes colour and cloke,
cc but rather craue pardon at your handes, assuring you, that
cc I will amende and requite the same, so well and in suche
cc wise as you and yours, shall haue no cause but to be contēt
cc and satisfied. It suffiseth me sir (quod she) that my giltlesse
cc offence is knowen vnto you, and that I haue recouered
cc place in your fauourable acceptacion: For I doe accompte
cc mine aduersitie well imployed, sith thereby you and your
cc friendes may glorie, of the seuere Iustice ministred against
cc malefacters, and I reioyce in resistaunce of the assaultes
cc of loue, and of death to guarde and kepe my chastitie pure
cc and inuiolable. And may serue for example to euery honou
cc rable Ladie, being assailed with suche strong and mightie
cc aduersaries, to kepe them selues honest. For the croune is
cc not due but to her, that shall lawfully combate to the ende.

After this the Lorde by perswasion of his wife, commaunded that the foole should be auoided the house, that his presence might not grieue or torment her, ne yet renewe the memorie of a thing, that neuer was thought or doen. And not without cause: for the Lorde, whiche reclined his eare, to euery trifling report, and credited the woordes of euery whistling pikethanke, had much a do to escape from doing thinges, vnworthy his estate and calling. Of so great force truely is the venime of such Serpentes, that seasing by little and little, the harte of him disposed to receiue it in furie, maketh it to be in effect, like the nature of poyson and drogues corrupt: wherof men ought to be no lesse, but rather more diligent and carefull then of meates, amonges persones whom they suspect and feare, sithens that maladies & infections of minde, be farre more daungerous, thē outward passions, which torment the body. Whereunto if the said noble man was not hedefull, he felt the dammage for penaunce of his inconsideration. Howbeit as thinges, both good and ill amonges men, bee not still durable and perpetuall: Certaine daies after, he began to solace hym-

selfe with

selfe with his wife, and rode an huntinge abroade, visited his neighbours, and at home made great feastes and banquettes, whereunto his kindred and frends were inuited, to congratulate this newe alliaunce, indeuouring thereby to satisfye the fault committed, and the better to gratifie & pleasure his wyfe, to make her know how much more hee esteemed and regarded her then before: hee caused the successe of this presente historie, to be ingrauen with great industrie, and marueilous cunning in Marble, which he placed ouer the gate of the first entrie into his Castell, aswell to immortalizate the great chastitie of his fayre and vertuous wife, as to set forth a Mirrour and example to euerye housholde seruaunt, and to all other whatsoeuer they bee, to beware how they attempt any thing against the honour of Ladies. For many times it chaunceth, that he which diggeth a ditch, and setteth vp a Gallowes, is the first that doth fall, or is stretched thereuppon. As you maye see by this present discourse, which setteth before your eyes, what ende the fond loue of them ordinarily haue, which without reason, not measuring their owne ability, doe suffer themselues to be guided and led into their sensuall lustes and appetites: For ill successe faileth not in a beginning, the ground whereof abhorring reason, is planted and layed vppon the sandie foundacion of pleasure, which is shaken and ouerthrowen, by the least winde and tempest, that Fortune can bluster against such building.

¶ Didaco a Spaniarde, is in loue with a poore maiden of Valencia, and ſecretly marieth her, afterwardes lothinge his firſt mariage, becauſe ſhe was of baſe parentage, he marieth an other of noble birth. His firſt wyfe, by ſecrete meſſenger prayeth his company, whoſe requeſt he accompliſheth. Beinge a bedde, ſhee and her maide killeth him. She throweth him into the ſtreate: ſhee in deſperate wiſe confeſſeth the facte before the Maieſtrates, and is put to death.

The. xlii. Nouell.

THere is no man but doth knowe, that Valencia is at this day, the chiefe and onelye Rampar of Spaine, the true ſeate of Faith, Juſtice and humanity. And amonges all the rare and excellent ornamentes, that Citie is wel furniſhed with ſo trimme Ladies & curteous gentlewomẽ, as they know how to baite & feede yõg men with fooliſh daliaunce, and idle paſſetime. So that if there be any beetlehead or groſſe perſon, the better to allure and prouoke him to thoſe follies, they tell him by a common Prouerbe, That he muſt go to Valencia. In this citie there was in old time, as it is at this day a verye aunciente ſtocke and familie, called Ventimiglia, oute of which be deſcended a great nomber of riche and honourable knightes. Amonges whom, not long time paſte, there was one named Didaco, verye famous & renowmed, to be the moſt liberall and familiar gentleman of the City, who (for want of better buſineſſe) walked vppe and downe the Citie, and ſo conſumed his youth, in triumphes, maſkes, & other expences, common and apte for ſuche pilgrimes, addreſſing his loue indifferently to al women, without greater affection to one, then to an other, and continued that order,

order, till vppon an holy daye, he espyed a ponge mayde of smal yeares, but of very exquisite beauty: which maiden sodainlye castinge her eye vppon him, so pearced the knighte Didaco with her looke, that from that time forth, shee entred more neare his hart, than any other. And after he had well marked her dwelling place, he many times passed & repassed before the doore, to espie if he might get some loke or other fauour of her, that began already to gouerne the bridle of his thoughtes, and if it chaunced that the gentleman beheld her, she shewed her selfe curteous and amiable, indued with grace so good, as he neuer departed ill contented out of ỳ streate. The gentleman continuing certaine time in those vanities, was desirous to know a far of what she was, of what lineage & of what vocation. And after he had curiously searched out all her original, he vnderstoode by diuers reporte, that she was a Goldsmithes doughter, whose father was dead certaine yeares before, hauinge no more but her mother aliue, and two brethren, both of their fathers science. Notwithstanding, of life she was chaste & honest, defamed with none, although shee was pursued of many. Her outward beautie did not so much set her forth, as her grace and order of talke, who although brought vp in a Citizens house, yet no Lady or gentlewomā in the Citie, was comparable to her in vertue and behauiour. For from her tender yeares, she was not onely giuen to her nedle, (a meete exercise for mayds of her degre, but also was trayned vp to write and reade, wherein she toke so greate pleasure, as ordinarilie shee caried a booke in her hande, which she neuer gaue ouer, till she had gathered som fruit thereof. This knight hauing receyued that first impression, of the valor & vertue of Violenta (for that was her name) was further in loue then before, and that which added more oile to the matche, was the continuall lookes, wherwith she knew howe to delighte him: and wyth them shee

was so liberall, that so oft as he passed through ỹ streate she shot them forth so cruelly, as his poore hart (feeling it selfe so tormented) could not indure that new onset. By reason whereof, thincking to quench the fire, that by litle and litle consumed him, he attempted her chastity, with giftes, letters, and messengers, which he continued the space of halfe a yeare or more. Whereunto Violenta geuing no place, in the ende hee was constrayned to assayle her with his owne presence: and one daye finding her alone at the dooze, after he had made a verye humble reuerence vnto her, he sayde.

cc Maistresse Violenta, considering your order and the colde
cc regard that you haue to my letters and messages, I do re-
cc member the subtiltye that is attributed to the Serpente,
cc who with his taile stoppeth his eares, because he will not
cc heare ỹ woords, which hath power to constraine him, to do
cc against his wil, which hath made me to leaue to write vnto
cc you, & to desire specially to speake vnto you, ỹ mine affectu-
cc ous accentes, my sorowful woords & feruent sighes might
cc certifie you better then paper, ỹ rest of my passion, beleuing
cc verely, ỹ if the heauy sound of my greuous cõplaints, may
cc come to your delicate eares, they will make you to vnder-
cc stand a part of that good and euill, which I feele continu-
cc ally in my harte, although the loue which I beare you, be
cc such, as I cãnot giue such liuely experience outwardly, be-
cc ing but litle in comparison of them, which may be seene w̃-
in. And pronouncing those woords, there followed so many teares, sobbes & sighes, as they gaue sufficient testimony, that his tongue was the true & faithfull messenger of his hart. Wherof Violenta somewhat ashamed, w̃ a constante
cc grace said vnto him, Senior Didaco: if you do yet remẽber
cc your life past, & mine honesty (which peraduẽture you haue
cc thought either rude or cruell) I doubt not, that you haue
cc any cause to maruaile of my presumption, and to attribute
cc that to vice, which is familiar with vertue. For al-
thoughe that you haue sollicited mee to loue you, by an infinite

infinite nomber of letters and messages, yet it is so, that fol »
lowing the nature of maydes of my degree, I haue neither »
allowed them, nor yet condempned them, as wherunto ac- »
cordingly, I haue made no aunswere: not for despite or cō- »
tempte, but to let you know more certainly, that by fauou- »
ring your enterprises, I should increase your griefe, which »
can receiue none ende by the waye you pretende. For al- »
though that I haue made the firste proofe vpon my selfe, & »
therefore of reason I ought to lamente them, whiche be in »
semblable paine, yet I will not let slippe the bridle in suche »
wise to my passion, that mine honestie shall remaine in an »
other mans power, and (so it may be) at the mercie and cur »
tesie of them, who not knowing howe dere it is to me, shall »
thinke they haue made a pretie conquest. And that I maye »
haue no cause to repent to late, I haue stopped mine eares »
for feare, that I be not arested and stayed, with the violence »
of your charmes, a thing as you say, proper to Serpentes. »
But I haue fortefied my harte, and so armed my inwarde »
minde, as if God continue that grace in me, which hitherto »
he hath done, I hope not to be surprised. Although that I »
must needes confesse (to my shame) that I haue receiued »
marueilous assaultes of loue, not onely for the common re- »
nowme of your vertues, and through the curtesie and gent- »
lenesse dayly imparted to me by your letters, but specially »
by your presence, whiche hath yelded vnto me experience & »
assuraunce of that, whiche all the letters of the world could »
not do, nor all other messages were not able to cōceiue. And »
to the ende that I may not be vtterly ingrate, and that you »
doe not departe from me, altogether miscontent, I doe pro- »
mise you nowe that from hencefoorth, you shall inioye the »
first place of my harte, whereunto an other shall neuer en- »
ter: if so be you can be content with honest amitie, wherein »
you shall finde me in time to come so liberall, in all that, »
whiche honestie shall permitte, that I am contente to for- »
goe the name of a presumptuous or cruell Damosell, for »

your

« your sake. But if you meane to abuse me, or hope for anye
« thing of me, contrarie to mine honour, you be meruailously
« deceiued. Wherfore if you thinke your worthinesse to great
« to cary away a recompence so small, you shall doe very wel
« both for me and your selfe, in forgetting that is past, to cut
« of all hope in time to come. And she thinking to prolonge a
further discourse, the mother of Violenta which stil stode
at the wyndowe, al the time that Senior Didaco, was with
her doughter, came downe to the doore, interrupting their
« talke, saide to Didaco. Sir, I suppose you take great plea-
« sure, in the follie of my doughter, because you tarie and a-
« bide here, rather to contriue your tyme, then for any other
« contentacion you can receiue. For she is so euill taught, and
« of suche rude behauiour, that her demeanour will rather
« trouble you, then geue you cause of delight. Maistresse said
« Didaco, although in the beginning, I purposed not to tary
« so long, yet when I entred in more familiar acquaintaunce
« and had well experienced her good graces, I confesse that
« I haue staied here, longer then I thought. And were hee
« neuer so great a Lorde, that liueth at this daie, I dare a-
« uouche that he might thinke his tyme well spente, in hea-
« ring suche sober and honest talke, wherewith I thinke my
« selfe so well satisfied and instructed, as all the daies of my
« life I wyll witnesse, that vertue, curtesie, and sober beha-
« uiour is to bee founde, as well in meane degrees and hou-
« ses, as in them that be right noble, amonges which meane
« families, although she be one (it maye so be) that one more
« illustre and noble, can not bee more excellente, and accom-
« plished with better manners, then shee: whiche is nowe
« well manifested to mee, in this litle discourse. And after
certaine other common talke, Didaco tooke his leaue, and
wente home to his house, where hee lyued fourtene or fif-
tene monethes without any reste, assaying by all meanes
to mortifie his desires, but it auayled not: For although
he was ryche, a trymme Courtiar, and an eloquent Gent-

leman,

leman, and had opportunitie to speake vnto her many times, and she gentle enough to heare him, and to vnderstande his errantes, and was assured by frendes that she for her part was also in loue, yet he was not able by humane arte and pollicie, to conuerte her to his mynde. Wherewithall hee was long tyme molested, and at lengthe pressed with griefe and annoyaunce, hee was aduised to sende sixe hundred Ducates to the mother, for a relieue to the mariage of her doughter, promising besides, that he would assigne her an honest dowrie, when she found a man, worthy to be her husbande: vppon condicion that she would yelde to him some comforte, to ease his affection. But shee whiche could not be wonne with loue, was not able to bee recouered with money: and was offended that Senior Didaco had forgotten him selfe so farre, as to thinke to gaine that for money, whiche with so great paine, teares and sighes, had bene denied him. And to make him vnderstande, howe she was offended, shee sent woorde by him, that brought her the money, that he should goe, and proue hereafter to deceiue thē, that measured their honour with the price of profite, and not to sette trappes to deceiue other, that would buye nothing hurtfull to vertue. And after Didaco was aduertised of her minde, and perceiued that he lost time in all his enterprises, and was able no longer to sustaine his extreme paine and sorowe, whiche daily augmented, and when hee had debated in his minde all the successe of his loue, he resolued in the end vpon that, which he thought moste profitable for his quiet, whiche was to marye her. And although she was of no suche house, & yet lesse indowed with substaunce, as he deserued. Yet her beautie and vertue, and other giftes of grace, wherewith she was inriched, made her worthie of a great Lorde. And resolued vpon this, hee repaired to Violenta, to whom he said. Maistresse Violenta, if the true Touchstone, to knowe them that be perfecte louers (amonges other) is mariage, certainly you haue

gotten

« gotten a husbande of me, if it please you to accepte me for « suche one, whome in time you shall make to vnderstande, « the difference betweene goodes and vertue, and betweene « honestie and richesse. Violenta then rauished with ioye, and « incredible contentation, somewhat abashed, sayd vnto him. « Senior Didaco, I knowe not whether you pretende by « woordes, to proue my constancie, or els to bring me into fo- « les paradise: but of one thing I can assure you, that al- « though I acknowledge my selfe inferiour to you in meri- « tes, goodes and vertue, yet if that come to passe which you « promise, I will not geue place to you in Loue, trusting if « God sende vs life together, you shall well vnderstande one « daye, that you would not exchaunge my persone for a grea- « ter Ladie, what so euer she be. For confirmation whereof, Didaco plucked from his finger an Emeralde of great va- lue, which (when he had kissed her) he gaue vnto her in the waye of mariage, praying her that she would not disclose it for a certaine time, vntill he him selfe, had made all his frendes priuie vnto it. Notwithstanding, he willed her to imparte the same to her twoo brethren, and to her mother and he would get some priest of the countrie, to solempnize the mariage within their house: which was doen in a chā- ber, about fower of the clocke in the morning, being onely present the mother, the brethren, the priest, and a seruaunt of the house, brought vp there from her youthe, and his own man, without making any other preparation of coste, requisite for such a matter. In this sorte they spent the day in great ioye and mirthe (which they can conceiue, that be of base birth, and eralted to some highe degree of honour) till night was come, and then euery man withdrewe them selues, leauing the bride and her husbande to the mercie of Loue, and order of the night. Who being alone receiued e- qual ioye, and like contentation, which they fele that being pressed with ardent and greuous thirste, doe in the ende af- terwardes with liuely ioye, & all kinde of libertie, quenche

that

that cruell discommoditie. And continued in those plea-
sures till morning, that daye began to appeare, to whome
Violenta saide. My honourable Lorde and dere husbande, ,,
sithe that you be nowe in possession of that, which you haue ,,
so greatly desired, I humbly beseche you, to consider for the ,,
time to come, howe and what wyse, your pleasure is that I ,,
shall vse my selfe. For if God graunt me the grace to be so ,,
discrete in pleasing you, as I shalbe readie and desirous to ,,
obey you, in all that you shall commaunde mee, there was ,,
neuer gentlemãs seruaunt, that did more willingly please ,,
his maister, then I hope to doe you. Whereunto Didaco ,,
aunswered. My sweete and welbeloued wife. Let vs leaue ,,
this humblenesse and seruice for this time, to them whiche ,,
delight in them. For I promise you of my faith, that I haue ,,
you in no lesse reuerence & estimation, then if you had come ,,
of the greatest house in Cathalongne: as I will make you ,,
vnderstande some other time, at more leasure. But till I ,,
haue giuen order, to certaine of mine affaires, I praye you ,,
to kepe our Mariage secrete, and bee not offended, if many ,,
times I do resorte home to mine own house, although ther ,,
shall no daye passe (by my wil) but at night I will kepe you ,,
companie. In the meane time, to buye you necessaries, I ,,
will sende you a thousande, or twelue hundred Ducates, to ,,
imploye not vpon apparell, or other thinges requisite to ,,
your degree (for I will prouide the same my selfe at an o- ,,
ther time) but vpon small trifles, such as be apt and conue- ,,
nient for housholde. And so departed Senior Didaco from ,,
his wiues house: who did so louingly interteigne him, as
by the space of a yeare, there was no daye, wherein he was
content, without the view and sight of his wife. And vpon
his ofte resorte to their house, the neighbours began to su-
spect, that he kept the mayden, and rebuked her mother &
brethren, but specially Violenta, for suffering Didaco to
vse their house in suche secrete wise. And aboue al, they la-
mẽted the ill happe of Violenta, who being so wel brought
vp, till

vp, till she was twentie yeares of age, and a maiden of such beautie, that there was none in all the citie of Valencia, but greatly did esteme her, to be of singuler honestie and reputation. Notwithstanding, degenerating from her accustomed vertue, they iudged her to be light of behauiour, giuen to lasciuious loue. And albeit that verie many times, such checkes and tauntes were obiected, yet she made smal accompte of them, knowing that her conscience by anye meanes, was not charged with such reproch: hoping therwithall that one daye, she would make them to giue ouer that false opinion, when her mariage should be published and knowen. But certaine times feeling her selfe touched, and her honestie appaired, could not conteine, but when she sawe time with her husband, she prayed him verie earnestlie, to haue her home to his own house, to auoyde slaunder, and defamaciō of neighbours. But sir Didaco knewe so well howe to vse his wife by delaies and promises, as she agreed vnto him in all thinges, and had rather displease ꝑ whole world together, then offende him alone. Being now so attached with the loue of the knight, as she cared for nothing els, but to please and content him in al things, whervnto she sawe him disposed, & like as in the beginning she was harde, and very slacke in loue, nowe she became so feruent and earnest, in her affections as she receiued no pleasure, but in the sight of Didaco, or in that which might cōtent and please him best. Which the knight did easely perceiue, and seing him selfe in full possession of her harte, began by litle and litle to waxe cold, and to be grieued at that which before he compted deare and precious, perswading him self that he should do wrong to his reputation, if that Mariage vnworthy of his estate, were discouered & knowē in the citie: And to prouide for the same, he more seldome tymes repaired, to visite his wife Violenta: yea and when soeuer he resorted to her, it was more to satisfie his carnall pleasure, then for any loue he bare her. And thus forgetting both

ting both God, and his owne conſcience, he frequented other companies in diuerſe places, to winne the good will of ſome other gentlewoman. In the ende by ſundrie ſutes, diſſimulations, and hipocriſies, he ſo behaued him ſelf, as he recouered the good wil of the doughter of Senior Ramyrio Vigliaracuta, one of the chiefeſt knightes, and of moſte auncient houſe of Valentia. And (as we haue declared before) becauſe he was ritche & wealthie, and iſſued of a noble race, her parentes did eaſely agree to ẏ Mariage. And the father hauing aſſigned an honourable dowrie to his doughter, the Nupcials were celebrated publikely, with great pompe and ſolemnitie, to the ſinguler contentation of all men. The Mariage done and ended, ſir Didaco and his newe wife, continued at the houſe of his father in lawe, where he liued a certaine time, in ſuche pleaſure and delectation as they do, that be newly maried. Wherof the mother and brethren of Violenta being aduertiſed, conceiued like ſorowe, as accuſtomably they doe, ẏ ſee the honor of thē that be iſſued of their owne bloud vniuſtly & without cauſe to be diſpoiled. And theſe poore miſerable creatures, not knowing to whom to make their complainte, liued in ſtraunge perplexitie, bicauſe they knew not ẏ prieſt which did ſolempniſe their mariage. On the other ſide, they had no ſufficient proofe of the ſame. And albeit they were able to verifie in ſome poinctes, the firſt mariage of Didaco: yet they durſt not proſecute ẏ lawe, againſt two of the greateſt Lordes of their citie. And knowing the ſtoute hart of Violenta, they thought to conceale ẏ ſame from her for a time, but it was in vaine. For not long after ſhee was certified thereof, not onely by the next neighbours, but by the common brute of the Citie, which reported that in tenne yeres ſpace, there was not ſeen in Valencia, a Mariage more honourable or royall, nor frequented with a nobler companie of Gentlemen & Ladies: then the ſame was of the yōg knight Didaco, with the doughter of Senior Ramyrio.

Where

Wherewithall Violenta vexed beyonde measure, pressed with yre and furie, withdrewe her selfe into her chamber alone, and there began to scratche and teare her face and heare, like one that was madde, and out of her wittes, saying. Alas, alas, what payne and trouble, what vnmeasurable tormentes suffreth nowe my poore afflicted mynde, without comfort or consolation of any creature liuing? What dure and cruell penaunce doe I susteine, for none offence at all? Ah fortune, fortune, the enemy of my felicitie and blisse, thou haste so depriued me of all remedie, as I dare not so muche, as to make any man know or vnderstād my mishap that the same might be reuenged, which being doen would render such content to my mind, that I should departe out of this worlde the beste satisfied mayden that euer died. Alas, that the Goddes did not graunte me the benefite, that I might haue come of noble kinde, to the intent I might haue caused that trayterous ruffien, to feele the grieuous paine and bitter tormentes, whiche my poore harte susteineth. Ah wretched caitife that I am, abandoned and forlorne of all good fortune: nowe I doe see that with the eies of my minde, which with those of my body daseled and deceiued, I could not see or perceiue. Ah cruell enemy of all pitie, doest thou not knowe, and feele in thy minde, the heauie and sorowfull sounde of my bitter plaintes? Understandest not thou my voyce, that crieth vengeaunce vpō thee for thy misdede? Can not thy crueltie in nothing be diminished, seing me dismembred with the terrour of a thousand furious martirdomes? Ah ingrate wretche is this nowe the rewarde of my loue, of my faithfull seruice, and mine obedience? And as she thus bitterly tormented her selfe, her mother and brethren, and her maide, whiche was brought vp with her from her tender yeres, went vp to the chamber to Violenta, where they found her then so deformed with rage and furie, that almoste she was out of their knowledge. And when they went about to reduce her, by al

meanes

meanes possible, from those furious panges: and sawe that it nothing auailed, they lefte her in the keeping of the olde maiden, whom she loued aboue any other. And after the maiden had vttered vnto her particularly many reasons, for ỹ appeasing of her griefe, she told her that if she would be quiet a litle while, she would go & speake to the knight Didaco, and make him to vnderstãd his fault. And would with discrete order so deale with him, that he should come home to her house, and therefore shee prayed her to arme herselfe against this wickednes, and to dissemble the matter for a time, that hereafter she might vse vpõ him iust reuenge No, no Ianique, answered Violenta, that offence is very small and lighte, where counsaile is receiued: and albeit that I cannot chose, but confesse thine aduise to be very meete, yet there wanteth in me, a minde to followe it: ỹ if I did feele any part in me, disposed to obeye the same. I would euen before thy face, separate that minde from my wretched bodie: For I am so resolued in the mallice and hatred of Didaco, as he cãnot satisfie me without life alone. And I beliue ỹ gods did cause me to be borne, w̃ mine owne hands, to execute vengeaunce of their wrath, and the losse of mine honour. Wherefore Ianique if frõ my youth thou diddest euer loue me, shew now the same to me by effect, in a matter whereunto thy helpe is moste necessary: for I am so outraged in my mischiefe, as I do enuie the miserablest creatures of the world, remayning no more in me to continue life in wailing, and continuall sighes, but the title of a vile and abhominable whore. Thou art a straũger, and liuest here a beastly life toyned w̃ continuall labour. I haue twelue hundred crownes, with certaine Iewelles, which that false traitour gaue me, which be predestinated by the heauẽs, for none other purpose, but to paie them their hire, which shall do the vengeaunce vpon his disloyall persone. I doe put the same money nowe into thy hands, if thou wilte helpe mee to make sacrifice, with the bodye of poore

"Didaco: But if thou doest denie me thy helpe, I will exe-
"cute the same alone, & in case he do not die, as I do intende
"he shalbe murdred as I may. For the first time that I shal
"see him with mine eyes, come of it what will, his life shal-
"be dispatched with these two trembling hãds, which thou
seest. Ianique seing her maistresse in these termes, & know-
winge her stoute nature, indued with a manly and inuinci-
ble stomacke, after shee had debated manye thinges in her
minde, shee determined wholie to implove herselfe for her
maistres in that shee was able to doe. Moued partly with
pitie to see her maistres dishonored w̃ a defamed mariage,
and partly prouoked with couetousnes, to gaine so great a
summe of money, which her maistres did offer, if she would
condiscende to her enterprise (thinking after the facte com-
mitted, to flee into some other countrie.) And when shee
was throughlye resolued vppon the same, shee imbraced
"Violenta, and said vnto her: Maistres, if you will be ruled
"by mee, and giue ouer the vehemencie of your wrathe and
"displeasure, I haue found a way for you, to be reuenged vp-
"pon Didaco, who hath so wickedly deceyued you. And al-
"beit the same cannot be doen secretly, but in the end it must
"be knowen: yet I doubte not, but the cause declared before
"the Iudges, and they vnderstandinge the wronge hee hath
"doen you, they wil haue compassion vpon your miserie: who
"know right well that alwayes you haue been knowen and
"esteemed, for a very honest and vertuous maiden. And to ẏ
"ende ẏ you be informed how this matter may be brought
"to passe, first you must learne to dissemble your griefe open-
"lye, and to faine your selfe in anye wise, not to bee offended
"with the new mariage of the knight. Then you shall write
"vnto him a letter, with your owne hande, letting him ther-
"by to vnderstande the paine that you suffer, for the greate
"loue you beare him, and ye shal humblie beseech him, some
"times to come and visite you. And sithe that frowarde
"fortune, will not suffre you to be his wife, yet that it would

please

pleaſe him, to vſe you as his louer, that you maye poſſeſſe the ſecond place of his loue, ſith by reaſon of his new wife, you cannot inioy the firſt. Thus that deceiuour ſhalbe begiled, by thinkinge to haue you at his commaundement, as he was wont to doe. And being come hither, to lie with you, we will handle him in ſuch wiſe, as I haue inuented, that in one nighe he ſhal loſe his life, his wife, and her whō hee thinketh to haue for his louer. For when he is a bedde with you, and fallen into his firſt ſleepe, we will ſende him into an other place, where in a more ſonder ſleepe, hee ſhall euerlaſtinglie continue. Violenta all this time, which fed her bloudie and cruell harte with none other repaſte, but with rage and diſdaine, began to bee appeaſed, and founde the counſaile of Ianique ſo good, as ſhe wholy purpoſed to follow the ſame. And to begin her enterpriſe, ſhee prayde Ianique for a time to withdrawe her ſelfe, vntill ſhee had written her letter, by the tenor whereof ſhee ſhould vnderſtaude with what audacitie ſhee would proſecute the reſte. And being alone in her chamber, takinge penne and paper, ſhe wrote to Didaco, with fayned hart, as followeth.

Senior Didaco I am perſwaded, that if you wil vouchſafe to read, and peruſe the contentes of theſe my ſorowful letters, you ſhalbe moued with ſome compaſſion and pitie, by beholdinge the true Image of my miſerable life, pourtrayed and painted in the ſame, which through your diſloyaltie and breach of promiſe, is conſumed and ſpent with ſo many teares, ſighes, torments and griefes, that diuers times I marualle howe Nature can ſo long ſuppoꝛt, and defende the violente aſſaultes of ſo cruell a martyrdome, and that ſhe hath not many times torne my feeble ſpirite, out of this cruell and mortall priſon: which maketh me to thinke and beleeue, by continuinge life, that death himſelfe hath conſpired my miſerie, and is the companion of my affliction: conſidering that by no torment, ſhe is able to make diuiſion, betweene my ſoule and body. Alas how manye

" tenne hundred thousande times in a day, haue I called for
" death, and yet I cannot make her, to recline her eares vn-
" to my cries. Alas how many times am I vanquished, with
" the sharpe tormentes of sorowe, redie to take my leaue, &
" last farewell of you, being arriued to the extreme panges
" of death. Behold Didaco mine ordinary delites, behold my
" pleasures, behold all my pastime. But yet, this is but litle
" in respect of that, which chaunceth in the night. For like
" happen that my poore eyes do fall a sleepe, weary with in-
" cessant drawing forth of well springes of teares, slombring
" dreames cease not then, to vexe and afflict my minde, wyth
" the cruellest tormentes that are possible to be deuised, re-
" presenting vnto me by their vglie and horrible visions, the
" ioye & contentacion of her, which inioyeth my place: wher-
" by the greatest ioy, which I conceiue, is not inferior to cru-
" ell death. Thus my life maintayned with continuacion of
" sorowes and griefes, is persecuted in most miserable wise.
" Now (as you know) I dailye passe my sorow, vnder paine-
" full silence, thinkinge that your olde promisses, confirmed
" with so many othes, and the assured proofe, which you still
" haue had of my faith and constancie, would haue brought
" you to some order, but now seing with mine eyes, the hard
" mettall of your harte, and the crueltie of my fate, which
" wholie hath subdued mee to your obedience, for respect of
" mine honour: I am forced to complaine of him ỳ beateth
" me, and thereby dispoileth me, both of mine honour & life,
" not vouchsafing onely so much as ones to come vnto mee.
" And vncertaine to whom I may make recourse, or where
" to finde redresse, I appeale vnto you, to thende that seing
" in what leane and vglie state I am, your cruelty maye
" altogether be satisfied, which beholdinge a sighte so piti-
" full, wherein the figure of my tormente is liuelye expres-
" sed, it may be moued to some compassion. Come hither
" then thou cruell manne, come hither I saye, to visite her,
" whom with some signe of humanitie, thou maiest staye,

or at

or at least wise, mollifie and appease the vengeaunce, which » shee prepareth for thee. And if euer sparke of pitie did » warme thy frosen hart, Arme thy selfe with greater cruel- » tie, then euer thou was wont to doe, & come hither to make » her sobbe her laste and extreme sighes, whom thou haste » wretchedly deceiued. For in doing otherwise, thou maiest » peraduenture to late, bewaile my death, and thy beastlye » crueltie. And thinking to make a conclusion of her letter, the teares made her woords to die in her mouth, & woulde not suffer her to write any more: wherefore she closed and sealed the same, and then calling Ianique vnto her, she said. Holde gentle Ianique, carye these letters vnto him, and if » thou canste so well playe thy parte, as I had doen mine, I » hope wee shall haue shortly at our commaundemente, him » that is the occasion of this my painfull life, more greuous » vnto me then a thousand deathes together. Ianique hauing » the letter, departed with diligence, and went to the house of the father in lawe of Didaco, where quietly shee waited, till shee might speake with some of the house, which was within a while after: For one of the seruauntes of Didaco whom she knew right well, wente about certaine his maisters busines, and meeting Ianique, was abashed. Of whō she demaunded, if the Lord Didaco were within, and saide that she would faine speake w̄ him: but if it were possible, she would talke with him secretly. Wherof Didaco aduertised, came forth to her into the streate, to whom smilingly (hauing made to him a fayned reuerence) she said. Senior Didaco, I can neither write nor reade, but I dare laie my life, ther is sute made vnto you by these letters, which Ma- » dame Violenta hath sent vnto you. And indeede to say the » truth, there is great iniurie doen vnto her of your part, not » in respecte of your new Mariage. (For I neuer thought ẏ » Violenta was a wife meete for you, cōsidering ẏ difference » of your estates) but because you wil not vouchsafe to come » vnto her, seeming that you make no more accompte of her »

cc and speciallye for that you prouide no mariage for her in
cc som other place. And assure your selfe she is so farre in loue
cc with you, that she is redie to die, as she goeth, in such wise
cc that making her complaint vnto me this day, weeping, she
cc said vnto me. Well, for so much then as I cannot haue him
cc to be my husbande, I would to God he would mainteigne
cc me for his frende, and certaine times in the weeke, to come
cc to see mee, specially in the night, lest he should be espied of
cc the neighbours. And certainly if you would followe her
cc minde herein, you shall do very well. For the case standeth
cc thus, you may make your auaunte, that you be prouided of
cc so faire a wife, and with so beautifull a frende, as any gen-
cc tlemã in Valentia. And then Ianique deliuered him the
letter, which he receiued and redde, and hauing well consi-
dered the tenor of the same, he was incontinently surprised
with a sodaine passion. For hatred and pitie, loue and dis-
daine (as within a Cloude be conteined hotte and colde,
with many contrary winds) began to combate together, &
to vexe his hart with contrary minds, then, pawsinge vpon
cc answere, he said vnto her. Ianique my dere frende, recom-
cc mende mee to the good grace and fauour of thy maistres,
cc and say vnto her, that for this time I will make her no an-
cc swere, but to morow at fower of the clocke in the morning,
cc I will be at her house, and keepe her companie all the daye
cc and nighte, and then I will tell her what I haue doen, si-
cc thens I departed last from her, trusting shee shall haue no
cause to be offended with me. And then Ianique taking her
leaue, retourned towarde Violenta, telling her what shee
cc had doen. To whom Violenta answeared. Ianique, if thou
cc hast made a good beginninge to our plotted enterprise, I
cc likewise for my part, haue not slept. For I haue deuised,
cc that wee must prouide for a stronge roape, which wee will
cc fasten to the beddes side, and when hee shalbe a sleepe, I
cc will caste the other ende of the rope to thee, ouerthwart
cc the bedde, that thou maiest plucke the same with all thy

mighte, and before thou begynnest to pull, I will with a knife cutte his throate, wherefore thou muste prepare two great kniues, what soeuer they cost, but I pray thee let me alone with doing of the facte, that I may dispatche him of his life, which alone did make the first assault, to the breach of mine honour. Ianique knew so well how to prouide for all that was requisite, for the execution of their enterprise, as there rested nothing but opportunitie, to sort their cruel purpose to effect. The knight sir Didaco, at the houre appointed, tolde his new wife, that he must go into the countrie, to take order for the state of his land: and that he could not retourne, til the next day in the morning. Which she by and by beleued. And the better to couer his fact, he caused two horse to be made redie, and rode forth when the clocke strake iiii. And whē he had riden through a certain streat, he said to his man (which was wonte to serue his tourne in loue matters) carie my horse to such a manour in the Cōtrie, and tarrie there all this day, and to morowe morning come seeke mee in suche a place, when I am gone from the house of Violenta. In the meane time set my horse in some Inne. For in any wise I will haue no man know, that I doe lie there. Which doen the maister and the seruaunte, wente two seuerall wayes. The knight being come to the house of Violenta, he found Ianique tarying for him, with good deuocion, to vse him according to his desert, and conueyed him to the chamber of Violenta, and thē she retourned about her busines. The knighte kissed Violenta, & bad her good morowe, asking her how she did. Whom Violenta aunswered. Sir Didaco, you bid me good morrow in words, but in deede you go about to prepare for me, a heuie and sorowfull life. I beleeue that your minde beareth witnes, of the state of my welfare. For you haue broughte me to such extremitie, that you see right wel, how nothing els but my voice, declareth me to be a woman, and therewithall so feeble a creature, as I still craue and call for

" death, or for pitie, although both of thone and of the other, " I am not heard at all. And yet thincke not Didaco, that I " am so farre oute of my wittes to beleeue, that the cause of " my writing the letter was for hope, that (you remembring " my bitter paines, and your owne hainous crime) I coulde " euer moue you to pitie. For I am perswaded, that you wil " neuer cease to exhaust and sucke the bloud, honor, and life " of them that credite your trumperies & deceiptes, as nowe " by experience, I know by my selfe, with such deadly sorow, " that I still attende and loke for the sorowfull ende of my " life. Didaco seing her thus afflicted, fearing that her cho- lere woulde further inflame, began to cull her, and to take her now into his armes, telling her, that his Mariage with the doughter of Vigliaracuta, was cõcluded more by force, then his owne will and minde, because they pretended to haue a gift of all the lande and goods he had in succession, after his father was dead, which if they did obtain by law, he should be a begger, all the dayes of his life, and that the same was doen, to prouide for the quiet state of them both, and notwithstanding hee had maried an other wife, yet hee purposed to loue none but her, and meant in time to poison his wife, and to spend the rest of his life with her. And thus seeming to remedie his former fault, by surmised reports, chauntinge vppon the cordes of his pleasaunt tongue, hee thought with Courtlike allureměts, to appease her, which had her wittes to well sharpened, to be twise taken in one trap, howbeit for feare of driuing him awaye, and to loose the meane to accomplish that, which she intended, she said vnto him, with forced smiling.

" Sir Didaco, althoughe you haue so ill vsed mee in time " paste, as I haue no greate cause to beleeue your presente " woordes, yet the loue that I beare you, is so rooted in my " harte, as the faulte muste be verye greate, which shoulde " remoue the same: in consideration whereof, I will con- " straine my selfe to beleeue, that your woords be true,

vpon

vpon condicion that you will ſweare, and promiſe to lie
with me here, ones or twyſe a weeke. For me thinke that if
I might at times inioye your preſence, I ſhould remaine
in ſome part of your grace & fauour, & liue the beſt cõtented
woman a liue. Whereunto hee willingly agreed, with a
great nomber of other like proteſtations, prompte and re-
dy in them, which meane deceipt. But in the poore miſera-
ble woman, had perced the ſame in the depth of her harte,
and had credited all that he ſpake, no doubte, he woulde
haue chaunged his minde. Thus either partes ſpente the
daye, in colde and diſſembled flatteries, till darke nighte,
with his accuſtomed ſilence, did deliuer them the meane,
to exercise their cruell facte. So ſone as ſupper was doen,
Didaco and Violenta walked vp and downe together, tal-
king of certaine common matters, till the knight (preſſed
with ſlepe) commaunded his bed to be made redie. It ne-
ded not then to inquire with what diligence Violenta and
Ianique, obeyed his requeſte: in whome onely as they
thought, conſiſted the happe, or miſhappe of their intent.
To whom becauſe Violenta might ſhewe her ſelfe more
affectionate, went firſt to̅ bedde, and ſo ſone as they were
layde, Ianique drewe the curteines, and tooke away Dida-
co his ſwoorde, and making as though ſhe had a thing to
do vnder the bedde, ſhe faſtened the rope, and raked vp the
fire, which was in the chimney, carying a ſtoole to the bed-
des ſide, and layd vpon the ſame twoo great kechin knifes,
which doen ſhe put out the candle, and fayning to goe out
of the chamber, ſhe ſhut the doore, and went in againe. And
then the poore infortunate knight, thinking that he was a-
lone in the chamber with Violenta, began to clepe & kiſſe
her, whereunto ſhe made no refuſal, but deſirous to renew
his old priuate toies, ſhe prayed him, of al loue that he bare
vnto her, to kepe truce for twoo or three howers, for that
the night was lõg inough, to ſatiſfie his deſires, affirming
that it was impoſſible for her to wake, becauſe fiue or ſixe

dayes

dayes before, by reason of her griefes, she had not slept at all, notwithstanding she said, that after her first sleepe, she would willingly obey him. Wherunto the gentlemã was easely perswaded aswell bicause he hadde els where sufficiently staunched his thurst, as also for that he was loth to displease her. And faining her selfe to sleepe, she turned her face, to the other side, and in that wyse continued, till the poore gentleman was fallen into his sound sleepe. Then Ianique softly conueyed the rope ouer his bodye, and gaue it to Violenta, and after she had placed it, according to her minde, as they together had deuised before, she deliuered thende to Ianique, who being at the beddes side satte down vpon the grounde, and folding the rope about her armes, hoisted her twoo feete against the bedde, to pull with greater force, when nede required. Not long after, Violenta toke one of the great knifes, and lifting her selfe vp softlye, she proued with her hand, to seke a place most meete for her to stabbe a hole into her enemies flesh. And inchaunted with wrath, rage, and furie, like an other Medea, thrust the poincte of the knife with suche force into his throte as shee perced it through, and the poore vnhappie man thinking to resiste the same, by geuing some repulse, against that aduerse and heauie fortune, was appalled, who feeling a new charge geuen vpon him againe, specially being intricated with the roape, was not able to sturre hand nor foote, and through the excessiue violence of the paine, his speache and power to crie, was taken away: In such sorte that after he had receiued tenne or twelue mortall woundes one after an other, his poore martired soule departed, from his sorowfull body. Violenta hauing ended her determined enterprise, commaunded Ianique to light the candle, and approching nere the knightes face, shee sawe by and by that he was without life. Then not able to satisfie her bloudye harte, ne yet to quenche her furious rage, which boiled in her stomacke, she with the poinct of the knife tare out the

eyes

eyes frō his head, cryng out vpō them with hideous voice, as if they had ben aliue. Ah traiterous eyes, the messēgers of a mind most villanous, that euer seiorned within the bodie of man: come out of your shameleſſe siege for euer. For the spring of your fained teares, is now exhausted & dried vp. Then shee played the Bocher, vppon those insensible members, continuing still her rage, and cruelly seazed vpō the tongue, which with her bloudy handes, she haled out of his mouth, and beholding the same with a murderous eie, as she was cutting it of, sayd. Oh abhominable and periured tongue, how many lies diddest thou frame in the same, before thou couldest with the Canon shot of this poysoned member, make breache into my virginitie. Whereof now being depriued by thy meanes: I franckly accelerate my self to death, wherūto thou presently hast opened the way. And when shee had separated this litle member from the reste of the body (insaciable of crueltie) with the knife ripped a violent hole into his stomacke, & launching her cruel handes vpon his harte, she tare it from the place, & gashing the same with many blowes, she said. Ah vile hart, harder then the Diamont whose Andeuile forged the infortunate trappes of these my cruel destenies: Oh that I could haue discouered, thy cogitations in time past, as I doe now thy materiall substaunce, that I might haue bene preserued from thine abhominable treaſon, and detestable infidelitie. Then fleashing her selfe vpon the dead body, as a hungry Lion vpon his praye, she lefte no parte of him vnwounded. And when shee had mangled his bodye all ouer, with an infinite number of gashes, she cried out. O infected Carrion, whilom an organ and instrumente, of the moste vnfaithfull and trayterous minde, that euer was vnder the coape of heauen. Nowe thou art payed with deserte, worthy of thy merites. Then shee sayed to Ianique (whiche with great terrour, had all this whyle viewed her playe this pageant) Ianique, I feele my selfe nowe so eased of

payne

"paine, that come death when he will, he shal find me strong
"and lustie, to indure his furious assault, which of long time
"I haue assaied. Helpe me then to traine this corps, out of
"my fathers house, wherein I was first defloured, then will
"I tell thee what thou shalt doe. For like as mine honestie
"is stayned, and published abrode, euen so will I the reuēge
"to be manifeste, crauing that his bodie may be expened, to
"the viewe of all men. Whose request Ianique obeied. And
then she and Violenta toke the body, and threwe it out at
one of the chamber wyndowes, downe vpon the pauement
of the streate, with all the partes whiche she had cut of.
"That done she sayd to Ianique. Take this casket with all
"the money within the same, and shippe thy selfe at the next
"Port thou shalt come to, and get thee ouer into Africa, to
"saue thy life so spedely as thou canst, and neuer come into
"these partes again, nor to any other wher thou art knowē.
Which Ianique purposed to doe, although Violenta had
not consailed her thereunto. And ready to departe, shee
gaue a sorowefull farewell to her maistres, and betoke her
selfe to her good fortune: and from that time forth, no man
could tell whether she went, for all the persute made after
her. So sone as daye appeared, the firste that passed by the
streate espied the dead bodie, whiche by reason of the noyse
and bruite made throughout the towne, caused many peo-
ple to come and see it. But no man knew what he was, be-
ing disfigured, aswell by reason of the eyes torne out of his
head, as for other partes mutilated and deformed. And a-
bout eight of the clocke in the morning, there was suche a
multitude of people assembled, as it was in maner impossi-
ble, to come nere it. The moste parte thought, that some
Theues in the nighte, had cōmitted that murder. Whiche
opinion semed to be true, because he was in his shurte. O-
ther some were of contrary opinion. And Violenta whiche
was at the wyndowe, hearing their sundrie opinions, came
downe, and with a bolde courage & stoute voyce, that euery
man

man might heare, saide. Sirs, you do contend vpon a thing »
whereof (if I were demaunded the question, of the Magi- »
strates of this citie) I am able to render assured testimo- »
nie. And without great difficultie this murder can not be
discouered, by any other but by me. Whiche woordes the
people did sone beleue, thinking that diuers gentlemen ie-
lous of Violenta, had made a fraye. For she had now loste
her auncient reputacion, by meanes of Didaco: who (as
the fame and common reporte was vsed) did keepe her.
When she had spoken those woordes, the Iudges were in-
cõtinently aduertised aswell of the murder, as of ỹ whiche
Violenta had said, and went thither with Sergeauntes &
Officers, where they founde Violenta, more stoute, then
any of the standers by: and inquired of her immediatlye,
howe that murder came to passe, but shee without feare or
appallement, made this aunswere. Hee that you see here »
dead, is the Lorde Didaco. And because it apperteineth to »
many, to vnderstand the trouth of his death (as his father »
in Lawe, his wife, and other kinsmen) I would in their pre- »
sence, if it please you to cause them to be called hither, de- »
clare what I knowe. The magistrates amased to see, so »
great a Lorde so cruelly slayne, committed her to warde til
after dinner, and commaunded that all the before named
should bee sommoned to appeare: Who assembled in the
palace, with such a number of people, as the Iudges could
skant haue place, Violenta in the presence of thē all, with-
out any rage or passion, first of all recompted vnto them the
chast loue betwene Didaco and her, whiche hee continued
the space of fourtene or fiftene monethes, without recei-
uing any fruicte or commoditie thereof. Within a whyle
after (he being vanquished with loue) maried her secretly
at her house, and solempnized the nuptialles by a Priest
vnknowen: declaring moreouer, how they had liued a pere
together in housholde, without any occasion of offence, on
her part geuen vnto him. Then she rehersed before them

his se-

his seconde mariage, with the doughter of such a man, being there present, adding for conclusion, ỳ sith he had made her to lose her honestie, shee had sought meanes to make him to loose his life. Which she executed, with the helpe of Ianique her mayde: who by her aduise being loth to liue any longer, had drowned her selfe. And after she had declared the true state of the matter, passed betwene them, shee sayd for conclusion, that all that she had rehersed, was not to incite or moue them to pitie or cõpassion, thereby to prolong her life, wherof shee iudged her self vnworthy, for if you (q̃ she) do suffer me to escape your handes, thinking to saue my body, you shalbe the cause and whole ruine of my soule, for with these mine owne handes, whiche you see before you, I will desperatly cut of the thred of this my life. And with those wordes she held her peace: wherat the people amased, and moued with pitie, let fall the luke warme teares, from their dolorouse eyes and lamented the misfortune of that poore creature: imputing the fault vppon the dead knight, which vnder colour of mariage had deceiued her. The Magistrates determining further, to deliberate vpon the matter, caused the dead bodie to be buried, and cõmitted Violenta againe to warde, taking away from her, knives and other weapons, wherewith they thought shee might hurt her selfe. And vsed such diligent search and inquirie, that the Priest which maried them, was found out, and the seruaunt of Didaco, that was present at ỳ mariage of Violenta, being examined, deposed how by his maisters commaundement, he caried his horse into the countrie, and how he commaunded him, to come to him againe the nexte morning to the house of Violenta. And all thinges were so well brought to light, as nothing wanted for further inuestigation of the truthe, but onely the confession of him ỳ was dead. And Violenta by the common opinion of the Iudges, was cõdempned to be beheaded: not only for that she had presumed to punishe the knightes trõperie and of-

fence,

fence, but for her excessiue cruelte doen vpõ the dead body. Thus infortunate Violenta ended her life, her mother and brethren being acquited. And was executed in the presence of the Duke of Calabria, the sonne of king Frederic of Aragon: Which was that time the Viceroy there, and afterwardes died at Torry in Fraunce: who incontinently after caused this historie to be registred, with other thinges worthy of remembraunce, chaunced in his time at Valencia. Bandell doth wryte, that the mayde Ianique was put to death with her maistres, but Paludanus a Spaniard, a liue at that time, writeth an excellent historie in Latine, wherin he certainly declareth, that she was neuer apprehẽded, which opinion (as most probable) I haue folowed.

¶ VVantones and pleasaunt life being guides of insolencie, doth bring a miserable end to a faire Ladie of Thurin, whom a noble man aduaunced to high estate: as appereth by this historie, wherein he executeth great crueltie vpon his sayde Ladie, taken in adulterie.

The. xliij. Nouell.

THe auncient and generall custome of the gentlemen, and gentlewomen of Piedmonte, was daily to abandon famous cities and murmures of commõ wealthes to retire to their Castels in the countrie, and other places of pleasure, of purpose to beguile the troublesome turmoyles of life, with greatest rest and contentatiõ. The troubles and griefes, wherof they do feele, that intermedle with businesse of common wealth, whiche was with great care obserued, before the warres had preposterated the order of auncient gouernement, til which time a harde matter it had ben to finde an idle gentleman in a hole ẽtie.

Who

Who rather did resort to their countrie houses with their families, which were so well gouerned and furnished, that you should haue departed so well satisfied and instructed, from a simple gentlemans house as you should haue doen from a great citie, were it neuer so wel ruled by some wise and prouident Senatour. But sithens the world began to waxe olde, it is come again to very infancie, in suche sorte that the greatest nomber of cities, are not peopled in these dayes, but with a many of Carpet Squiers, that make their resiance and abode there, not to profite, but to continew their delicate life, and they doe not onely corrupt thē selues, but (which is worse) they infecte them that keepe them companie, whiche I will discourse somewhat more at large, for so much as the gentlewoman, of whome I describe this historie, was brought vp al ỳ time of her youth, in one of the finest and most delicate cities of Piedmonte. And feeling as yet some sparke of her former bringing vp, she could not be reformed (being in the countrie with her husbande) but that in the ende she fell into great reproche and shame, as you shall vnderstande by the content of that whiche foloweth.

In the time ỳ Madame Margaret of Austriche, doughter of Maximilian the Emperour, went in progresse into Sauoie, towardes her husbande: there was a great Lorde, a valiaunt and curteous gentleman, in a certaine countrie of Piedmonte, whose name I will not disclose, aswell for the reuerence of his nerest kynne, which doe yet liue, as for the immoderate cruell punishemente, that he deuised towards his wyfe, when he toke her in the fault. This great Lorde, although he had goodly reuenues and Castelles in Piedmonte, yet for the most parte of his time, he followed the Courte, by commaundement of the Duke, that interteyned him nexte his owne persone, vsing commonly his aduise in all his greatest affaires. This Lorde at that time maried a mayden in Thurin, of meane beautie, for his

pleasure

pleasure, not esteming the place from whence shee came. And because he was well nere fiftie yeares of age when he maried her, she attired her selfe with such modestie, as she was more like a wydow then a maried woman: and knewe so well how to vse her husvande, the space of a yere or two, as he thought him self the happiest man a liue, that he had founde out so louing a wyfe. This woman being serued, & reuerenced with great honour, waxed werie of to muche reste and quiet, and began to be inamoured of a Gentlemã her neighbour, whom in a litle tyme she knewe so well to vse by lookes, and other wanton toies, as he did easely perceiue it, notwithstanding for the honour of her husband, he would not seme to knowe it, but a farre of. Nowe this warme loue by litle and litle, afterwardes began to growe hot, for the yong woman wearie of suche long delay, not able to content her self with lookes, vpon a day finding this yong gentleman in conuenient place, as he was walking harde by her house, began to reason with him of termes & matters of loue, telling hym that she liued to solitarie, in respect of his yong yeares, and howe shee had alwayes bene brought vp in Townes, and places of great companie, and resorte, in suche wyse as now being in the Countrie, shee could not easely digeste the incommoditie of being a lone, specially for the continuall absence of her husbande, who scarce three monethes in a yeare, remayned at home in his owne house. And so falling from one matter to an other, loue pricked them so sore, as in fine they opened a waye to that whiche troubled them so mutch, and specially the woman: who forgetting her honour, which ordinarily doth accompanie great Ladies, priuely she tolde hym the loue, that she had borne hym of long tyme, whiche notwithstanding shee had dissembled, wayting when hee should haue geuen the fyrst onsette, for that Gentlemen ought rather to demaunde, then to be requyred of Ladies This Gentleman vnderstanding (by halfe a woorde) the cause of her di-

"lease, told her that although his loue was extreme, neuer-
"theleſſe, deming himſelf vnworthy of ſo high degree, he ſtil
"concealed his grief, which becauſe he thought it coulde not
"come to paſſe, feare forced him to kepe it ſilent. But ſithe it
"pleaſed her ſo much to abaſe her ſelfe, and was diſpoſed to
"doe him ſo much honour to accepte him for her ſeruaunte,
"he would implope his indeuour, to recompence that with
"humilitie and humble ſeruice, whiche Fortune had denied
"hym in other thinges. And hauing framed this foundacion
to their loue, for this tyme they vſed no other contentment
one of an other, but onely deuiſe. But they ſo prouyded for
their affaires to come, that they neded not to vſe longer o-
ration. For beyng neyghbours, and the huſbande manye
tymes abſent, the byghe waye was open, to bryng their en-
terpryſes to deſired affecte. Whiche they full well acquie-
ted, and yet vnable wyſely to maiſter and gouerne their
paſſions, or to moderate theim ſelues by good diſcretion,
the ſeruauntes of the houſe (by reaſon of the frequented cō-
munication of the Gentleman, with the gentlewoman)
began to ſuſpecte theim, and to conceiue ſiniſter opinion of
their maiſtreſſe, although none of theim durſte ſpeake of
it, or make other ſemblaunce of knowledge. Loue holding
in full poſſeſſion, the harte of theſe twoo louers, blynded
theim ſo muche, as leauing the brydle, to large for their
honour: they vſed themſelues priuely and apertlye, at all
tymes one with an other, without anye reſpect. And when
vpon a tyme, the Lorde retourned home to his owne houſe
(from a certayne voyage, wherein he had bene in the Du-
kes ſeruice) he founde his wyfe to be more fine and gorge-
ous, then ſhe was wont to be, whiche in the beginning dyd
wonderfully aſtonne him. And perceiuing her ſometimes,
to vtter wanton woordes, and to applie her mynde on o-
ther thynges, when he ſpake vnto her, he began diligent-
ly to obſerue her countenaunce and order, and being a man
broughte vp in courtlye trade, and of good experience, hee

easely

easely was perswaded, that there was some ele vnder that stone, and to come to the trouthe of the matter, hee made a better countenaunce, then he was wonte to doe, which she knewe full well howe to requite and recompence. And liuing in this simulation, either of them attempted to beguile the other, that the simplest and leste craftie of them both, could not be discouered. The yong gentleman, neighbour of the Lord, grieued beyond measure, for that he was come home, passed and repassed manye tymes, before his Castell gate, thinking to get some looke of his Ladies eye: but by any meanes she could not for feare of her husbande, who was not so foolishe, that after he sawe him goe before his gate so many times, without some occasion, but that he easely iudged, there was a secret amitie betwene thē. Certaine dayes after, the gentleman to insinuate himselfe into the Lords fauour, and to haue accesse to his house sent him a very excellent Tercelet of a Faucon, and at other times, he presented him with Uenison, & vmbles of Dere, which he had killed in hunting. But the Lorde (which well knew that flatterie many times, serued the torne of diuerse, to beguile foolish husbands of their faire wiues) that he might not seme vngrateful, sent him also certain straung things. And these curtesies continued so long, that the Lorde, desirous to lay a baite, sent to praye him to come to dyner: to which requeste the other accorded liberally, for the deuotion he had to the sainct of the Castell. And when the table was taken vp, they went together to walke abroade in the fieldes. And that more frendly to welcome him, he prayed his wife to goe with them, whereunto she made no greate deniall. And when they had debated of many thinges, the Lorde sayd vnto him. Neighbour and frende, I am an old man and Melancholie, as you know, wherfore I had neede from henceforth to reioyce my self. I pray you hartely therfore, to come hither many times, to visit vs & therwithal to participate such fare as God doth send. Using the thinges

of my house, as they were your owne. Whiche the other gratefully accepted, humblie praying that his Lordshyp would commaunde him and that he had, when he pleased, and to commaunde him as his very humble and obedient seruaunt. This Pantere layed, the yong Gentleman ordinarely came ones a daye, to visite the Lorde and his wife. So long this pilgrimage continued, vntill the Lorde (vpõ a time, fayning himselfe to be sicke) commaunded that no man should come into his chamber, because all the night before he was ill at ease, and could take no reste. Whereof the Gentlemã was incontinently aduertised, by an old woman, hired of purpose for a common messenger, of whom a none we purpose to make remembraunce. Being come to the Castell, he demaunded how the Lord did, and whether he might go see him, to whom aunswer was made, that he could not, for that he was fallen into a slomber. Madame now was in the garden alone, roming vp and down for her pleasure, & was aduertised that the gentleman was come. Who being brought into the gardeine, and certified of the Lordes indispositiõ, began to renew his old daliaunce with the Ladie, & to kisse her many times, eftsones putting his hand into her bosome, & vsing other prety preparatifes of loue, which ought not to be permitted, but only to the husband. In the meane time, while they twoo had ben there a good space, the husband slept not, but was departed out of his chamber, the space of two houres & more, & was gone vp to the highest place of all his Castell, wher at a very litle window, he might discrie al ẏ was done, within the compasse of his house. And there seing al their curteous offers and proffers, hee waited but when the Gentleman should haue indeuoured himself to procede further, that he might haue thẽ discharged his mortal malice vpon thẽ both. But they fearing that their long abode in the gardein, might ingender some displeasure, retourned into the Castell, with purpose in time to cõtent their desires, so sone as oppor-

tunitie

nitie serued. The Lorde noting all the demeanour betwene them, retourned to his chamber, and so went againe to his bed, faining to be sicke, as he did all the daye before. Supper time come, the Lady went to know his pleasure, whether he would sup in his chamber, or in the hall, he answered (with a disguised cherefull face) that he began to feele himselfe well, and that he had slept quietly, sithens diner, and was determined to suppe beneth, sending that night for the gentlemã, to beare him companie at supper: and could so well dissemble his iust anger, as neither his wife, nor the gentleman perceiued it by any meanes. And so the Lorde with his Lady still continued, the space of fiftene dayes, or three wekes, making so much of her (as though it had ben the first moneth that he maried her) in suche sorte, as when the poore miserable woman, thought to haue gotten victorie ouer her husband and frend, it was the houre that Fortune did weaue the toyle and nette to intrappe her. The Lorde which no longer could abide this mischief, driuen into an extreame choler, seing that he was able to finde no meanes to take them (himselfe being at home) deliberated either sone to die or to prouide for the matter: and the better to execute his determination, he counterfaited a letter from the Duke of Sauoie, and bare it secretly to the Post him selfe alone, and commaunded him next daye to bring it to his Castell, whereby he fained that the Duke had sent the same vnto him. Whiche matter the Post did handle so well, as he brought the letter when he was at supper, with Botes on his legges all durtie and raied, as though he were newly lighted from his horse. And the better to maintain his wife in her error, after he had reade the letter, he gaue it to her to reade: which conteined no other thing, but that the Duke commaunded him, presently with all diligence, himselfe and his traine to come vnto him, to be dispatched vpon Ambassage into Fraunce. That doen he said vnto her. Wife, you see howe I am constrayned to

"part with spede (to my great grief) bid my men therfore to
"be ready in the morning, that they may go before & wayte
"for me at Thurin, where my Lord the Duke is at this pre-
"sent. I my self will departe from hence to morow at night
"after supper, & will ride in Post in the freshe of the night.
And the better to deceiue this poore vnhappie woman, he went into his Closet, and tooke his caskette, wherein was the moste part of his treasure, and deliuering the same vnto her, sayde, that fearing leste hee shoulde tarie long in Fraunce, he would leaue the same with her to helpe her when she wanted. And after all his traine was gone, hee caused one of the yeomen of his chamber, to tary behynde, whose fidelitie he had at other times proued. And all that daye he ceased not to cherishe, and make much of his wyfe. But the poore soule did not forsee, that they were the flatteries of the Crocodile, which reioyseth when he seeth one deceiued. When he had supped, he made a particuler remẽbraunce to his wife how the affaires of his house should be disposed in his absence. And then toke his leaue, giuing her a Judas kisse. The Lorde vnethes had ridden twoo or three miles, but that his wife had sent the olde woman, to carye worde to her louer, of the departure of her husband, & that he might saufly come & lie with her in the Castell, for that all the seruauntes were ridden forth with their maister, sauing one yeoman and her twoo maydes, whiche doe neuer vse to lie in her chamber. Upon this glad newes, the gentleman thought no scorne to appeare vppon that warning, & the old woman knew the waye so well, as she brought him straight into the Ladies chamber, whom Loue inuegled in such wise, as they lay together in the bedde, where the lord was wont to lye. And the olde woman laye in an other bed in that chamber, and shut the doore within. But while these twoo poore passionate louers, thought they had attayned the toppe of all felicitie, and had inioyed with full saile, the fauours of the litle God Cupide, Fortune desirous to de-

parte

parte them, for the last messe of the feast, prepared so bitter Comfettes, as it cost thē both their liues, with such cruell death, as if they which make professiō of semblable things doe take example, wyues will get them better names, and husbandes shalbe lesse deceiued. The Lorde that night, made no longer tracte of time, but lighted from his horse, at the keper of one of his Castles houses, whom he knewe to be faythfull. To whome in the presence of the yeoman of his chamber, he discoursed the loue betwene the gentlemā and his wyfe, and commaunded them with all spede to arme themselues, & with a case of Pistolets to follow him, whom they obeyed. And beyng come to the Castell gate, he sayde to the keper of his Castell. Knocke at the gate, and fayne thy selfe to be alone, and saye that I passing by thy house, did leaue a remembraunce with thee, to cary to my Ladie. And because it is a matter of importaunce, and requireth hast, thou were compelled to bring it this night. Knocking at the gate somewhat softely (for feare lest they whiche were in the chambers should heare) a yeoman rose whiche laye in the Courte, knowing the voyce of the keper (because he was one, whome his Lorde and maister dyd greatly fauour) opened the gate, and the firste thyng they did, they lyghted a Torche, and wente vp all three to the Lordes chamber, not sufferyng anye man to cary newes to the Ladie, of theyr approche. Being come to the chamber dooze, the keeper knocked, whiche immediatly the olde woman hearde, and without opening the dooze, asked who was there. It is I (quod the keeper) that haue brought a letter to my Ladie, from my Lorde my maister, who ryding this nyght in Post to Thurin, passed by my house, and very earnestly charged me, by no meanes to fayle but to deliuer it this night. The ladie aduertised hereof who could not mistruste that her owne man (whome she tooke to bee simple, and voyde of guyle) would haue framed a platte for suche a treason, sayde to the olde woman. Receiue the

letter at the dooze, but in any wyse let him not come in, and
" I will accomplishe the contentes. The olde woman, which
" thought onely but to receiue the letter betwene the dooze,
was astoned when the keper, who (giuing her a blow with
his foote vpon the stomacke) thzewe her backward, where
she laie moze then a quarter of an houre, without speaking
oz mouing. And then they thzee entring the chamber in
great rage, with their Pistolets in their handes, found the
two miserable louers starke naked, who seing them selues
surpzysed in that state, were so soze ashamed as Eue and
Adam were, when their sinne was manifested befoze God.
And not knowing what to doe, reposed their refuge in la-
menting and teares, but at the verie same instaunt, they
bounde the armes and legges together, of the pooze gent-
leman with the chollers of their hoze, which they bzought
with them of purpose. And then the Lozde cõmaunded that
the twoo maydes, which were in the Castell, and the reste
of the seruauntes, should be called to assiste them, to take
example of that faire sight. And all the meane people being
gathered in this sozt together, the Lozde tourning him self
" vnto his wife, saied vnto her. Come hither thou vnshame-
" fast, vile, and detestable whoze, like as thou hast had a harte
" so traiterous and vnfaithfull, to bzing this infamous Ruf-
" fian, in the night into my Castell, not only to robbe and di-
" spoile me of mine honour, which I pzeferre & esteme moze
" then life: but also (whiche is moze to be abhozred) to in-
" fring and bzeake foz euer, the holie and pzecious bande of
" Mariage, wherewithall wee be vnited and knit together.
" So will I forthwith, that with these thyne owne handes,
" with whiche thou gauest me the firste testimonie of thy
" faith, that he pzesently shalbe hanged and strangled in the
" pzesence of all menne, not knowing howe to deuise, anye
" other greater punishemente, to satisfie thyne offence,
" then to foze thee to murder hym, whome thou haste pze-
" ferred befoze thy reputation, aboue myne honour, and

esteemed

esteemed moze then thine owne life. And hauing pzonoun- »
ced this fatall iudgement, he sent one to seeke foz a greate
naile of a Carte, which he caused to be fastened to ẏ beame
of the chamber, and a ladder to be fetched, and then made
her to tie a Coller of the ozder belonginge to theeues and
malefactours, about the necke of her sozowfull louer. And
because she alone was not able to do ẏ greuous and waigh-
tie charge, hee ozdayned that like as the olde woman, had
bin a faithfull minister of his wiues loue, so she should put
her hand in perfozming, the vttermost of that wozke. And
so these two wzetched women, were by that meanes fozced
to such extremitie, as with their owne handes, they stran-
gled the infoztunate Gentleman: with whose death the
Lozd not yet satisfyed, caused the bedde, the clothes, and o-
ther furnitures (wherupon they had taken their pleasures
past) to be burned. He commaunded the other vtensiles of
the chamber to be taken away, not suffring so much straw,
as would serue the couche of two dogges, to be left vncon-
sumed. Then he said to his wife: Thou wicked woman, a- »
monges al other most detestable. Foz so much as thou hast »
had no respecte, to that honourable state, whereunto Foz- »
tune hath aduaunced thee, being made by my meanes, of a »
simple damosell, a greate Ladie, and because thou hast pze- »
ferred the lasciuious acquaintaunce of one of my subiects, »
before the chast loue, that thou oughtest to haue bozne me: »
my determination is, that from hencefozth thou shalt kepe »
continuall company with him, to the vttermost day of thy »
life: because his putrified carcase hath giuen occasion, to »
ende thy wzetched body. And then hee caused all the win- »
dowes and doozes to be mured, and closed vp in such wyse,
as it was impossible foz her to go oute, leauing onely a litle
hole open, to giue her bzead & water: appointing his Ste-
ward to the charge thereof. And so this pooze miserable
woman, remained in the mercie of that obscure and darke
pzison, without any other company, then the deade body of

her

her louer. And when shee had continued a certaine space in that stinking Dongeõ, without aire or comfort, ouercome with sorow & extreme paine, she yelded her soule to God.

¶ The loue of Alerane of Saxone, and of Adelasia the doughter of the Emperour Otho the thirde of that name. Their flight and departure into Italie, & how they were known againe, and what noble houses of Italie descended of their race.

The xliij. Nouell.

THe auncient histories of Princes (as wel vnder the name of kinge, as of the title of Duke, which in time paste did gouerne the Countrie of Saxone) do reporte that Otho the seconde of that name, which was the first Emperour that lawfully raigned (after the Empire ceassed in the stock of Charles ỳ great) had of his wife Matilde doughter of ỳ king of Saxone, one sonne which succeded him in ỳ Imperial crowne, called Otho the third, who for his vertuous education and gentle disposition, acquired of all men the surname of The loue of the world. The same Emperour was curteous & mercifull, and neuer (to any mans knowledge) gaue occasion of griefe to any person, he did good to euery man, and hurt none: likewise he thought, that kingdome to be well gotten, & gotten to be better kept, where the king, Prince or Ruler therof, did studie and seeke meanes to be beloued, rather then feared, sith loue ingẽdreth in it selfe a desire of obedience in the people. And contrarywise, ỳ Prince which by tyrannie maketh himselfe to be feared, liueth not one houre at rest, hauing his conscience tormented indifferently, both with suspition and feare, thinking stil that a thou-

sand

sand swoꝛds be hanging ouer his head, to kill and destroye him. Otho then vnder his name of Emperour, couered his clemencie with a certaine sweete grauitie and pꝛincely behauiour. Who notwithstãding declared an outward shew of curtesie, to make sweete ꝑ egrenes of displeasure, which they feele and taste that be subiect to the obeysaunce of any new Monarchie. Man being of his owne nature so louing of himselfe, that an immoderate libertie seemeth vnto him sweeter, moꝛe iust and indurable, than aucthoꝛities rightly oꝛdained, the establishment wheꝛof, seemeth to ꝛepꝛesente the onely gouernmente of that fiꝛst kinge, which from his high thꝛone, giueth being and mouing to al thinges. That good Emperour then knowinge vetye well the mallice of men, who although he was a good man of warre, hardye of his hands, and desiꝛous of gloꝛie, yet moderated so well the happie succesſe of his enteꝛpꝛises, as his grace and gẽtlenes pꝛincipally appeared, when he had the vppeꝛ hand, foꝛ that he cheꝛished and well vsed those whom he had subdued vnder his obedience, his foꝛce and felicitie was declared when he coꝛrected and chastised rebells, and obstinate persons, which wilfully would pꝛoue the greate foꝛce of a Pꝛinces arme iustly displeased, and to others what fauour a king could vse towards them, whom he knew to be loyal and faithfull: giuing cause of repentaunce, to them which at other times had done him displeasure. And to say the truth, he might be placed in the ranke, of the most happie Pꝛinces that euer were, if the pꝛiuate affaires of his owne house had so happily succeeded, as the renowme which hee wanne in the science of warfare, and in the administration of the commõ wealth. But nothing being stable in the life of mã: This Emperour had in him, that which diminished the gloꝛie of his wisedome, ꝛ (ꝛesembling an Octauius Augustus) ꝑ vnhappie succesſe of his owne house did somwhat obscure, the fame of his noblefactes, and those insolent doinges serued vnto him as a counterpoyse to pꝛosperous

Foꝛtune

Foꝛtune, which may be easely perceiued, by the pꝛogresse & continuation of this histoꝛie. This good Pꝛince had one daughter, in whom Nature had distributed her giftes, in such wise, as she alone might haue vaunted her selfe to attaine the perfection of all them, which euer had any thing, woꝛthy of admiratiõ, were it in the singularitie of beauty, fauour & courtesie, oꝛ in her disposition and good bꝛinging vp. The name of this fayꝛe Pꝛincesse was Adelasia. And when this Ladie was very yong, one of the childꝛen of the Duke of Saxone, came to the Emperours seruice, whose kinsman he was. This yonge Pꝛince, besides that he was one of the fayꝛest and comliest gentlemẽ of Almaigne, had therwithall, together with knowledge of armes, a passing skill in good sciences, which mitigated in him the ferocitie both of his warlike knowledge, and of the nature of his Countrey. His name was Alerane, who seing himselfe the yongest of his house, and his inheritauuce very small, indeuoured to conciliate euerye mans fauour and good will, to remoue his owne Foꝛtune, and to bꝛing himselfe, in esteemation with the Emperour, wherein all thinges hee imployed so well his indeuour, as thꝛough his woꝛthines hee wanne commendation and repoꝛt, to be the most valiaunte and stoutest Gentleman in all ꝯ Emperours Court, which pꝛaise did greatly commend the tendernes of his yong yeares, and was therewithall so sober, and of so gentle spirite, that although he excelled his companions in all things, yet he auoyded cause of offence (shewinge himselfe familiar amonge all the Courtiers.) Euery man (which is a greate matter) pꝛaised him and loued him, and he thought himself most happie, that by any meanes could fashion himselfe to imitate ꝯ vertue, that made Aleranes name so renowmed. And that which made him fuller of admiracion, & bꝛought him into fauour with his Loꝛd and maister was, that vpon a day the Emperour being in hunting alone in the middes of a launde, and in a desert place, it chaunced that a Beare,

issuinge

issuinge out of her caue, was assayled of Hunters: ẏ fierce beaste, auoydinge the toyles and flyinge the pursute of the Dogges, came with greate vehemencie and speede from a Mountaine, & was vpon the Emperour, or he was ware, separated from his companie and without his swoꝛd. But Alerane by good Foꝛtune was at hand, who moꝛe careful foꝛ the safetie of his Pꝛince, than foꝛ his owne life, encountred the Beare, and killed him in the pꝛesence of the Emperour, & many other. All which beholding (to their great astonishmente) the dexteritie and hardines of Alerane at those small yeares: (foꝛ then hee was not aboue the age of xvii. the Emperour imbꝛacing him, did highly commende him, tellinge them that were by, that his life was saued chiefely by Gods assistaunce, & nexte by the pꝛowesse of Alerane. The newes hereof was so bꝛuted abꝛoade, as there was no talke but of the valiaunce & stoutenes of this yong mã of warre, which caused faire Adelasia (moued by naturall instigation, and with the opinion and repoꝛte of ẏ vertue toward in that yonge Pꝛince) to feele a certaine thing (I cannot tell what) in her minde, which inflamed her senses and hart. And she had no sooner caste her eyes vpon Alerane, but Loue, which had pꝛepared the ambushe, so peaꝛsed her delicate bꝛeast, as he toke ful possessiõ of her: in such wyse as the Pꝛincesse was so straungelye in loue wyth the yonge Pꝛince, that she neuer founde pleasure and contentment, but in that, which was done oꝛ said by her louer, whõ she accompted the chiefe of all the men of his time. In this burning heate, she felt the passions of loue so vehement, & his pꝛicks so sharpe, that she could not euapoꝛate the cloudes which darkened her spirites and continuallye toꝛmented her minde. And albeit that the litle occasion, which she saw, foꝛ their comminge together in time to come, did dissuade her from pursuing the thing which she most desired: yet the tyꝛant Loue shewed himselfe very extreame in that diuersitie of thoughts, and varietie of troubles which ver-

ed the

ed the spirite of the Princesse : For shee could not so well dissemble that, which honour and age commaunded her to keepe secrete, but that Alerane which was (as we haue alreadie said) well expert and subtile, perceiued the inwarde disease of Adelasia. Moreouer there was betweene them a naturall conformitie and likelyhode of conditions, which made them to agree in equall desires, to feede of like meates, their passionate mindes were martired with equall sorowe and paine, departed as wel in the one, as in the other. For Alerane by taking carefull heede to the lookes which the Princesse continually did stealingly cast vpon him, saw the often and sodaine chaunces of colour, wherein sometimes appeared ioye, which by and by did ende, with infinite nomber of sighes, and with a coũtenance agreeable to that, which the hart kept secrete and couert, whereby he assured himselfe vnfainedly to be beloued, which caused him to do no lesse (for satisfaction of such like merite and desert, done by Adelasia) but to beare vnto her like affection, forcinge her by all diligence and seruice to continue still that good will toward him, yelding himselfe a pray, to the selfe same loue. Who ruling thaffections of the Princesse, (as braue and pleasaunt as she was) made her sorowfull and pensife, and altered her in such wise, as shee thought the companie wherein she was, did impeach her ioy, which companie she imagined to conceiue the like pleasure, that she did, whẽ at libertie and alone, shee reuolued her troubles, and fansied her contentation in her minde. Alerane on the other side slept not, but as though he had receiued the first wound by the handes of the blinde little archer Cupide, ceassed not to thincke of her, whose Image ordinarelye appeared before his eyes, as engrauen more liuely in his minde than anye forme may be insculped vppon mettall or marble. And yet neither the one nor the other, durste discouer the least passion of a greate nomber, which oppressed their besieged hartes, and which suffered not to liue in anye reste this faire

couple

couple of loyall louers. The eyes alone did thoffice of the handes and tongue, as trustie secretaries, and faithful messengers of the effectes of the minde. That which kindled the fier moste, was their frequente talke together, which was but of common matters, withoute vttcraunce of that which the hart knewe well enoughe, and whereof the eyes gaue true testimonie. A passion truly most intollerable for a yonge Princesse, as well because she neuer had experiẽce of semblable sorow, as for her tender age, and yet more for a naturall abashmente and shame, which with the vaile of honor doth serue, or ought to serue for a bridle, to euery Ladie couetous of Fame, or like to be the ornament or beauty of her race. Adelasia then floting in the tempestuous seas of her appetites, guided by a maister, which delighteth in the shipwracke of them he carieth, vanquished with an immoderate rage of loue, tormẽted with grief vnspeakeable, offended with her owne desires, beinge alone in her chamber, began to complaine her sorowes, and saide: Ah, what passion is it that is vnknowen vnto me, that ingendreth an oblition of that which was wont to delighte and contente me? From whence commeth this newe alteration, and desire vnaccustomed, for solitarie being alone, is the reste and argumente of my troubles? What diuersities and chaunges be these that in this sort do poise & weigh my thought? Ah Adelasia, what happie misetie dost thou finde in this free prison, where pleasure hath no place, till the enemies haue disquieted the life, with a Million of painefull and daungerous trauailes? What is this to say, but ỳ againste the nature of maidens of my yeres I will not, or cannot be quiet day nor night, but take my repast & feeding vpon cares and thoughtes? Alacke, I thought then to finishe my sorowes and griefes, when (being alone) I began to frame the plot of my tormentes and paines, with so many formes and deuises in my fansie, as I do make wishes & requestes vpon the thing I loue and esteeme aboue all, vppon which all

" all mine affections do depende and take their beginning.
" What is this to saye, but that my maydes do offende mee,
" when with discrete wordes they go about to diuert me frō
" my follies and pleasaunt noysome thoughtes? Wherefore
" should not I take in good part the care which they haue of
" my health, and the paine which they take to remember me
" of my torment? Alas, they know not wherein consisteth ẏ
" force of mine euil, and much lesse is it in their power to re-
" medie the same. Euē so I would haue none other plaister,
" but him ẏ hath giuen me the wound, nor none other meate,
" but the hunger that dyeth me vp, I craue none other com-
" fort but the fire which burneth mee continuallye, the force
" wherof pearceth the sucke and marie within my bones. Ah
" Alerane, Alerane, the floure and mirror of all prowesse &
" beautie. It is thou alone that liuest in mee, of whom my
" minde conceyueth his hope, and the hart his nourishment.
" Alas: that thy worthines should be the ouerthrow of mine
" honour, and thy perfection the imperfection of my life. Ah
" Loue, Loue, how diuersly thou dealest with mee. For seing
" mine Alerane, I am attached with heate in the middes of
" ise that is full colde. In thinking of him I do both rest and
" trauaile continually. Nowe I flee from him, and sodainly
" againe, I desire him. In hearing him speake, the Suger &
" Hony, that distilleth from his mouth, is the contentmente
" of my minde, till such time as his words appeare to be dif-
" ferent from my desire. For then ah Lord: my rest is cōuer-
" ted into extreme trauaile, thy honye into gall, and worme-
" woode more bitter, than bitternes it selfe, the hope of my
" mind is become dispayre so horrible, as the same onely wil
" breede vnto me, (if God haue not pittie vpon me) a short re-
" course of death. After these wordes, shee rested a longe time without speaking, her armes acrosse, and her eyes e-leuate on highe, which ranne downe like a Ryuer of teares, & seemed to be so rauished, as a mā would haue iudged her rather a thing withoute life, than a creature sensible,

and

and labouring for life, till, recouering her spirites againe, as comming from an Extasie and sounde, she beganne her plaintes againe in this sort. What: must such a Princesse as I am, abase my selfe to loue her owne subiect, yea & her kinseman, and specially not knowing yet how his minde is disposed: Shall I be so vnshamefast, and voyde of reason, to surrender my selfe to anye other but to him, whom God and Fortune hath promised to be my espouse: Rather death shall cut of the threde of my yeres, than I wil contaminate my chastitie, or that any other enioy the floure of my virginitie, than he to whom I shal be tied in mariage. Ah: I say and promise muche, but there is a tormenter in my minde which dealeth so rigorously with my reason, as I cannot tel wherupon wel to determine. I dare not thincke (which also I ought not to do) that Alerane is so foolish to despise the loue of one, that is the chiefeste of the doughters of the greateste Monarches of the world, and much lesse, that hee should forget himselfe, in such wise, to forsake mee, hauing once enioyed the best and deareste thing that is in mee, and whereof I meane to make him, the onelye and peaceable possessor. Truly the vertue, gentlenes, and good nurriture of Alerane, doe not promise suche treason in him, and that great beautie of his, cannot tell how to hyde such rigor as hee will refuse one that is no deformed and ill fauoured creature, & which loueth him with such sinceritie, as wher she shall lose the meanes to enioy him, there shee shal feele, euen forthwith, the miserable ende of her sorowfull dayes. And then againe she helde her peace, tossed and turmoiled with diuers thoughtes fleetinge betweene hope and feare, by and by, she purposed to deface from her hart, the memorie of loue, which alreadie had taken to faste footinge, and would not be separated from the thing, which heauen himselfe seemed to haue prepared, for the perfection and glorie of his triumphe. Loue then constrayned her, to resolue vpon her laste determination. Then continuinge her

" talke, sighing without ceasing, she said. Chaūce what may
" to the vttermost, I can but wander like a Uagabonde and
" fugitiue with mine owne Alerane (if hee will shew mee so
" much pleasure to accept mee for his own) For sure I am,
" the Emperour wil neuer abide the mariage, which I haue
" promised: and sooner will I die, than another shall possesse
" that which Alerane alone deserueth: hauinge along time
" vowed and dedicated the same vnto him. And afterwards
" let the vulgar sort blabbe what they liste of the bolde and
" foolishe enterprises of Adelasia, when my harte is conten-
" ted and desire satisfyed, and Alerane enioyeth her, that lo-
" ueth him, more than her selfe. Loue verily is not liable to
" the fansie of the parentes, nor yet to the will, euen of them
" that subiungate themselues to his lawes. And besides that
" I shall not be alone amongest Princesses, that haue forsa-
" ken parentes & countries, to folow their loue into straūge
" Regions. Faire Helena the Greeke, did not she abandon
" Menelaus her husbande and the rich citie of Sparta, to fol-
" low the faire Troian, Alexander sailing to Troie? Phe-
" dria and Ariadne, despised the delicates of Creta, lefte her
" father a very old man, to go with the Cecropian Theseus,
" None forced Medea ẏ wife furious Lady (but Loue) to de-
" parte the Isle of Colchos, her owne natiue countrey, wyth
" the Argonaute Iason. O good God, who can resist ẏ force
" of Loue, to whom so many kinges, so many Monarches, so
" many wise men of al ages, haue done their homage? Sure-
" ly the same is the onely cause ẏ compelleth me (in makinge
" my selfe bolde) to forget my dutie towardes my parentes,
" and specially mine honour, which I shall leaue, to be reaso-
" ned vpon, by the ignorannt which considereth nothing, but
" that which is exteriourly offred to the viewe of the sighte.
" Ah: how much I deceiue my selfe, and make a reckeninge
" of much without mine hoste And what know I if Alerane
" (although hee do loue me) will loose the good grace of the
" Emperour, and forsake his goods, and (so it maye bee) to

hazard

hazard his life, to take so poore and miserable a woman as »
I am? Notwithstanding I wil proue fortune, death is the »
worst that can chaunce, which I wil accelerate, rather thã »
my desire shall loose his effecte. Thus the fayre and wise »
Princesse concluded her vnhappie state. And all this time her best frende Alerane, remained in greate affliction, and felt such feare as cannot be expressed with woordes, onely true louers know the force, altogether like to that wherof the yong Prince had experience, and durst not discouer his euill to her, ẏ was able to giue him her allegeaunce, much lesse to disclose it to any deare frende of his, into whose secrecie he was wont to commit the most parte of his cares, which was ẏ cause that made him feele his hart to burne, like a litle fier in the middes of a cleare riuer, and saw him selfe ouerwhelmed within the waters, hotter than those that be intermixed with Sulphure, and do euaporate and sende forth ardente smokes in an AEthna hill or Vesuue mountaine. The Princesse impaciente to endure so long, could no lõger keepe secrete the flames hiddẽ within her, without telling & vttering them to some, whom her minde liked best, and there to render them wher she thought they toke their essense and beinge, castinge away all shame and feare, which accustomablie doth associate Ladies of her estate & age. One day she toke secretly aside, one that was her gouernesse named Radegonde, a Gentlewomã, so vertuous, wise and sober, as any other that was in the Emperours Courte, who for her approued manners and chaste life, had the charge of the bringing vppe and nourishing of Adelasia, from her infancie. To this Gentlewoman then the amorous Princesse deliberated to communicate her secretes, and to let her vnderstande her passion, that shee might finde some remedie. And for that purpose they two retired alone within a closet, the poore louer trembling like a leafe (at the blaste of the weasterne winde, when the Sunne beginneth to spreade his beames (sighinge so

strangely, as if her bodye and soule woulde haue departed, said thus. The trust which euer I haue found in that natu-
" rall goodnes that appeareth to be in you, my mother and
" welbeloued Ladie, ioyned with discretion & fidelitie, wher-
" with all your actes and affayres be recommended, do pre-
" sently assure me, and make me bolde, in this my trouble, to
" participate vnto you my secretes, which be of greater im-
" portance without comparison, than anye that euer I tolde
" you, perswading my selfe that the thing which I shall tell
" you, whatsoeuer it be (be it good or ill) you will accept it in
" suche wyse, as your wisedome requireth, and to keepe it so
" close, as the secrete of such a Ladie as I am, doth deserue.
" And that I maye not holde you longe in doubte what it is,
" knowe ye, that of late the valor, prowesse, beautye, and cur-
" tesie of Senior Alerane of Saxon, hath founde such place in
" my hart, as (in despite of my self) I am so in loue with him,
" that my life is not deare vnto me but for his sake, my hart
" taketh no pleasure, but in his glorie and vertue, hauinge
" chosen him so vertuous a Prince, for my frend, and one day
" (by Gods sufferaunce) for my lawfull spouse and husbād.
" I haue assaied a thousand meanes, and so manye wayes, to
" cast him of, and to blot him out of my remembraunce: But
" alas vnhappie caytife, Fortune is so froward, & so vnmer-
" cifull to my endeuour, as the more I labour and go aboute
" to extinguishe in me, the memorie of his name and commē-
" dable vertues, so much the more I do enlarge & augmente
" them, the flames of which loue do take such increase, as I
" do litle or nothinge esteeme my life, without the enioyinge
" the effecte of my desire, and the taste of suche licour, which
" nourishing my hope in pleasure, may quenche the fier that
" doth consume me. Otherwise I see no meanes possible,
" but that I am constrayned, either to lose my good wittes
" (whereof alreadye I feele some alienation) or to ende my
" dayes with extreme anguishe, and insupportable hartes
" sorowe. Alas, I know well that I shall loose my time, if

I at-

I attempt to pray the Emperour my father, to giue me A- »
lerane to husbande, sith he doth already practise a mariage »
betwene the king of Hungarie and me. And also that Ale- »
rane (although he be a Prince of so noble bloud, and honou- »
rable house, as the Saxon is) yet he is to base to be sonne in »
lawe to an Emperour. In these my distresses, it is of you a- »
lone, of whom I looke for ayde and counsaile, beinge cer- »
taine of your prudence and good iudgement: and therefore »
I pray you to haue pitie vpon mee, and haue remorse vpon »
this immoderate passion, that doth tormente mee beyonde »
measure. Radegonde hearing Adelasia disclose this talke, wherof she would neuer haue thought, was so confounded and astoned, that of long time she could not speake a word, holding her head downe, reuoluing a thousād diuers matters in her minde, knewe not well what to aunswere the Princesse. Finally gatheringe her spirites vnto her, shee aunswered her with teares in her eyes saying. Alas, Madame what is that you saye? Is it possible that the wisest, »
vertuous, & most curteous Princesse of Europa, could suffer herselfe in this sort (through her onely aduise) to be trāsported to her owne affections and sensuall appetites? Is it »
well doen that you seing in me, a discretion and modestie, »
doe not imitate the puritie thereof? Be these the godly admonicions which heretofore I haue giuen you, ỳ you will »
so lightly defile your fathers house with ỳ blot of infamie, »
and your self with eternal reproch? Would you Madame, »
that vpon the ende of my yeares I should begin to betraye »
my Lord the Emperour, who hath cōmitted to my hands »
the most precious Iewell of his house? Shal I be so vncōstant in mine old dayes to become an vnshamefast minister »
of your fonde and foolishe Loue, a thing which I neuer did »
in the ardent time of my youth? Alas, Madame, forget I »
beseech you, this folish order, cast vnder your feete this determination wickedly begonne, such, as to the blemishinge »
of the honourable brightnes of your fame, maye cause the »

ruine of vs all. Follow the counsell of your deare nourice
« Radegonde, whoe loueth you better than her owne soule.
« Quenche these noisome and parchinge flames which haue
« kindled, and throwen forth their sparkes into your chast &
« tender harte. Take heede I beseech you, that a vaine hope
« doe not deceiue you, and a foolishe desire abuse you. Alas:
« thincke that it is the parte of a sage and prudente minde, to
« restraine the first motions of euerye passion, and to resiste
« the rage that riseth in our willes, and the same very oft by
« succession of time, bringeth to it selfe to late and noysome
« repentance. This your thought proceedeth not of Loue: for
« hee that thincketh to sustaine himselfe with venim sugred
« with that drogue, in the ende he seeth himselfe so desperat-
« ly impoysoned, as onely death is the remedie for suche dis-
« ease. A Louer truly may be called ỳ slaue, of a tyrant most
« violent, cruell, and bloudie, that may be found, whose yoke
« once put on, can not be put of, but with painful sorowe and
« vnspeakeable displeasure. Do you not know Madame, ỳ
« loue & follie be two passions so like one an other, that they
« engender like effectes in the minds of those that do possesse
« them: in such wise as the affection of the paciente cannot be
« concealed? Alas, what shall become of you & him that you
« loue so well, if the Emperour do know and perceiue your
« light and fond determinations. Shew Madame for Gods
« sake; what you be. Let the ripe fruits of your prudence, so
« long time tilled, appeare abrode to the worlde. Expell frō
« you this vnruled loue, which if you suffer frankly to enter
« into your hart, assure your selfe he wil take such holdfaste
« of the place, ỳ when you thincke to extrude the enemie out,
« it is he that will driue away that small portion of force and
« reason that resteth in you. And then ỳ comfort of your mi-
« series, wil be the lamentatiō of your losses, and a folowing
« repentaunce for that, which cannot be, by any meanes re-
« couered. Adelasia burning in Loue and fretting with an-
ger, not able to abide contrarie replie to her minde, began

to loke

to loke furiouslie vppon the Ladie, that gaue her suche holsome admoniciō, to whom she said with moze than womānly stoutnes, these wozds. And what are you good gentlewoman, that dare so hardly pzescribe lawes to Loue that is not subiect oz tied vnto the fantasie of men? Who hath giuen you commission to take the matter so hote, against ỳ I haue determined to doe, say you what you can: No, no, I loue Alerane, and will loue him, whatsoeuer come of it. And sithe I can haue none other helpe at your handes, oz meete counsell foz mine ease and comfozt: Be assured that I wil endeuour to finde it in my selfe. And likewise to pzouide so well as I can foz mine affaires, that eschewing the alliaunce which the Emperour pzepareth, I will liue at hartes ease with him, whom (in vaine) you go about to put out of my remembzaunce. And if so be I chaunce to fayle of my purpose, I haue a medicine foz my calamities, which is death, the laste refuge of all miseries. Which will be right pleasaunt vnto me, ending my life, in the contemplation and memozie of the sincere and perfecte Loue, that I beare to mine Alerane. Radegonde no lesse abashed, than surpzised with feare, hearinge the resolution of the Pzincesse, could not at the first make any aunswere, but to make her recourse to teares, the most familiar weapons that women haue. Then seing by the countenaunces of Adelasia, that the passion had set in foote to deepe, foz any to attempt to plucke oute the rootes, from that time fozth shee wiped her eyes, not without euident demonstration (foz all that) of her great grieke conceyued, with infinite sighes, turning her face to the Ladie, shee said to her with pleasaunter coūtenaunce than before. Madame, sith your mishap is such, as withoute Alerane, you cannot bee quiet oz pacifyed in minde, appease your plaintes, wipe awaye your teares, shew your countenaunce ioyful, and setting aside all care, put on good cozage, and repose in mee all your anguishe and trouble. Foz I doe pzomise you, and sweare by the

" sayth that I do owe you, Madame, come whatsoeuer shall
" vnto me. I will deuise in practising your rest to beginne
" mine owne sorow. And then you shall see how much I am
" your frend, and that the words which I haue spoken do not
" proceede els where, but from the desire that I haue to doe
" you seruice, seeking al wayes possible your aduauncement.
" Adelasia at these last words felt such a motiõ in her minde,
as much a doe she had for the exceeding great ioy and plea-
sure she conceiued, to stale her soule from leapinge forth of
that corporall prison (like the spirite of that Romaine La-
die which once lefte the bodye, to descende into the Elisien
fields, to vse the perfection of her ioy with ꝑ blessed soules
there, when she saw her sonne retorne safe and sounde from
the battaile of Thrasimene beside the lake of Perusa,
where the Consull Flaminius was ouercome by Hanni-
ball) but in the ende, the hope to haue that which Rade-
gonde had promised, made her to receiue hart againe, and
" to clepe her counseler, sayinge. God forbid deare mother,
" that the thing you do for me, should rebounde to your mis-
" hap, or discontentmente, sithe the affection which you haue,
" consisteth in the onely pitie and conseruation of a poore af-
" flicted maidẽ. And your desire tendeth to the deliuerance of
" the moste passionate Princesse, that euer was borne of mo-
" ther. And beleeue that Fortune will bee so fauourable,
" that what mischiefe soeuer chaunce, you remaynynge
" without paine, I shall be shee that alone shal beare the pe-
" naunce. Wherefore once againe I beseech you, (sayd shee
" embracinge Radegonde (to bringe that to passe, whereof
" you giue assured hope. Care not you Madame sayde Ra-
" degonde, I truste within a while to make you proue the
" effecte of my promise. And will cause you to speake vn-
" to him whom you desire so muche. Onely be merye, and
" forgette these straunge fashions, in tormentinge your selfe
" so muche before your maides, to the intente that, which
" hitherto hath bin kepte secrete, maye not be reueyled to

your

your great shame and hinderaunce, and to the vtter ruine »
and ouerthrow of me. During all this time, Alerane liued »
in despaire, and hardy cowardise, for although he sawe the amorous gestes of Adelasia, yet he durst fixe no certain iudgement of his owne satisfaction, although his harte tolde him, that he was her onely fauoured friend, and promised him that, which almost he feared to thinke, whiche was to haue her one day for friend, if the name of spouse were refused. Thus tormented with ioye and displeasure, wandering betwene doubt, and assuraunce of that he hoped. The selfe same daye that Adelasia practised with Radegonde, for the obtaining of her ioy, & secrete ministerie of her loue, he entred alone into a garden, into whiche the Princesse chamber had prospect, & after he had walked there a good space in an Alley, viewing diligently the order of the fruitful trees of so diuers sortes, as there be varietie of colours, with in a faire meade, during ẏ verdure of the spring time, and of so good & sauorours taste as the harte of man could wyshe: He repaired vnder a Laurel tree, so well spred and adorned with leaues, about whiche tree you might haue seene an infinite number of Myrtle trees, of smell odorifferous and sweete, of Oringe trees ladē with vnripe fruite, of pliable Mastickes and tender Tameriskes. And there he fetched his walkes a long the thycke and greene herbes, beholding the varietie of floures, whiche decked and beautified the place, with their liuely and naturall colours. He then rauished in this cōtemplation, remembring her which was the pleasure and torment of his minde, in sighing wise began to saye. O that the heauens be not propitious and »
fauourable to my indeuours. Sithe that in the middes of »
my iolities, I fele a new pleasaunt displeasure, which doth »
annihilate all other solace, but ẏ which I receiue through »
the Image painted in my harte, of ẏ diuine beautie, whiche »
is more varieted in perfection of pleasures, than this para- »
dise and delicious place, in varietie of enamel & painting, »

although

althought that nature and art of man, haue wozkemanlye trauailed, to declare and set fozth their knowledge and diligence. Ah: Adelasia the faireſt Lady of al faire, and moſt excellent Pzinceſſe of the earth: Is it not poſſible foz me to feede ſo well of the viewe and contemplation of thy heauenly & Angelicall face, as I doe of the ſight of theſe faire and ſundzy coloured floures? may it not be bzought to paſſe, that I may ſmell, ỳ ſwete bzeath which reſpireth thzough thy delicate mouth, being none other thing, than Baulme Muſke, and Aumbze, yea and that which is moze pzecious, and foz the raritie, and valour hath no name euen as I do ſmell the Roſes, Pincks, and Violets, hanging ouer my head, frankely offering themſelues into my handes? Ah: infoztunate Alerane, there is no floure that ought to be ſo handled, noz ſauoz, the ſwetneſſe whereof ought not to bee ſented without deſert, merited befoze. Ah: Loue Loue, that thou haſt fixed my minde vpõ ſo high thinges. Alas I feare an offence ſo daungerous, which in the ende will bzeede my death. And yet I can not withdzawe my harte, from that ſincke of loue, although I would fozce my ſelfe to expell it from me. Alas I haue red of him ſo many times, and haue heard talke of his fozce, as I am afraid to boozde him, & yet feare, I ſhall not eſcape his gulfe. Alas I knowe well it is he, of whom is engendzed a litle mirth and laughing, after whiche doth followe a thouſande teares, and weapinges, which foz a pleaſure that paſſeth away ſo ſone as ỳ whirlewinde, doth giue vs ouer to great repentaunce, the ſozowe whereof endureth a long time, and ſometimes, his bitterneſſe accompanieth vs euen to the graue. The pacientes that be tainted with that amozous feuer, although continually they dye, yet they can not wholy ſee and perceiue the default and lacke of their life, albeit they do wyſhe and deſire it ſtill. But alas what miſhap is this that I doe ſee the poyſon, whiche cauſeth my miſchiefe, and doe knowe the waye to remedye the ſame, and yet neuertheleſſe I can

not, oz

not, or will not recouer the helpe. Did euer man heare a thing so straunge, as a sicke man seking helpe, and fynding recouerie, should yet refecte it? Saying so, he wepte and syghed so piteously, as a litle chylde threated by his mother the nourice. Then roming vp and downe vppon the grasse, he seemed rather to be a man straught and bounde with chaines, than like one that had his wittes and vnderstanding. Afterwardes being come againe to himselfe, hee retourned to his firste talke, saying: But what? am I more wyse, more constant and perfecte, than so many Emperours, Kynges, Princes, and greate Lordes, who notwithstanding their force, wisedome, or riches, haue bene tributarie to loue? The tamer and subduer of monsters and Tyrants, Hercules, (vanquished by the snares of loue) did not he handle the distaffe in stead of his mightie mace? The strong and inuincible Achilles, was not he sacrificed to the shadowe of Hector, vnder the colour of loue, to celebrate holy mariage with Polixena, doughter to king Priamus? The great Dictator Iulius Cæsar, the conquerour of so many people, Armies, Captaines, and Kinges, was ouercome with the beautie and good grace of Cleopatra, Queene of Egipt. Augustus his successour, attired lyke a woman, by a yeoman of his chamber, did he not take awaye Liuia from him that was first maried vnto her? And that common enemy of man, and of all curtesie, Claudius Nero, appeased yet some of his furie, for the loue of his Ladie? What straunge things did the learned wise and vertuous Monarche Marcus Aurelius indure of his well beloued Faustine? And that greate Captaine Marcus Antonius the very terror of the Romaine people, and the feare of straung & barbarous natiõs, did homage to ỹ child Cupido for ỹ beautie of Queene Cleopatra, which afterwardes was the cause of his vtter ouerthrow. But what meane I to alledge & remember the number of louers, being so infinite as they be? Wherfore haue ỹ Poetes in time past fai-

ned in

" ned in their learned and deuine bookes the loues, of Iupi-
" ter, Apollo, and Mars, but that euery man may knowe, the
" force of Loue to be so puissaunt as the Gods themselues
" haue felt his force to be inuincible and ineuitable: Ah: if
" sometimes a gentleman be excused for abalting himself to
" Loue a woman of base birth and bloud, why should I bee
" accused or apprehended for louing the daughter of the chie-
" fest Prince of Europe? Is it for the greatnesse of her house
" and antiquitie of her race? Why, that is all one betwene
" vs twoo, and toke his original of the place, whereof at this
" daye, my Father is the chiefe and principall. And admitte
" that Adelasia be the doughter of an Emperour: Ah, Loue
" hath no regarde to persons, houses, or riches, rather is he
" of greater commendation, whose enterprises are moste fa-
" mous and haute gestes extende their flight farre of. Now
" resteth then to deuise meanes how to make her vnderstand
" my payne. For I am assured that she loueth me, sauing that
" her honour and yong yeres doe let her, to make it appeare
" more manifest. But it is my proper dutie to make requeste
" for the same, considering her merites, & my small desertes
" in respect of her perfections. Ah: Alerane, thou must vn-
" lose ỳ tongue which so long time, hath ben tied vp, through
" to much fonde and fearful shame. Set aside the feare of pe-
" rill, whatsoeuer it be, for thou canst not implope thy selfe
" more gloriously than vpon the pursuit of suche a treasure,
" that semeth to be reserued for ỳ fame of thy mind so highly
" placed, which can not attaine greater perfections, except ỳ
" heauens do frame in their impressions a seconde Adelasia
" (of whom I thinke dame nature her selfe hath broken the
" moulde) who can not shake of Alerane from the chiefest
" place, in whom he hath layd the foundation of his ioye that
" he hopeth to finde in loue. During these complaintes, Ra-
degonde, that sawe him rauished in that extasie, coniectu-
ring the cause of his being alone, caused him to be called by
a Page: who hearing that, was surprised with a new feare

inter-

intermixt with a secrete pleasure, knowing very well, that she being the gouernesse of his Lady, vnderstode the greatest priuities of her harte, hoping also that she brought him gladsome newes, and setting a good chere vpon his face all mated and confused for troubles past, bee repayred to the Lady messanger, who was no lesse ashamed, for the tale that she must tell, than he was afeard and dombe, by sight of her, whom he thought did bring, the ateste and determination, either of ioye or of displeasure. After curtesie & welcoms done betwene them, the Lady preambled a certayne short discourse touching the matter, to do ỹ Saxon Prince to vnderstande, the good will and harty loue of Adelasia towarde him, praying him that the same might not be discouered, sith the honor of his Lady did consiste in the secretie thereof, assuring him, that he was so in fauour with the Princesse, as any true and faithfull louer could desire to be for his content. I leaue to your consideration, in what so- » dayne ioye Alerane was, hearing suche gladsome newes » whiche he loked not for, and thought he was not able to rẽ- » der sufficient thankes to the messanger, and much lesse to » extolle the beautie and curtesie of his Lady, who without » any of his merites done before, (as he thought) had him in » so good remembraunce. Beseching moreouer Radegonde, » that she would in his name do humble commendations to » his Lady, and therewith to confirme her in the assuraunce » of his perfect good will, & immutable desire, euerlastingly » at her commaundement, onely praying her, that he might » saye vnto Adelasia, three wordes in secrete, to thintent shee » might perceiue his harte, and see the affection, wherewith » he desired to obey her al the dais of his life. The messanger » assured him of al that he required, and instructed him what he had to doe, for the accomplishement of that he loked for, which was, that the next day at night, she would cause him to come into her Warderobe, which was adioyning to the Chamber of his Lady, to the ende that when her maydes

were

were a bed, he might repaire to the place where he might easely visite his maistresse, & say vnto her what he thought good. The compact thus made, the Lady returned to the
" Princesse, that wayted with good deuotion for the newes
" of her beloued. And hearing the report of Radegonde, shee
" was not contente ỳ she should make repetition of the same, twise or thrise, but a million of times and euen till night, that she slept vpon that thought, with the greatest rest, that she had receiued in long time before. The morrowe at the houre that Alerane should come, Adelasia fayning her self to be ill at ease, caused her maydes to goe to bed, making her alone to tarie with her: that was the messanger of her loue, who a litle while after, went to seeke Alerane, whiche was a building of Castels in the ayre, fantasying a thousand deuises in his minde: what might befall of that enterprise he went about: notwithstanding he was so blinded in folly, as without measuring the fault which he committed, he thought vpon nothing but vppon the present pleasure, which semed to him so great as the chamber wherein hee was, seemed not sufficient to comprehend the glory of his good houre. But the Princesse on the other part, felte a maruellous trouble in her minde, and almoste repented, that she had so hardely made Alerane to come into a place vndecent for her honour, and at a time so inconuenient. Howbeit seing that the stone was throwen, shee purposed not to pretermitte the occasion, which being balde can not easely be gotten againe, if she be once let slip. And whiles she traueiled in these meditations and discoursed vppon that shee had to doe, Radegonde came in, leading Alerane by the hande, whom she presented to the Princesse, saying to her
" with a verie good grace. Madame, I deliuer you this pry-
" soner, whom euen nowe I founde here, betwene your chã-
" bre and that wherin your maydes lye: now consider what
" you haue to doe. Alerane in the meane tyme, was fallen downe vpon his knees before his sainct, wholly bent to cõ-

template,

templat, her excellēt beautie and good grace, which made him as dumbe as an Image. Shee lykewyse beholding hym that made her thus to erre in her honestie, forced through shame and loue, could not forbeare to beholde him the power of her mynde wholy transferred into her eyes, that then yelded contentation of her harte whiche shee so long desired. In the ende Alerane holding the handes of Adelasia, many tymes did kisse them, then receiuing courage, he brake of that long silence and began to saye thus. "I neuer thought (Madame) that the sight of a thing so lōg "desired, had bene of such effect, as it would haue rauished "both the mynde and bodye, of their proper duties and natu- "rall actions, if nowe I had not proued it, in beholding, the "diuinitie of your beautie moste excellent. And truely Ma- "dame Radegonde dyd rightly terme this place here, my "pryson, considering that of long tyme I haue partly loste "this my libertie, of the whiche I feele nowe an intire alie- "nation. Of one thing sure I am, that being your prysoner, "as I am in deede, I may make my vaunt and boast, that I "am lodged in the faireste and pleasauntest pryson, that a mā "can wyshe and desire. For which cause Madame, be wel ad- "uised, how you do vse and entreate your captiue and slaue, "that humbly maketh petition vnto you, to haue pitie vpon "his weakenesse, which he will accept as a grace vnspeakea- "ble, if of your accustomed goodnesse, it may please you to re "ceiue him for your owne, for that henceforth, hee vowth & "consecrateth his life, goodes, and honour, to your com- "maundemente and seruice. And saying so, his stomake pan- "ted with continuall sighes, and from his eyes distilled a ryuer of teares, the better to expresse and declare the secret force, that made hym to vtter these woordes. Which was the cause that Adelasia embrasing hym very louingly, ma- "de aunswere thus. I knowe not (Lorde Alerane) what pry- "son that is, where ỳ prisoner is in better case, than the pry- "son of whom he termeth himselfe to be the slaue, cōsidering "

that I

cc that I fele in me such a losse of my selfe, as I can not tell
cc whether to go, or where to retire, but euen to him that cra-
cc ueth the same fredome, whereof I my selfe doe make re-
cc queste. Alas my welbeloued Alerane, into what extremitie
cc am I brought, the very great loue that I beare you, for-
cc ceth me to forget my dutie, & the ligneage whereof I come,
cc yea and mine honor, which is more to bee esteemed than all
cc the reste. But I repose in you such affiance, as you will not
cc deceiue, so simple a Ladie as I am, vtterly voyde of guyle
cc and deceit. Who, if you be tormented, liueth not without
cc griefe and sorrowe, altogether like vnto yours. If you doe
cc sighe, I am wholly spent and consumed in teares. Do you
cc desire reste? Alas: I wishe & craue the same vnto vs both,
cc that be now sundred and deuided, whiche can not be aqui-
cc red, except they be vnited which before were wholly sepa-
cc rated. Radegonde interrupting their talke, smilingly said,
cc And how can this separation be combined, where the par-
cc ties them selues do liue in such disiunctions? You say true
cc Madame, saide Alerane, for, the perfection of vnitie, consi-
cc steth in the knitting of that which is separated. Wherfore
cc (Madame sayd he to Adelasia) I humbly beseech you, aswel
cc for your comfort as my rest, not to suffer this diuision to be
cc to long, sith the outward bound shall combine the same so
cc inwardly, as very death shall not bee able hereafter to de-
cc face or diminishe the same. If I may assure my selfe sayde
cc she of your fidelitie, it so may come to passe, as I wold giue
cc you a very great libertie, but hearing tell so many times of
cc the inconstancie and fickle trust of men, I will be contented
cc with my first fault, without adding any further aggraua-
cc tion, to fasten and binde that, which I do specially esteme.
cc Alas Madame sayd Alerane, doe you thinke, that the prouf
cc of my fidelitie may receiue greater perfection, by enioying
cc the pleasures that I hope for, than it doth alredy? No, no
cc Madame, and therefore be sure of my harte & stedfastnesse.
cc For sooner shall my body fayle, than defaulte in me to serue

and ho

and honor you, if not accoꝛding to the woꝛthinesse of your »
estate, yet by al meanes, so farre as my power shal stretch. »
And can you finde in your hart to conceiue, that your Ale- »
rane would play the traitour with her, foꝛ whose seruice he »
feareth not to aduẽture a thousand liues if God had geuen »
him so many? Adelasia be spꝛent all with teares, was in an »
extasy oꝛ traunce. Which Alerane perceiuing and saw that
Radegonde was gone into ẏ warderobe, to suffer them to
talke their fill: he began to take possession of her mouthe,
redoubling kisse vpõ kisse, sometimes washed with teares,
sometime dꝛied vp, with frequent vse thereof, leauing nei-
ther eye noꝛ cheke vnkissed: and seing the pacience of his
Lady, he sealed vpon her white, harde, and round bꝛeastes,
whose pappes with sighes moued and remoued, yelding a
certaine desire of Alerane to passe further. Which Adela-
sia perceiuing, dissembling a swete anger and such a chafe
as did rather accende the flames of the amoꝛous Pꝛince,
than with moiste licour extinguishe the same, and making
him to geue ouer the enterpꝛise, she fiercely sayd vnto him.
How now (Sir Alerane) howe dare you thus malapertly »
abuse this my secret frendship, in suffering you to come so »
frankely into my chamber. Thinke not ẏ although I haue »
vsed you thus familiarly, that I can be able to suffer you, to »
attempt any further. Foꝛ (if God be fauourable to cõserue »
me in my right wittes) neuer man shal haue that aduaun- »
tage, to gather ẏ floure of my virginitie, but he with whõ »
I shall be ioyned in mariage. Otherwyse I shall bee vn- »
woꝛthy, bothe of my honourable state, and also of that man »
what soeuer he be, woꝛthy of estimation and pꝛeferrement. »
So I thynke to Madame, aunswered Alerane. Foꝛ if it »
woulde please you to doe me that honour, to receiue me foꝛ »
your faythfull and loyall espouse, I sweare vnto you by »
hym that seeth and heareth all thynges, that neuer any o- »
ther shall bee maistresse of Aleranes harte, but the fayꝛe »
Pꝛincesse Adelasia. She that asked no better, after mutche »

talke betwene them, in the ende cõdescended, that Alerane should geue his faith to marrie her, and to conuey her out of the courte, till the Emperour were appeased for their committed fault. Thus had the Saxon Prince, the full possession of his desires, and caried away the pray so long time sought for. Radegonde was she, that receiued the othes of their espousalles, and capitulated the articles of their secrete mariage. And after the determination made of their flying awaye, and a daye thereunto appointed, the two Louers entred the campe, to make proufe by combate of their hardinesse, and assaye of their trauayle in tyme to come, wherein they thought for euer to perseuere and continue. Beyng a bedde then together, they did consumate, the bande that straygtly doth bynde the harte of Louers together, intiring the vnion diuided, whiche before they thought imperfect and could not be accomplished but by inward affections of the minde. And God knoweth howe this new maried couple vsed their mutuall contentation: But sure it is, that they continued together vntil the morning had vncouered from the night her darkenes, euen to the point of day, that Alerane was somoned by Radegonde to depart, who to conclude his former ioye, very louingly kissed his newe wife, and sayd vnto her. Madame, the felicitie that I fele nowe, by enioying that which vniteth me so nerely being indissoluble and neuer hereafter to be broken, semeth so great as no perill whatsoeuer doth happen, can make me forget the least part of my ioye. So it is that seing the state of our present affaires, and fearing the daunger that may chaunce, I will for this time take my leaue of you, and goe about to put the same in order, that no negligence may slacke your ioye and desired pleasure. Ah: sir (saith she) that my hart forethinketh both the best & worste of our intended enterprise. But to the intent we may proue our fortune, by whose conduction we must passe, I doe submitte my selfe, to the wisedome of your mynde, and to the

good

good succesſe that hetherto hath accompaignied all your »
indeuours. And then they kiſſed and embraced again, drin- »
king vp one anothers teares, which diſtilled from them in »
ſuch aboundaunce. Thus Alerane departed from his La- »
dies chamber, and went home to his owne houſe, where he ſolde all his goodes at ſmall price, making men to vnderſtand, that he would employ ꝑ money otherwiſe in things whereof he hoped to recouer greater gaine. With that money he bought precious ſtones, and pretie Iewels, that he might not be burdened with cariage of to much gold, or other money, and then he put his males and bougets in readineſſe to go with his wife either of them in the habite and apparell of pilgrimes, faire and ſoftly a foote, not be diſcouered. Which was done in the night. The princeſſe fayning her ſelfe to be ſicke, made her maydes to withdrawe themſelues into their chamber, and then ſhe went into the garden where Alerane firſte made his plaintes, as you haue heard before: in whiche place her huſbande taried for her. God knoweth whether they renewed their paſtime begon the daye of their mariage, but fearing to be taken, they began to playe the comedie, the actes whereof were very long and the ſcrolle of their miſeries to prolixe to carie, before they came to the Cataſtrope and ende of their comicall action. For leauing their ſumptuous and riche apparell, they clothed themſelues with Pilgrims attire, taking ꝑ Skallop ſhell & ſtaffe, like to them that make their Pilgrimage to S. Iames in Galliſia. The Princeſſe toke the perſonage of a yong wench, ruffling her heare whiche ſhe had in time paſt ſo carefully kempt, curled, and trimmed with gold & iewels of inestimable value, wherein conſiſteth the chiefeſt grace of the beautie and ornament of the woman. Who is able to deny, but that this naturall humour and paſſion, borne ſo ſone as we, whiche they call Loue, is not a certayne eſſence and being, the force and vigor whereof, not able to abide compariſon. Is it no ſmall matter, that by the

only instinction of Loues force, the doughter of so great a Prince, as the Emperour of the Romaines was, shoulde wander like a vagabonde in dissembled tire, and poorely cladde, to experiment and proue the long trauaile of iourneyes, the intemperature of the ayre, the hazarde to meete with so many theeues and murderers, which wayte in all places for poore passengers, and moreouer, to feele the bitternesse of trauayle, neuer tasted before, the rage of hunger, the intollerable alteration of thirst, the heate of hotte Sommer, the coldenesse of wynters yce, subiect to raines, and stormy blastes: doth it not plainely demonstrate that Loue hath either a greater perfection, than other passiõs, or els that they which feele that alteration, be out of the number of reasonable men, endued with the brightnesse of that noble qualitie. This fayre Lady recouering the fields with her husband, with determination to take their flight into Italie, was more ioyfull, freshe, and lusty, than when she liued at ease amonges the delicates & pleasures, which she tasted in her fathers court. See howe fortune and loue are content to be blinde, closing vp the eyes of them, that followe their trace, & subdue them selues to their edictes, and vnstable dispositions. And truely this rage of loue was the only meane to dulcorate and make swete the bitter gal of griefe whiche those twoo louers felte, defatigated almoste with tedious trauaile iudging their wearinesse a pastime and pleasure, being guided by that vnconstante captaine, whiche maketh dolts and fooles wyse men, emboldeneth the weake hearted and cowardes, fortifieth the feeble, and to be shorte, vntieth the pursses and bagges of couetous Carles, and miserable Misers. Nowe whyles our faire pilgrimes, without any vowed deuocion, were abrode at their pleasures (beyng wery with the waye, they had trauepled all nighte) the morrowe after their departure, all the Emperours house was in a great hurly burly and stirre, for the absence of Adelasia. The wayting maydes cried

des cryed out, and raged without measure, with such shrichinges, that the Emperour moued with pitie, although his griefe and anger was great, yet he caused euery place there aboutes to be searched, and sought, but all that labour was in vaine. In the ende, perceiuing the absence of Alerane, suspected that it was he, that had stolen away his fayre doughter, whiche brought him into such passion and frensie, as he was like to runne out of his wyttes & transgresse the boundes of Reason. Ah traytour sayd the good Prince. Is this the guerdon of good turnes, bestowed vpō thee, and of the honour thou hast receiued in my company? Do not thinke to escape scot free thus without the rigorous iustice of a father, deserued by disobedience, and of a Prince, against whom his subiect hath committed villany. If God geue me lyfe, I wyll take such order, as the posteritie shall take example by that iuste vengeaunce whiche I hope to take of thee (arrant theefe, and despoyler of my honor and consolation.) And thou vnkynde doughter shalte smartely feele the wrong done to thy kynde, and welbeloued father, who thought to prouide for thee, more honourably than thy disloyaltie and incontinencie, so farre as I see, doe merite and deserue, sythe that without my leaue, and respect of thy vocation, thou hast gotten thee a husband worthy of thy folly, with whom I hope to make thee vnderstand thy fault, & my displeasure which I receiue through thy shamefull acte, so reprochfull, specially in her, which is the doughter of such a father as I am, descended of ỹ moste royall race within ỹ circuit of Europe. Many other things the Emperour sayd, in great rage and furie. And in thend commaunded, that one should go into Saxone, to knowe if Alerane had conueied his stolen doughter thither: but he could bring no newes at all from thence. He assaied then if he could learne any tidinges of them by other meanes, causing by sound of Trumpet to be cried in all the townes confining that if any persone could bring him worde, or do him

to vnderstande certaine and sure newes of those twoo fugitiues, he would geue them that, wherewith they should be contented all the daies of their life. But he wan so much by this thirde serche, as he did by the firste twoo. Whiche thing the Maiestie of God, semed to permit & suffer as wel for the happy successe that chaunced afterwardes, as for ỹ punishing of the rashe enterprise of two Louers, whiche liued not very long in prosperitie and ioy, but that they felte the hande of God, who sometime suffereth the faithfull to fall, to make him acknowledge his imbecillitie, to the ende he may confesse, that all health, sustenaunce, reste, and comfort, is to be attended and looked for at the handes of God. When Alerane and his Lady were gone out of a citie with in the Emperours lande called Hispourge, being come into a certaine wilde & desert places, they fell into the lapse of certaine theues, which stripped Alerane into his shirte, and had done as mutch to the poore Princesse, if certaine Marchaũtes, had not come betwene, which forced ỹ theues to flie. Alerane was succoured with some clothes to couer his bodie, and releued with a litle summe of money, which being spent, those twoo kinges children were constrained to begge, and aske for Gods sake relefe to sustaine their infortunate life. Whiche distresse was so difficulte for Alerane to disgest, as he was like (standing vppon his feete) to die for sorrowe and want, not so mutch for the aduersitie whereunto he was brought through his owne fault, as for the pitie that he toke vpon his deare beloued Lady, whome he sawe in so lamentable state, and knew that she might attaine her auncient dignitie and honour againe, if she listed to preferre reward or prise before his life, for which she spared not the very last drop of her bloud. She knowing the dolor and anguishe that her husbande endured, comforted
" him very wisely with ioyfull countenaunce, saying. Howe
" now deare husband, thinke you that fortune is or ought to
" be still fauourable to Princes and great Lordes? Do you

not know

not knowe that great hulkes and shippes do soner perishe
and drowne in maine seas and riuers amiddes the raging
waues and surges, than in narrowe floudes and brookes,
where the water is still and calme? Doe you not see great
trees, whose toppes doe rise aloft, aboue high hilles & steepe
mountaines, soner shaken and tossed with blustering win-
die blastes, than those that be planted, in fertile dales and
lowe valleis? Haue you forgotten so many histories, by you
perused and read with so great delight, when you were in
the Emperours court? Doe not they describe the chaunge
of Monarches, the ruine of houses, the destruction of one
Realme acquired, by the establishing & raigne of an other?
What Prince, Monarch, or Captaine was euer so happy,
as hath not felt some griefe and misfortune? Alas sweete
heart, thinke that God doth chastise vs with his roddes of
tribulatiõ, to make vs to know him: but in the meane time,
he kepeth for vs, a better fortune that wee looke not for.
Moreouer he neuer forsaketh thẽ which with a good heart
do go vnto him, hauing their affiaunce in his great good-
nesse and infinite mercie. Alerane hearing the wise talke of
his wife, could not forbeare weeping, and sighing aunswe-
red her in this maner. Ah Lady, in beautie & wisedom in-
comparable, it is not the present Fortune that causeth my
minde to wander and straye from the siege of constancie,
knowing well the qualities and number of Fortunes sna-
res, and how ielous she is of humaine ioye and felicitie. I
am not ignorant that she layeth her ambushes, & doeth be-
set the endeuours, soner of personages that bee noble and
of highe parentage, than of those whose heartes be base
and vnnoble, and their victories not able to attain any iote
of honour and fame. But (good God) saide he (embracing
his deare beloued spouse) it is for you Madame, that I en-
dure tormente, hauing made you to abandon the pompe of
your estate, & bereued from you a king to be your husband,
causing you thus to feele an horrible and newe kinde of pu-

nishement, hunger and famine (I meane) in the middes of
cc the desertes and wilde places, and therewithall haue ioy-
cc ned you in companie with an infortunate felowshippe, who
cc in steade of comfort and solace, ministreth teares & sighes.
cc O God most high and puissant, howe profounde and darke
cc are thy iudgementes, and howe righteous is thy iustice. I
cc acknowledge mine offence to be the cause of thyne anger, &
cc the originall of our trespasse, and that this paine chaunceth
cc to vs for our sinnes, which haue so wickedly betraied, the
cc best Prince of the world, and forsakē the companie of him,
cc at whose bountifull handes, I haue receiued, better inter-
cc tainement and greater honour, than I deserued. Ah Em-
cc perour Otho, that thou art so well reuenged nowe, with
cc cowardly fraude and deceipt committed, against thee by
cc Alerane of Saxone, taking away her from thee, which was
cc the staffe and future staye of thy reuerend age. And as he
was perseuering in this talke, Adelasia (seing him in that
contemplation) plucked him by the arme saying. Sir it is
cc time to consider our own affaires, we haue trauailed I can
cc not tell how farre without rest, me thinke (our fortune be-
cc ing no better) that we ought to remaine in some place attē-
cc ding for the grace & mercy of God, who (I hope) wil not for-
cc sake vs. They were then in Liguria in the desarts, betwene
cc Ast & Sauonne, a countrie in that time well peopled, & fur-
nished with huge and darke forestes, garnished with many
trees, great and highe. By the aduise then of Adelasia, the
Saxon Prince forced by necessitie (ỳ maistresse of all artes)
retired into those forestes where he practised the occupatiō
of a Collier, and some said, that nature taught him, the or-
der howe to cutte his woode, to make readie his pittes, and
to knowe the season and tyme when his coales were bur-
ned enough. Great paines he susteined about his businesse,
and went himself to sell his coales, which he bare vpon his
shoulders, to the next market townes, tyll he had gayned
so mutche as bought him an Asse, wherewith he dayly tra-

uailed

uailed to vtter his coales, and other deuises which neede had forced him to learne. In this time Adelasia was deliuered of a goodly child, whom they named VVilliam. And afterwards, by succession of time, she bare sixe sonnes more. For they dwelt almost xviii. or xx. yeares in that poore and miserable life, and had dressed vp a litle lodging within a caue, that was faire and brode, wherein verye trimly and well they had bestowed themselues. When the eldest of their sonnes was growē to the stature of a pretie stripling, the father sent him sometime to Sauonne, and sometime to Ast, to sell their litle marchandise, for releefe of their housholde. But the boy, whose bloud could not conceale and hide the nobilitie of his birth, hauing one day sold certaine burdens and loades of woode and coale: bought with that money a faire yong Hauke, which he caried vnto his father. The good man gently rebuked his sonne, and said, ẏ suche game belonged not to men of their degree, and that they had much a do to liue, without employing their money vpon such trifles. Long time after, VVilliam being arriued to ẏ age of xvi yeares, went to Sauonne, to sell certaine ware by his fathers commaūdement, and with the money he bought a very fayre sword, which when his father saw, with teares in his eyes, he went aside and said to himselfe. Ah vnfortunate ladde, ẏ thy hard lucke, should do thee this great wrong: truely neither the pouertie of thy parentes, nor the place of thy bringinge vp, can deface in thee: the secrete shining brightnes, of thine Auncestors vertue, nor the prediction of thy courage and manhode in time to come, if God giue the grace to aduaunce thee, to the seruice of some noble Prince. Notwithstāding for that time he ceassed not sharpely to rebuke and threaten his sonne, in such wyse as the yong man hauing a hart greater than his force, determined secretly to depart from his parentes. Now fortune chaunced so wel and apt for his purpose, as then and at the verye same time, the Hongarians were entred Italye to

spoile

spoile and robbe the countrie, against whom ỳ Emperour marched in greate expedicion, with an huge and goodly armie, of purpose to force them to leaue his lande in peace. VVilliam hauinge knowledge hereof, proceeded towarde the Emperours campe, where hee shewed in deede greate hope (being of so smal yeares) of his future valiaunce, and prowesse, by the deedes of armes that hee did, during that warre. Which ended and the enemie put to flighte, the Emperour wente into Prouance, to put in order his affaires in his realme of Arles, which then was subiecte to the Empire. Afterwards he retired into Italy with deliberation to soiorne at Sauonne, for a certaine time, which displeased VVilliã nothing at all, because he should remaine harde by his parentes, who were very carefull for his well doing, vtterly ignorant where he was become. And notwithstandinge, a hope (what I knowe not) made them expect of their sonne, som good fortune in time to come, who was now grown great and of goodly perfection, one of the most valiaunt souldiours, that were in the wages and seruice of his Maiestie. Which very brauely he declared in a combate, ỳ he fought man to man with an Almaine souldiour ỳ was hardy, big made, & feared of all men, whom neuertheless he ouercame in the presence of ỳ Emperor his graundfather. Who, I know not by what natural inclination, daily fixed his eye vpon ỳ yong Champion, & began to beare him more good will than anye other in his Courte, which was an occasion, ỳ an auncient Gentleman, seruing in the Princes Courte, stedfastly beholding the face, behauiour & countenaũce of VVilliam, seemed to see a picture of the Emperour when he was of his age, which was more exactlye viewed by diuers other, that were brought vp in their youth with Otho. Wherof being aduertised, he caused the yong man to be called forth, of whom he demaũded the names of his Parentes, and the place where hee was borne, VVilliam ỳ was no lesse curteous, humble and wel

mane-

manered, than wise, valiant and hardie, kneeled before the Emperour with a stoute countenaunce, resemblinge ẏ nobilitie of his Auncestours: answered. Most sacred and renowmed Emperour, I haue nothinge whereof to render thanckes to fortune, but for the honour, that your maiestie hath done vnto me, to receiue mee into your noble seruice. For the fortune and condition of my parentes, be so base, ẏ I blushe for shame to declare them vnto you. Howbeit being your humble seruaunte, and hauing receiued fauour of your Maiestie, not commonly emploied, your commaundement to tell you what I am, I will accomplish as well for my bounden dutie, wherewith I am tied to your maiestie, and to satisfie that which it pleaseth you to commaund me. Be it knowen therefore vnto your Maiestie, that I am the sonne of two poore Almaines, who flying their owne countrie, withdrew themselues into the desarts of Sauonne, where (to beguile their hard fortune) they make coales, & sel thē, to sustaine and relieue their miserable life: In which exercise I spent all my childhod, although it were to my great sorowe. For my hart thought (Sir) that a state so vile, was vnworthy of my corragious minde, which dailye aspired to greater thinges, and leauing my father and mother, I am come to your seruice, to learne chiualry and vse of armes, & (mine obedience saued to your maiestie) to finde away to illustrate the base and obscure education, wherein my parētes haue brought me vp. The Emperour seinge the courteous behauiour of the ponge man, by this wise aunswere, remembring the similitude of his face, which almoste resēbled them both suspected that he was the sonne of Alerane and his doughter Adelasia, whoe for feare to be knowen, made themselues citizens of those desertes, albeit ẏ VVilliam had told him other names, & not the proper appellatiōs of his father & mother. For which cause his hart begā to throbbe, and felt a desire to see his doughter, and to cherishe her with like affection, as thoughe he had neuer conceiued

ceiued offence and displeasure. He caused then to be called vnto him a gentleman, the nere kinsmanne of Alerane, to whom he said with merie countenaunce and ioyful cheere.

cc You do know as I thincke the wrong and displeasure that
cc your cosin Alerane hath done me, by the rape and robberie
cc committed vppon the person of my doughter: you are not
cc ignorant also of the reproch wherwith he hath defiled all
cc your house, committed a felonie so abhominable in my
cc Courte, and againste mine owne person, which am his so-
cc ueraigne Lorde. Notwithstanding, sith it is the force of
cc Loue, that made me forget him till this time, rather than
cc desire of displeasure, I am very desirous to see him, and to
cc accepte him for my sonne in lawe, and good kinsman, verye
cc willing to aduaunce him to that estate in my house, which
cc his degree and blond do deserue. I tell you not this with-
cc out speciall purpose. For this yong souldiour, which this
cc daye so valiantly and with such dexteritie vanquished hys
cc aduersary, by the consente of all men, which haue knowen
cc me from my youth, doth represente so well my figure and
cc lineamentes of face, which I had when I was of his age,
cc as I am perswaded, and do stedfastly beleeue, that he is my
cc Neuew, the sonne of your cosin Alerane and my doughter
cc Adelasia. And therefore I will haue you to goe with this
cc yonge man, into the place where bee shall bring you, and to
cc see them that be his parents, because I purpose to do them
cc good, if they be other, than those whom I take them. But
cc if they be those two that I so greatly desire to see, doe mee
cc so much pleasure as I may satisfie my hart with that con-
cc tẽtation, swearing vnto you by the crowne of my Empire,
cc ꝑ I will do no worse to them, nor otherwise vse them, than
cc mine own proper person. The gẽtleman hearing ꝑ louing
cc & gentle tearmes of ꝑ Emperour, saide vnto him. Ah sir I
cc render humble thankes vnto your Maiestie, for the pitie ꝑ
cc you haue, vpon our dishonored race & ligneage of Saxone,
cc dedecorated and blemished throughe Alerane's trespasse a-

gainst

gainst you. I pray to God to recompence it(we being vna- »
ble)and to giue you the ioye that you desire, and to mee the »
grace that I may do some agreeable seruice both in this & »
in all other things. I am readie(Sir)not onely to go seeke »
my cosin(if it be he that you thincke it is) to carie vnto him »
those beneficiall newes which your Maiestie hath promi- »
sed by word, but rather to rẽder him into your hands, that »
you may take reuengement vppon him for the iniurie that »
he hath done to the whole Empire. No no said the Empe- »
rour, the desired time of reuenge is passe, and my mallice a- »
gainst Alerane hath vomited his gall. If in time passe I »
haue thristed to pursue the ruine and ouerthrowe of those »
two offenders, nowe I goe about to forsee and seeke their »
aduauncement and quiet, considering the longe penaunce »
they haue taken for their fault, and the fruite that I see be »
fore mine eyes, which is such that it maye by the smell and »
fragrant odour thereof, suppoyte the weakenesse and debi- »
litie of my olde yeares, and constraineth mee(by the ver- »
tue therof)to haue pittie vpon his parents, which (through »
their owne ouerthrowe) haue almost vtterly consumed me. »
Those words ended the good Prince gaue euident testimo- »
nie of desire to see his onely doughter, by the liuely colour that rose in his face, and by certaine teares running downe alõg his hoare & frostie beard. Then he caused Vvilliã to come before him, and commaunded him to conduct the gẽtleman, to that part of the forest, where his father dwelled. Whereunto the ponge man readily and with all his harte obeyed. Thus the Lord Gunforde (for so was Aleranes cosin called) accompanied with his litle cosin, & manye other gentlemen, went toward the place, wher the Colliar Princes remained. And when they were neere the craggie caue, the lodging of Alerane: ẏ whole companie lighted of their horse, and espied him busie about the lading of his coales to sende to Ast. For the arriuall of ẏ Emperour to Sauonne, staied Alerane from going thither himselfe, by reason his

con-

conscience still grudged for his fault cõmitted against him. Alerane seing this goodly cõpanie, was abashed, as though horns had sodenly started out of his head, & yet the sighte of his sonne richly furnished, and in the company of Gunfort his cosin, did more astonne him. For he suspected incõtinentlye that hee was discouered, and that the Emperour had sente for him to be reuenged of the faulte so long time paste committed. And as he had imagined diuers thinges vppon his harde fortune within his fancie. His sonne came to embrace him vppon his knees, and to kisse his hands, wõ
" an honest and humble reuerence, saying to Gunfort. Sir,
" this is he of whom I told ỳ Emperour, and of him I toke
" my being: This is my father. All this while the good fa-
ther embraced his sonne very hard, & weeping for extreme
" ioy, said vnto him. Alas my sonne, if thy cõming be so hap-
" pie vnto mee as it is ioyfull, if thy newes be good & prospe-
" rous, which thou bringest: thou dost reuiue thy father half
" deade, and from lamentable dispaire, thou doest replenishe
" and fill him with suche hope, as one day shall be the staie of
" his age, and the recouery of his greatest losses. The sonne not able to abide the discourse of his parents affaires, could not comprehend any thing at that pitiful meting: but stode still so astonned, as though he had bin fallen from ỳ clouds. Now during this time, ỳ the father & the sonne thus welcomed one an other: Gunfort toke heede to al the countenaunce and gestures of Alerane. There was no part of the Colliers bodie that he forgat to view: and yet remembring the voyce of his Cosin, & seing a woũd ỳ he had in his face, was sure that it was hee. And then with his armes stretched forth he came to clepe Alerane about the necke, whom he made to loke redde with his warme teares, saying. Ah:
" Alerane, ỳ present torment now, but in time past, the plea-
" saunt rest, of oure race. What Eclipse hath so longe obscu-
" red the shining Sunne of thy valiaunt prowesse: why haste
" thou concealed so longe time, thy place of retire from him,

which,

which desired so much thine aduauncement? Hast thou the
hart to see the teares of thy cosin Gunfort running downe
from his eies vppon thy necke, and his armes embracinge
thee with such loue and amitie, as he cãnot receiue the like,
except he be something moued by thee, in seing thy louing
entertainment? Wilt thou denie that, which I knowe, by a
certaine instinct and naturall agreement, which is, ẏ thou
art Alerane ẏ sonne of the duke of Saxone, & so renowmed
throughout all Germany? Doest thou pretende (throughe
thine owne misfortune so rooted in thy harte by liuinge in
these wilderneſſe) to depriue thy sonne of the honor, which
the heauens and his good fortune haue prepared for him?
Ah cruel and pitileſſe father, to suffer thy progenie to be bu
ried in the tombe of oblition, with eternall reproche. O
vnkinde kinsman toward thy kindred, of whõ thou makeſt
so small accompte, that wilt not vouchsafe to speake to thy
cosin Gunfort, ẏ is com hither for thy cõfort, & the aduaũce
ment of thy familie. Alerane sore ashamed, as well for the
remembrance of his auncient fault, as to see himselfe in so
poore estate before ẏ Emperours gallants, answered Gũ-
fort, saying. My Lord & cosin, I beseech you to beleeue, that
want of desire to make my complaint vnto you, & lacke of
curteſie to entertaine you, haue not made me to forget my
dutie towardes you, being as well my neare kinseman, as
such one to whõ I haue done wrong & very great iniurie,
by offending the Emperour. But you do knowe of what
puiſſance the prickes of conſcience bee, and wt what worme
she gnaweth the hart of them, which feele themselues cul-
pable of crime. I am (as you saide) the present misshap of
our house, for the opinion that the Emperour hath concei-
ued of my folly, & shal be the reſt (if you wil do me so much
pleasure to rid me out of this miserall life) both of you and
of the minde of a father iustly displeased against his dough-
ter, and the quiet of a Prince offended with his subiecte.
For I sweare vnto you by my fayth, that I neuer soe
much

"much desired like, as I nowe do couet death, for that I am
"assured, that I being deade, my poore companion and wel-
"beloued wife, shall liue at her ease, enioyinge the presence
"and good grace of her father. What meane you so to saye,
"answered Gunfort. The Emperour is so well pleased and
"appeased, as he hath sworne vnto mee to receiue you as his
"sonne in law, and my Lady your wife as his deare beloued
"doughter, whom I pray you to cause to come before vs, or
"to signifie vnto vs where shee is, that I may doe reuerence
vnto her as to my Princesse & soueraigne Ladie. VVilli-
am was all amased, and almost besides himselfe, hearinge
this discourse, & thought hee was either in a dreame or els
inchaunted, till that Alerane called his wife by her proper
name, who was so appalled to heare the word of Adelasia,
that her hart was sodainly attached with terror and feare,
when she saw so great a company about her husband. And
then her sonne came to doe his dutie, not as to his mother
onely, but as to the doughter of an Emperour, and ỹ wife
of a Prince of Saxon. She againe embraced & kissed him,
althoughe shee was surprised with feare and shame, and so
moued with that sodaine sighte, as shee had much a doe to
keepe herselfe from fainting and falling downe betweene
the armes of her sonne, and thought that she had passed the
place where Gunfort was, who going towarde her, after
his reuerence & duetie done, made her vnderstand ỹ charge
hee had, and the good will of the Emperour, which deter-
mined to receiue her againe with so good order and enter-
tainemẽt as might be deuised. Which earnest words made
them to resolue vppon the proufe of fortune, and to credite
the promises, that Gunfort made them in the Emperours
behalfe. Thus they forsoke the Caue, their Coales & for-
naces, to reenter their former delightes & pleasures. That
nighte they lodged at a billage not farre from the foreste,
where they tarried certaine dayes, to make apparell for
these straunge Princes, and so wel as they could to adorne

and

and furnishe Adelasia,(who being of the age almost of 34. or 35. yeares, yet manifested some part of the perfection of that deuine beautie, and modest grauitie, which once made her marueilous and singuler aboue all them that liued in her dayes.) In the time that this iolye company had furnished and prepared themselues in readinesse, Gunfort sente a gentleman of that troupe, toward the Emperour, to aduertise him of the successe of their iourney. Wherof he was exceeding ioyful, and attended for the comming of his children, with purpose to entertaine them in louing and honorable wise. When all thinges were in readinesse and the traine of Adelasia in good order, according to ẏ worthines of the house whereof she came, they rode toward Sauonne, which iourney seemed to them but a sport, for the pleasure mixte with compassion that eche man conceiued, in the discourse that Alerane made vpon his misfortunes and chaũces, as well in his iourneis, as of his abode & continuaũce in the desarts. Which VVilliam calling to remẽbraunce, praised God, and yelded him thanckes, for that it had pleased him to inspire into his minde, the forsaking of his parentes, considering ẏ the same ouely fault, was the cause of their restitution, and of his aduauncement & glorie, being the sonne of such a father, and the neuew of so great a Monarche. The fame of whose name made all men quake and tremble, and who then had commaunded all the troupe of the gentlemen of his court, to go & seeke ẏ forlorne louers, so long time lost and vnknowẽ. To be short, their entrie into Sauonne, was so royal & triumphant, as if the Emperor himself would haue receiued the honour of such estate, and pompe. Which he commaunded, to be done as well for the ioy ẏ he had recouered the thing, which he accompted lost, as to declare and acknowledge to euery wight, that vertue cannot make herselfe better knowen: than at ẏ time, when the actions and deedes of great personages be semblable in raritie and excellencie, to their nobilitie. For a prince is

of greater dignitie and admiration, than he commonly sheweth himselfe, which can neuer enter into the heade of the popular sort, who waie the affectiõs of other, with the balance of their owne rude & beastly fansies. As the Greeke Poet Euripides in his tragedie of Medea, doth say.

Ill luck and chaunce thou must of force endure,
Fortunes fickle stay needs thou must sustaine
To grudge therat it booteth not at all,
Before it come the witty wise be sure:
By wisedomes lore, and counsell not in vaine,
To shun and eke auoyde. The whirling ball,
Of fortunes threates, the sage may well rebound
By good foresight, before it light on ground.

The Emperour then hauing forgotten, or wisely dissembling that which he could not amende, met his doughter & sonne in lawe, at the Palace gate, with so pleasaunt cheere and ioyfull countenance, as the like long time before he did not vse. Where Alerane and Adelasia being light of from their horse, came to kisse his handes (and both vppon their knees) began to frame an Oration, for excuse of their fault, and to pray pardon of his Maiestie. The good Prince rauished with ioy, and satisfied with repentaũce, stopped their
cc mouthes with sweete kisses and hard embracings. O hap-
cc pie ill time (said he) and sorowful ioy, which now bringeth
cc to me a pleasure more great, than euer was my heauy dis-
cc pleasure. From whence commeth this my pleasaunt ioye?
cc O wel deuised slight, by the which I gaine that (by preser-
cc uinge my losse once made and committed) which I neuer
cc had: if I may so say, considering the ornamẽt of my house,

and

and quietnesse of my life. And saying so, hee kissed and em- ,,
braced his litle Neuewes, & was loth that Adelasia should ,,
make rehersall of other talke but of mirthe and pleasure. ,,
For (said he) it sufficeth me that I haue ouerpassed & spent ,,
the greatest part of my life in beauinesse, vtterly vnwilling ,,
now to renewe olde sores and wounds. Thus the mariage ,,
begon, vnknowen and againste the Emperours will, was consummate and celebrated with great pompe and magnificence, by his owne cõmaundement, in ẏ Citie of Sauonne, where he made sir VVilliam knight, with his owne hand. Many goodly factes at the Tourney and Tilte were done and atchieued, whereat VVilliã almost euery day bare away the prise & victorie, to the great pleasure of his father and contentacion of his graundfather, who then made him Marques of Monferrat. To the seconde sonne of Alerane, he gaue the Marquisat of Sauonne, ẇ all the appurtenances and iurisdictions adioyning, of whom be descended the Marqueses of Caretto. The third he made Marques of Saluce, the race of whom is to this daye of good fame and nobilitie. Of the fourth sonne sprange out ẏ original of the house of Cera. The fifte was Marques of Incise, whose name and progeny liueth to this daye. The sixt sonne did gouerne Pouzon. The seuenth was established Senior of Bosco, vnder the name and title of Marques. And Alerane was made and constituted, ouerseer of the goods and dominions of his children, and the Emperours Lieutenaunt of his possessions which he had in Liguria. Thus ẏ Emperoure by moderatinge his passion', vanquished himselfe, and gaue example to the posteritie, to pursue the offence before it doe take roote: but when the thinge cannot be corrected, to vse modestie and mercie which maketh kinges to liue in peace, and their Empire in assuraunce. Hauinge taken order with all his affayres in Italye, hee tooke leaue of his doughter and children, and retired into Almaine. And Alerane liued honourably amonges his

people was beloued of his father in Lawe, and in good reputacion and fame, arriued to old yeares, ſtill remembring that aduerſitie oughte not to bring vs to diſpaire, nor proſperitie, to inſolencie or ill behauiour, and contempt of thinges that ſeeme ſmall and baſe, ſithe there is nothing vnder the heauens that is ſtable and ſure. For he that of late was great and made all men to ſtoupe before him, is become altogether ſuch a one as though he had neuer beene, and the poore humble man aduaunced to that eſtate, from whence the firſte did fall and was depoſed, makinge lawes ſometimes for him, vnder whom he liued a ſubiect. And behold of what force, the prouidence of God is, and what poiſe his balance doth containe, and how blame worthy they be that referre the effectes of that deuine counſel to the inconſtant and mutable reuolucion of Fortune that is blinde and vncertaine.

¶ The Ducheſſe of Sauoie, being the kinge of Englands ſiſter, was in the Duke her huſbandes abſence, vniuſtlye accuſed of adulterie: by a noble man, his Lieutenaunte. And ſhoulde haue beene put to death, if by the proweſſe and valiaunt combate of Don Iohn di Mẽdozza, (a gentleman of Spaine) ſhe had not beene deliuered. VVith a diſcourſe of maruelous accidentes, touchinge the ſame, to the ſinguler praiſe and commendation, of chaſte and honeſt Ladies.

The. xlv. Nouell.

LOue commõly is counted the greateſt paſſiõ, amongs all the moſt greuous, that ordinarily do aſſault ỹ ſpirites of men, which after it hath once taken hold of anye gentle ſubiecte, followeth the nature of ỹ corrupt humour, in thoſe that haue a feauer, which taking his beginning at ỹ harte, diſper-

diſperſeth it ſelfe incurablye, throughe all the other ſenſible partes of the bodie: whereof this preſent hiſtorie giueth vs amplie to vnderſtand, being no leſſe maruelous, than true. Thoſe that haue read the aunciente hiſtories and Chronicles of Spaine, haue ſene in diuers places the occaſion of ỹ cruell ennimitie, which raigned by the ſpace of xl. yeares, betweene the houſes of Mendozza and Tolledo, families not onely righte noble and aunciente, but alſo moſt aboundante in riches, ſubiectes and ſeignories of all the whole Realme. It happened one day ỹ their armies being redie to ioyne in battaile, ỹ Lord Iohn of Mendozza chief of his armie, a man much cõmended by al hiſtories, had a widow to his ſiſter, a very deuoute Lady, who after ſhe vnderſtode the heauie newes of that battaile, falling downe vppon her knees, praied God inceſſauntly, that it would pleaſe him to reconcile the two families together, and to make an ende of ſo manye miſchiefes. And as ſhe vnderſtode ỹ they were in the chiefeſt of the conflicte, and that there were a greate nomber ſlaine on both partes, ſhe made a vow to God, that if her brother retorned victorious from that enterpriſe, ſhe would make a voyage to Rome on foote. The ouerthrowe fell after much bloudſhead) vpon them of Tolledo. Mendozza brought away the victorie, with the leſſe loſſe of his people. Wherof Iſabell aduertiſed, declared vnto her brother, the vow ỹ ſhe had made. Which ſeemed very ſtraung vnto him, ſpecially how ſhe durſt enterpriſe ſo longe a voyage on foote, and thoughte to turne her purpoſe, howbeit, ſhe was ſo importunate vppon him, as in the ende hee gaue her leaue, with charge that ſhe ſhould go wel accompanied and by ſmall iourneis, for reſpect of her health. The Ladie Iſabell being departed from Spaine, hauing trauerſed the mountaines Pirenees, paſſed by Fraunce, went ouer ỹ Alpes, and came to Thurin, where the Duke of Sauoye had then for wyfe, a ſiſter of the kinge of Englande, whoe was reputed to be the faireſt creature of the Weſte partes

of the woꝛld. Foꝛ this cauſe, the Lady Iſabel deſiꝛed greatly, in paſſing by, to ſee heꝛ, to know whether tꝛuth did aunſwere the great renowne of heꝛ beautie. Wheꝛein ſhe had Foꝛtune ſo fauouꝛable, that entring into Thuꝛin, ſhe foũd the Ducheſſe vpon heꝛ Coche, goinge abꝛoade to take the ayꝛe of the fields. Which the Lady Iſabell vnderſtandinge, ſtayed to behold heꝛ, being by foꝛtune at that pꝛeſent at the dooꝛe of heꝛ Coche. And then with great admiration, conſidering the wonderfull beautie of that Pꝛinceſſe, iudging heꝛ ꝑ chiefeſt of beautie of al thoſe that ſhe had euer ſeene, ſhe ſpake ſomewhat loude in the Spaniſh tongue, to thoſe of heꝛ companie, in this maneꝛ. If God woulde haue permitted, that my bꝛother & this Pꝛinceſſe might haue maꝛried together, euery man might well haue ſaid, that there had bin mette the moſte excellente couple, foꝛ perfection of beautie, that were to be found in all Europa And heꝛ woꝛdes in deede were tꝛue. Foꝛ the Loꝛd Mendozza was eũe one of the faiꝛeſt knightes, that in his time was to be foũd in all Spaine. The Ducheſſe whoe vnderſtoode the Spaniſhe tongue veꝛy well, paſſing foꝛth, behelde all that companie And layninge as thoughe ſhee had not vnderſtande thoſe woꝛdes, thoughte that ſhee ſuꝛely was ſome greate Lady. Wheꝛefoꝛe when ſhee was a litle paſſte heꝛ, ſhe ſaide to one of heꝛ Pages. Maꝛke whether that Ladye and heꝛ companye go to theiꝛ lodging, and ſay vnto heꝛ, that I deſiꝛe heꝛ, (at my ꝛeturne) to come and ſee mee at my caſtell, which the Page did. So the Ducheſſe walking a long the ꝛiuer of Poo, muſed vppon the woꝛds ſpoken by the Spaniſhe Ladye, which made heꝛ not longe to taꝛie theꝛe, but toke the waye backe againe to heꝛ Caſtel, wheꝛe being aꝛꝛiued, ſhe founde the Lady Iſabell, who at the Ducheſſe ꝛequeſt, attẽded heꝛ with heꝛ company. And after dutiful ꝛeuerence, the Ducheſſe with like gꝛatulacion, ꝛeceiued heꝛ veꝛy curteouſlie, taking heꝛ a paꝛt, and demaunding heꝛ, of what pꝛouince of Spaine ſhee was, of what houſe, and

what

what Fortune had brought her into that place. And then the Lady Isabell made her to vnderstand, from the beginninge, the occasion of her longe voyage, and of what house she was. The Ducheſſe vnderstanding her nobilitie, excused her selfe, for ỳ shee had not done her that honour which shee deserued, inputinge the faulte vpon the ignorannce of her estate. And after diuers other curteous communications, the Ducheſſe prested her to know whereunto the wordes tended that she had spoken of her, and of the beautie of her brother. The Spanishe Lady somewhat abashed, saide vnto her. Madame, if I had knowen so much of your skill in our tongue, as now I do, I would haue beene better aduised, before I had soe exalted the beautye of my brother, whose praise had beene more commendable in the mouth of another. Yet thus much I dare affirme, (without affection be it spoken,) as they that know him can report, that hee is one of the comliest gentlemen that Spaine hath bredde these twenty yeares. But of that which I haue saide touching your beautie, if I haue offended, muche a doe shall I haue to get the same pardoned, because I cannot repente mee, nor say otherwise, except I should speake contrary to truth. And that durste I enterprise to be verified by your selfe, if it were possible that Nature for one quarter of one houre onelye, had transported into some other, that which with right great wonder she sheweth to be in you. Whereunto the Ducheſſe to the ende shee woulde seeme to excuse her prayse aunswered with a litle bashfulnes, which beautified much her liuely colour saying: Madame if you continue in these termes, you will constraine me to thincke, that by chaunging of place, you haue also chaūged your iudgemente. For I am one of the leaste to be commended for beautie of all this lande, or els, I will beleeue, that you, haue the beautie and valour of my Lorde your brother soe printed in your minde, as all that, whiche presenteth it selfe vnto you, haūnge anye apparaunce of beautie, you

meaſure by the perfection of his. And at that inſtante the Ladie Iſabell, whoe thoughte that the Ducheſſe had taken in euill parte, the compariſon that ſhe had made betweene her brother and her, ſomwhat in choler and heate, ſaid vn-
"to her. Madame, you ſhall pardon mee for that I haue ſo
"much forgotte my ſelfe, to preſume to compare your beau-
"tie to his. Whereof if he be to be commended, yet I maye
"well be blamed, being his ſiſter, to publiſhe the ſame in an
"vnknowen place. Notwithſtanding I am wel aſſured, that
"when you ſhall ſpeake, euen with his enemies, that yet be-
"ſides his beautie, they will well aſſure him to be one of the
"gentleſt and beſt condicioned gentleman that liueth. The Ducheſſe ſeinge her in theſe alterations, and ſo affected to the praiſe of her brother, toke great pleaſure in her ſpeach, and willingly woulde haue had her to paſſe further, had it not bin for feare to offende her, and to put her in a choler. And to thintent to turne her from that matter, ſhe cõmaũded the table to be couered for ſupper, where ſhe cauſed her to be ſerued honourably, of all the moſt delicate and exquiſite meates that were poſſible to be gotten. Supper done, and the tables vncouered, after they had a little talked together, and that it was time to withdrawe themſelues, the Ducheſſe ẏ more to honor her, would that ſhe ſhould lodge in her chamber with her, where ẏ Pilgrime (wearied with the way) toke very good reſt. But the Ducheſſe pricked wᵗ the ſtrange talke of the Lady Iſabell, hauing a hãmer working in her head, could not ſleepe. And had ſo wel ẏ beauty of the vnknowen knight graued in the bottom of her hart, as thinking to cloſe her eyes, ſhe thought ẏ he ſtew continuallye before her like a certaine fanſie or ſhadowe. In ſorte, that to know further what he was, ſhe would gladly haue made greater inquirie. Then ſodainlye after a little ſhame and feare intermingled with a certaine womanhoode longe obſerued by her, and therewithall the fidelitie which ſhee bare to the Duke her huſbande, preſentinge

it ſelfe

it ſelfe before her, ſhee buried altogether her firſt counſell which died and tooke ende, euen ſo ſone almoſte as it was borne. And ſo toſſed with an infinite number of diuers thoughtes, paſſed the night, vntill the daye beginning to lighten the world with his burning lampe, cõſtrained her to ryſe. And then the Lady Iſabel, ready to departe, went to take leaue of the Ducheſſe, who willingly would haue wiſhed that ſhe had neuer ſene her, for the newe flame that ſhe felt at her harte. Neuertheleſſe, diſſembling her euill, not able to holde her any longer, made her to promiſe by othe, at her retourne from her voyage, to repaſſe by Thurin, and after ſhe had made her a very liberall offer of her goodes, taking her leaue, ſhe left her to the tuicion of God. Certaine dayes after the departing of the Spaniſh Lady, the Ducheſſe thinking to quenche this new fier, the ſame began further to flame, and the more that hope failed her, the more did deſire encreaſe in her. And after an infinite number of ſundrie cogitacions, Loue got the victorie. And ſhe reſolued with her ſelfe in the ende, whatſoeuer might come thereof, to communicate her cauſe to one of her beloued damſels called Emilia, and to haue her aduiſe, in whom ſhe wonted to repoſe her truſt in all her ſecrete affaires, & cauſing her to be called for ſecretly, ſhe ſaid vnto her. Emilia, I beleue that if thou haſt taken any good heede to my auncient maner of the behauiour, euer ſince I departed from England, thou haſte knowen me to be the very ramper and refuge of all afflicted perſons. But now my deſtenies be turned contrarie. For I haue nowe more neede of counſel than any other liuing creature And hauing no perſon about me worthy to be priuie of my miſfortune, but thou my firſt and laſt refuge is to thee alone. Of whom I hope to receiue conſolation in a matter whiche toucheth me no leſſe than my life and honour. And then the Ducheſſe declared vnto her priuily, how ſince the departing of the Lady Iſabell ſhe had had no reſte in her minde, and howe ſhe

was en-

was enamoured of a knight whome ſhe neuer ſawe, whoſe beautie and good grace had touched her ſo nere, as being altogether vnable any lõger to reſiſte her miſhap, ſhe knew not to whom to haue recourſe, but to ỹ fidelitie of her counſell. Adding thereunto for concluſion, that ſhe loued him not diſhoneſtly, or for hope ſhe had to ſatiſfie any laſciuious appetite, but onely to haue a ſight of him. Whiche (as ſhee thought) would bring vnto her ſuch contentation, as ther by her grief ſhould take ende. Emilia who euer loued her maiſtreſſe as ſhe did her owne heart, had great compaſſion vpon her, when ſhe vnderſtode the light foundation of her ſtraunge loue. Neuertheleſſe deſiring to pleaſe her euen to
« the laſt point of her life, ſhe ſaid vnto her. Madame if it wil
« pleaſe you to recreate your ſelfe from theſe your ſorrowes,
« and to reſpite me onely twoo dayes, I hope to prouide by
« ſome good meanes that you ſhal ſhortly ſee him, who vnde-
ſeruedly doth worke you all this euill. The Ducheſſe nouriſhed with this hope, deſired her effectually to thinke vpon it: Promiſing vnto her, that if her woordes came to good effect, ſhe would make her ſuch recompence as ſhe her ſelf ſhould confeſſe ſhe had not done pleaſure to an ingrate
« or vnthankefull woman. Emilia which had the bruite to be
« one of the moſte ſubtile and charpe witted dames of all
« Thurin, ſlept not during the time of her preſcription. But
« after ſhe had ſearched an infinite nũber of meanes to come
« to that which ſhe deſired, there was one that ſemed moſte
« expedient for that purpoſe and of leaſt perill aboue other.
« And her time of delaye expired, ſhee went to Madame the
« Ducheſſe, and ſayd. Madame, God knoweth howe many
« troubles my minde hath ſuſtayned, and how much I haue
« ſtriued with mine own conſcience to ſatiſfie your commaũ-
« dement, neuertheleſſe, after I had debated thinges ſo ſub-
« ſtantially as was poſſible, I coulde deuiſe nothing more
« worthy your content, than that whiche I wyll nowe de-
clare vnto you, if it wyll pleaſe you to heare mee. Whiche

to be

to be ſhort is, that for the execution of this our enterpryſe, it behoueth you to fayne your ſelfe to be ſicke, and to ſuffer your ſelfe to be trayned into ſuche maladies, as there ſhall rather appeare in you, token of death, than hope of lyfe. And being brought into ſuch extremitie, you ſhall make a vowe (your health recouered) to go within a certayne time to Saint Iames on pilgrimage, which thing you may eaſely obtayne of the Duke your huſbande. And then may you make your voyage liberally with the Ladye Iſabell, who will paſſe this waye vpon her retourne, without diſcouering your affection vnto her, and wyll not fayle by reknowledging the curteſie that you haue vſed towardes her in theſe partes, to conduct you by her brothers houſe, wher you may ſee him at your eaſe, that maketh you to ſuffer this great torment. And I will aduertiſe you furthermore of one thing, which till this time I haue kept cloſe, whiche is. That for as mutch as we two togethers cannot without great difficultie accompliſhe our buſineſſe, it hath ſeemed good vnto me to know of you, if you would that a third perſone ſhalbe called hereunto, who is ſo much at my cõmaundement as I dare comit my truſt vnto him. It is Maiſter Fraunces Appian the Millanor, your Phiſitiã, who (to ſay the very truth vnto you) hath bene ſo affectioned to me, this yeare or two, as he hath not ceaſſed by al meanes poſſible, to wynne me (but to honeſt loue) for he pretendeth to marry me. And becauſe that hetherto I haue made ſmall accompt of him, and haue not vſed any fauour towards him, nor hitherto any good entertainement: I aſſure my ſelf ſeing the great amitie that he beareth me, that if I did but fauorably behold him fiue or ſixe times with pleaſaunt lookes, adding therunto a few kiſſes, he would hazard a thouſand liues for my ſake if he had them, to content me. And for as much as I know him to be a diligent man, learned, and of great reputation, & one that may ſtande vs to great ſtead in this buſines: I thought good not to cõceale or kepe

from

" from your knowledge my aduiſe herein. The Ducheſſe vn-
" derſtanding all this prety diſcourſe, ſo apt for her affectiõs
" (rauiſhed with great ioye) embraced hard Emilia, and ſaide
" vnto her. Emilia my deare friend, if thou diddeſt knowe in
" what wiſe I doe eſteme thee, and what I meane in time to
" come, to beſtowe vpon thee, I am well aſſured, albeit thou
" haſt hitherto ſufficiẽtly ſhewed thy good will, yet thou wilt
" hereafter doe me greater pleaſure promiſing thee, by the
" faithe of a Prince, that if our enterpriſe doe well ſucceede,
" I will not vſe thee as a ſeruaunt, but as my kinſwoman &
" the beſt beloued friend I haue. For I hold my ſelfe ſo ſatiſ-
" fied with ẏ thou haſt ſayd vnto me, as if Fortune be on our
" ſide, I ſee no maner of impediment that may let our enter-
" priſe. Goe thy way then, and entertaine thy Phiſitian, as
" thou thinkeſt beſt, for it is very expedient that he be a par-
" tie, and for the reſt, let me alone. For neuer was there any
" Lazar that better coulde diſſemble his impotencye, than
" I knowe how to counterfait to be ſicke. The Ducheſſe be-
ing departed from Emilia, began to plaine her ſelfe bitter-
ly, faining ſometime to fele a certain paine in her ſtomack,
ſometime to haue a diſeaſe in her head, in ſuch ſort, as after
diuers womanly plaintes (propre to thoſe that feele them-
ſelues ſicke) ſhe was in the end conſtrayned to laye her ſelf
downe, and knew ſo well howe to diſſemble her ſickeneſſe,
as (after ſhe had certaine dayes kept her bedde) there was
mutch doubt of her health. And during this time Emilia
had layed ſo many amorous baytes to feede her Phiſitian,
that he which knewe very well the moſte happy remedies
for the body, could not now finde out any that was able to
heale the maladie of his owne minde. Emilia hauing noſe-
led Maiſter Appian with amorous toyes, began to make
him vnderſtande the originall of the Ducheſſe ſickeneſſe,
the effectes of her paſſiõ, the order that ſhe had vſed during
the furions courſe of the ſame. Adding thereunto for con-
cluſion, that if he would keepe the matter ſecrete, and ayde

them

them with his counſell, ſhe would by and by promiſe hym mariage by woordes, for the preſent tyme, and that from thencefoorth ſhe would neuer denie him any fauour or priuitie. That onely reſerued which no man can honeſtly demaunde, till the mariage be ſolempnized in the face of the Church. In witneſſe wherof ſhe kiſſed him wt great affection. The Phiſitian more eaſed there withall, than if he had ſene his Hippocrates or Galen, rayſed againe from death, promiſed rather to loſe his life, than ſhe ſhould want his helpe. And for the better beginning of this enterpriſe, they wente preſentlye to viſite the Ducheſſe. In whom they found her palſe ſo to beate, the tongue ſo charged, the ſtomacke ſo weakened by continuall ſuffocation of the matrice, that the pacient was in verye great perill of death. Whereunto euery man did eaſely geue credite for the reputation and great experiẽce of the Phiſitian. And maiſter Appian hauing cõmaunded all the chambre to be voyded, made the Ducheſſe to vnderſtande in fewe woordes, how it behoued her to gouerne her ſelfe. And the better to cloke her cauſe, he brought her at that inſtant a litle perfume, by receiuing the ſauour wherof, ſhe ſhould often times fal into certaine litle ſoundinges, and by vſing the perfume, it would diminiſhe her colour for a time, and make her looke as though ſhe had kepte her bed halfe a yeare before. Neuertheleſſe it ſhould doe her no other diſpleaſure, and that in three or foure dayes, with certaine other drugges, hee would reſtore her colour ſo freſhe as euer it was. Whiche counſell the Ducheſſe liked beſt of any thing in the world. And they three together played their partes ſo wel, as the common brute throughout all the citie was, that the Ducheſſe was in great daũger of death. The Duke being aduertiſed of theſe thinges, cauſed al the Phiſitians of Thurin, to aſſemble, to prouide for the healith of the Ducheſſe: Who being come together, with the Duke into her bedde chamber, a litle after ſhe had receiued maiſter Appiãs perfumes:

fumes: and ſeing her to ſowne diuers times before them, were in great diſpaire of her health. And after they had ſomewhat debated the matter with Maiſter Appian, not knowing wherupon to reſolue, they ſaid vnto the Duke, ỹ it behoued him to prouide for her ſoule, for that they ſaw in her the ordinarie tokens & meſſangers of death. The poore Duke being ſorowfull beyond meaſure, for that he loued the Ducheſſe entierly, ſent for the Suffragane of the Biſhop of Thurin, a mã of very holy life, to thintent he might geue her ghoſtly councell. To whom ſhe confeſſed her ſelf with a voyce ſo feeble, that it ſeemed to be more than halfe dead. Her talke was not long, but yet ſhe made him beleue that nature failed her, and that by litle and litle ſhe drewe towardes her end: Deſiring him to haue her & her poore ſoule in remẽbraunce, when he made his oriſons & prairs. The Suffragan being gone, the Duke and others, with a great number of Gentlemen & Ladies, went into the chãber. But ſhe began then to enter into ſo great rauing, as euery body was afeard of her. And after that ſhe had tolled her ſelf in her bed, like a ſenſeleſſe creature, her ſpeach fayled her. Wherat thoſe preſent, ſtricken with no ſmal wonder, thinking the ſoule would ſtraight wayes haue departed the body, ſome of them cried vpon her Madame remember Jeſus, ſom other S. Barbara. But wilie Emilia more priuie of her counſell than the reſt, taking her tenderly by the arme, cried vpon her with a loude voice. Madame call vpon S. James, who hath ſo often ſuccoured you in youre aduerſities. And with that the Ducheſſe awaked as it wer out of a heauy ſleepe, & rowling her eyes to and fro, with a ſtraunge trembling of all her mẽbers, began to pronoũce
« with an interrupted voyce. O glorious Apoſtle, in whome
« from my tender youth, I haue euer had my ſtedfaſt truſt &
« hope, be now mine interceſſor in this cruel aſſault of death,
« to Jeſus Chriſt. And I make a bowe nowe vnto thee, that
« if I may recouer health, I will my ſelf in perſon, go honor

thy

thy ſacred body, in the proper place where it repoſeth. And hauing ended her fayned prayer, ſhe counterfaited a ſleepe, and ſo continued the ſpace of twoo or three houres, whiche cauſed all the companie to withdrawe themſelues, excepte the poore Duke, who would not depart from her, vntil ſhe waked, and in the meane time ceaſſed not to praye to God for the health of his loyall ſpouſe. After ſhee had ſo well plaied this Pageaunt by the ſpace of an houre or twoo, fayning then to awake, ſhe began to ſtretche forth her armes and legges with ſuche force, as whoſoeuer had heard the noyſe, would eaſely haue iudged that ſhe had bene deliuered from ſome great tormēt. And beholding the Duke her huſband, with a pitifull eye (who had leaned his head nere vnto hers in the bed) ſhe caſt her ſtretched armes negligētly vpon his neck, and kiſſing him ſayd. Now may I ſafely kiſſe you my Lorde, that within theſe three houres was in ſuch pitifull plight, as I thought my ſelf for euer depriued of that benefit. Thākes be geuē to God & that good ſainct, to whom I made my vow I am preſently ſo wel eaſed, as if I fele my ſelf no worſe, I will yet deteine you (huſband) a while frō an other mariage. But þ poore Duke altogether rauiſhed with ioy, hauing his white beard all tēpered with teares, knew not what anſwere to make, but behelde her with ſuch admiration, as he ſeemed to be beſides himſelf. And in the meane time certain which wer at the dore, hearing thē ſpeake, entred the chāber, who finding þ Ducheſſe somwhat better then ſhe was, publiſhed her recouerie incontinently throw al the citie, wherof the citizens being aduertiſed (becauſe they loued her dearly) made proceſſions & other thankeſgeuing to God, as in caſes like are accuſtomed. Within a whyle after, the Ducheſſe began by litle and litle to taſte her meates, and to vſe ſuche diet as ſhee recouered her former health, Except the newe plague which pynched her tender harte for the Lorde Mendozza, whiche ſhe could not cure, but by the preſence of him that

bare

bare the oyntment boxe for that ſore. And ſo long ſhe continued in the amorous thoughtes, till the Lady Iſabell retourned from her pilgrimage, who came to the caſtell according to her promiſe. And after friendly gretinges one of an other, the Ducheſſe made her to vnderſtande, how ſince her departure ſhe had neuer almoſt cõmen out of her bed, for that ſhe had bene afflicted with a moſte grieuous ſickeneſſe. Neuertheleſſe by the helpe of God, and the interceſſion of good S. Iames (to whom ſhe had vowed her ſelfe) ſhe had recouered health. And if ſhe could obtaine leaue of the Duke her huſband, ſhe would thinke her ſelf happy to make a voyage thither in her companie. Which the Spaniſhe Lady perſuaded by all meanes poſſible, ſhewing vnto her many commodities, ſhe ſhould finde in Spaine, and the honorable company of gentlemen and Ladies, who at her arriuall there (if it would pleaſe her to doe them ſo muche honor as to viſite them in paſſing by) would leaue nothing vndone for the beſt manner of entertainement that poſſibly might be deuiſed. And by this meane the Ladye Iſabell thought to pricke her forward, who was in dede but to quicke of the ſpurre already, and thinking euery houre. vii. determined one morning thereof to moue the Duke her
cc huſbande. To whom ſhe ſayd My Lorde I beleue that you
cc doe ſufficiently well remember my trouble paſte, and the
cc extreme martyrdome that I ſuffred in my late ſickeneſſe, &
cc namely of the vowe whiche I made for recouery of my
cc health. Nowe finding my ſelfe whole and ſtrong, my deſire
cc is that with your licence I might accompliſhe my voyage,
cc ſpecially with ſo good opportunitie. For the noble woman
cc of Spayne of whome I haue heretofore told you, is retur-
cc ned, and it ſhould be a great eaſe to vs both to goe in com-
cc panie together. And for ſo much as it is a matter of neceſ-
cc ſitie, and that earely or late, I muſt aduenture to paye my
cc vowed debte, it is beſt both for my commoditie and alſo for
cc my honour, to goe in her companie. Whereunto the good

Duke

Duke did willingly accorde. Who neuer had any manner of ſuſpicion that ſutch a treaſon was lodged in the harte of ſo great a Princeſſe. And hauing giuen order for all things requiſite for her departing, ſhe tooke a certaine number of gentlemen and damſels, amongſt which, Maiſter Appian and Emilia were not forgotten, and being all apparelled in Pilgrimes weedes, by long trauaile and weary iourneis, after they had paſſed the cold Alpes, they came into the coũtie of Roſsilion, & entred into Spayne. And then the Ducheſſe feling her ſelfe to approche the place where her hart of long tyme had taken hold, deſired the Lady Iſabell and her company earneſtly, not to make it knowen to any perſone what ſhe was And ſo traueiling by ſmall iourneyes, and deuiſing of diuerſe matters, they arriued within two litle dayes iourney to the place where the Lorde of Mendozza kept his ordinarie houſholde. For which cauſe the Spaniſhe Lady entreated the Ducheſſe not to be offended, if ſhe ſent ſome one of her men before to geue aduertiſemẽt of their comming, which the Ducheſſe graunted. And the meſſanger finding the Lord of Mendozza readie to receiue them, and hauing done him to vnderſtand of the coming of the Ducheſſe, of the firſte talke betwene her and his ſyſter, of the great entertainement that ſhe had geuen them, Of the ſinguler beautie with the which ſhe was adorned: He was not ſo groſſe but that he knewe by and by, that the Ducheſſe at thoſe yeares, had not bene ſo liberall of her labour, to make ſuch a voiage one foote, without ſome other reſpect. And diſſembling what he thought, cauſed thirty or fortie of his gentlemen incontinently to make them ready. To whome making as though hee would goe hunte the Hare, he went to meete the Ducheſſe: and hauing diſcouered them a farre of in a fielde, the Lady Iſabell did forthwith knowe theim. Who aduertiſed the Ducheſſe that he which rode vppon the whyte Jenet of Spayne, was the Lorde of Mendozza her brother, and that the other were

his seruauntes'. The Prince then after he had made his horse to vaute three or foure times aloft in the ayre, with an excellent grace and marueilous dexteritie lighted from his horse, and kissing her hãd, sayd vnto her. Madame, I beleue that if the wandering knightes of olde tyme, who haue eternized their memorie, by an infinite nũbre of renowmed victories, had had so muche good lucke, as many tymes in their aduentures to meete with such pilgrimes, as you be, they woulde willinglye haue abandoned the Launce and
" Murrion, to take the Staffe and Scrippe. The Duchesse
" then beyng comparable with anye Ladye of her tyme, for her education and comely talke, assayled with ioye, feare, and shame, that no lacke of dutie might be founde in her, sayde vnto hym. And in deede my Lorde like as if the
" knightes of whom you speake, had tasted of some good hap
" (as you terme it) by meting with such Pilgrimes: So al-
" so we hope that the Saint to whome we be vowed, in the
" honor of whom we haue enterprised this perillous voyage
" will receiue vs in good parte. Otherwyse our payne were
" altogether loste, and our iourney euil imployed. And after they had geuen this first amorous atteint, the Lord of Mẽdozza taking her by the arme, conducted her vnto his castell, deuising of pleasaunt matters. And he was greatlye astouned, to see so rare a beautie, as appeared in the Princesse: Whiche neither the wearinesse of the waye, nor the parching beames of the Sunne, coulde in any wyse so appaire, but that there rested ynough, to drawe vnto her the very hartes of the moste colde, and frosen mẽ of the worlo. And albeit the Lorde of Mendozza, tooke great pleasure and admiration in beholding her, yet was it nothing in respect of the Duchesse: who after she had aduised and well marked the beautie, excellency, and other good giftes of grace, in the Lorde of Mendozza, she confessed that al that which she had heard of his sister, was but a dreame in comparison of the proufe, which discouered it selfe vpon the first

viewe:

viewe: Seeming vnto her by good iudgement, that all the beauties of the worlde were but paintinges, in respect of the perfection of that whiche shee sawe with her eyes. Wherin she was not deceiued, albeit that her feruent loue might haue bewitched her senses. For all the histories in Latine, Spanishe, and Italien, the which make mention of Mendozza, geue vnto him the firste place in beautie of all the Princes and Lordes that were in his tyme. The poore Duchesse, after she had manifested by outwarde gestures, and countenaunces, to the Lord of Mendozza, that which was in the inward part of her harte, without receiuing the full satisfaction of his sight, whiche she desired, determined (hauing soiourned three dayes in his castell) to departe the nexte morning, (vnwares to the Knight) to performe her voyage. And so soone as the light of the daye began to appeare, she went to the chamber of the Lady Isabell, whom she thanked affectuously, aswell for her good companye, as for the great courtesie, and humanitie, that she had receiued in her house. And hauing taken leaue of her, departed with her traine. The knight Mendozza, about an houre or two after her departure, aduertised thereof, was greatly troubled, what the matter might be that she was gone without taking leaue of him. And after that he had a little thought therupon, he easely perceiued, that all the fault therof was in him selfe. And ỳ this great Princesse had abandoned her countrie, of purpose by all iudgement to visite him, & that he had shewed himself very slacke for her satisfactiõ, in that he had not offred her his seruice. Wherat being iustly greued, she did not vouchsafe to geue him a farewell. And so accusing himselfe, he determined to followe after her, accompanied onelye with twoo Pages. And beyng on horsebacke, it was not long before hee espied her in the byghe waye to Saint James, where lighting, hee walked twoo myles with her, reasonyng the matter without intermission: desiring her amonges other thynges, to let hym vn-

derſtand what diſpleaſure ſhee had conceiued in his houſe, that cauſed her ſo ſpedy & ſecret a departure: adding thereunto, that if her pleaſure were, he would accompanie her to the place whether ſhe was bowed: and would alſo reconduct her in his owne perſone to Thurin, in ſo honourable ſorte, as ſhe ſhould finde cauſe to be contented. Then paſſing further, with ſighes ſayd vnto her. Madame, fortune had done me a great benefite, if when my ſiſter made her vowe to goe to Rome, I had loſt the battaile againſt mine enemies, and that her vowe had bene without effect. For it might haue bene that I ſhould haue remained quiet by the loſſe of ſome of my people. But alas I fele now, ſince your comming into this countrie, a battaile ſo cruel, and aſſault ſo furious in my harte, as not being able any longer to reſiſte it, I finde my ſelfe vanquiſhed, and caught captiue, in ſuch ſort, as I know not to whom to complain, but to you, which is the motion of all my diſquietneſſe. And yet, which grieueth me moſt, you diſſemble as though you did not vnderſtand it. And to bring me to my laſt end, you are departed this day out of my houſe, not daining to ſee me, or to appeaſe me with one farewel, which hath ſo further inflamed my paſſion, as I die a thouſand times a day. Beſeching you for ỹ time to come, to entreate me more fauourably, or you ſhall ſee me, in that ſtate, wherein you would be loth to ſee your enemy: which is, moſt cruel death. And in dede, he ſhewed ſufficiently, how great the grief was that preſſed him, and how well the paſſion that he felt, was agreable to the wordes which he ſpake. For in pronouncing his wordes he ſighed ſo in his tale, & chãged his colour ſo often, & had his face ſo beſprent with teares, as it ſemed his ſoule attached with ſuperfluous ſorrowe, would at that very inſtant haue abandoned his bodye. Which the Princeſſe perceiuinge, touching at the quicke the very ſpring of all his euill, ſayd vnto him Seignior Mẽdozza, I know not what you wold that I ſhould do more for you, nor for what occaſion you do

pretende,

pretende, that I ſhould be the cauſe of your death. For if »
the occaſion thereof ſhould happen through my default, my »
life by ſtrenghe or abilitie, could not endure one houre af- »
ter, for the ſorowe I ſhould conceiue therof. Thinke me to »
be yours, and be not offended, I beſeech you, if openly I doe »
no longer talke with you. For I would not to winne al the »
goodes in the world, that any of this traine which doth ac- »
company me, ſhould perceiue any one ſparke of the great »
kindled fire, wherin my hart burneth day & night for you, »
being aſſured that if you had felt one houre of my payne, in »
place to accuſe me of crueltie, your ſelf complaining, wold »
pitie the griefe whiche I haue ſuſtained for your long ab- »
ſence. For without the continual preſence of your perſone, »
repreſenting it ſelfe in the eyes of mine vnderſtãding, with »
a firme hope once to haue ſeen you: it had bene impoſſible »
for me, to reſiſt the long and hard aſſaulte, wherwith loue »
hath euery houre aſſailed me. But one thing I muſt nedes »
confeſſe vnto you, that by reaſon of ẏ cold welcome which »
you made me in ẏ beginning, I thought it proceded of ſome »
euill opinion conceiued of me, or peraduẽture that you had »
thought me ouer liberall of mine honour, to haue left the »
countrie where I commaunde, to render my ſelf ſubiect to »
your good grace, which cauſed me without leaue to depart »
your houſe. But now that I do know by your countenaũce »
and teares, the contrarie: I acknowledge my fault, and de- »
ſire you to forget it. With full promiſe, that vppon my re- »
tourne from my voiage of S. Iames, I will make you a- »
mendes, in the very ſame place, wher I cõmitted the fault. »
And remaining your priſoner for a certaine time, I wil not »
depart from you, vntill I haue ſatiſfied, by ſufficient penãce »
the greatnes of my treſpas. In the meane time you ſhal cõ- »
tent your ſelf with my good will: and without paſſing any »
further retorne againe home to your caſtell, for feare leaſt »
ſome ſuſpicious perſone in my company ſhould conceiue ẏ »
in me, which all the dayes of my life I neuer gaue occaſiõ, »

ſo much as once to thinke. To whome the Lorde of Mendozza obeied, more to content her, than otherwiſe, for hee had the beauties and good behauiours of the Princeſſe, ſo imprinted in the moſte pleaſaunt place of his harte, as he would haue deſired neuer to haue departed her companie. But like as they determined iocundly, to imploy & ſatiſfie their deſire, at her retorne from her voyage: euen ſo Fortune in the meane while did beſet the ſame, & ſo fully brake the threde of their enterprizes, as the iſſue had not ſo good ſucceſſe, as was their prefixed hope. Now leaue we ỳ Ducheſſe, to perfourme her voyage, & the Lord of Mendozza to entertain his amorous paſſions, and let vs digreſſe to the Duke, who about. x. or. xii. dayes after the Ducheſſe his wife was departed, began to fele her abſence, which not being able to ſuſteine for the great loue he bare vnto her, and ſpecially knowing ỳ great fault that he had cõmitted (being the ſiſter of a king & wife of ſuch a Prince) ſo to let her go, like an vnfeathered ſhaft, in ſo long a voyage; determined with him ſelfe (for feare leaſt if any miſfortune happening vnto her, the ſame ſhould touch his honour) to call together his counſel, & to prouide ſome remedie. The counſel aſſembled, and the cauſe proponed, euerie of them told the Duke that he had ouer lightly conſented to the will of the Ducheſſe, and that if ſhe ſhould chaunce to incurre any inconuenience, al men would impute it to his reproch wherof they would haue aduertiſed him, at ỳ beginning, ſauing for feare they had to diſpleaſe him: Adding for concluſion, ỳ it was moſt expedient the Duke ſhould put himſelfe on the Sea to goe ſeeke her in Galiſia. Which he did, and imbarked him ſelf with a great cõpanie of gentlemen, to whome the winde was ſo fauourable, as he ariued at S. Iames before her And hauing made enquirie for her, vnderſtode ſhe was not come. Neuertheleſſe he was aduertiſed by certaine pilgrims, that it could not be long before ſhe would be there, for that they had left her not paſte three or foure

dayes

dayes iourney from thence: trauelling with her trayne, by ſmall iourneis, wherof the Duke was exceading glad, and ſent certaine of his gentlemen to mete her vpō the way, as ſhe came, who rode not farre before they met the Ducheſſe with her companie, and did her to vnderſtād of the Dukes arriuall, and of the cauſe of his comming from Thurin. Which tidinges was not very ioyfull to her, & by her will would haue wiſhed that he had not taken ſo much paynes. Neuertheleſſe, preferring honor before affection, ſhe made the more haſte to ſee him, and at her arriuall, ſeemed to bee glad of his comming, and to lament the payne that he had taken, by committing him ſelfe in ſo many daungers for her ſake. Afterwardes they entred into the Churche with great deuotion, where when the Ducheſſe had made certaine particuler praiers, ſhee began to perceiue that God had withſtāded her laſciuious wil, & pitying ỳ good Duke her huſband, would not permit him to be deceiued in ſuche diſloyall ſort, repentantly bewayling her forepaſſed faulte. And feling her ſelf preſſed euen at the very foule with a certaine remorſe of conſcience, ſhe was ſo victorious ouer her affections, as ſhe determined wholly to forget Mendozza and his beautie. Praying God neuertheleſſe that it had pleaſed him to graunt her the grace ſo well to diſpoſe her matters, that her affections had not exceded the bondes of honor: Determining frō thenceforth, not onely to put Mēdozza in vtter obliuion, but alſo for euer clerely to cut of his amorous practiſe, & therfore would not ſo much as bid him once farewell, nor yet to let him in any wiſe vnderſtād thoſe newes. And ſo ſettled in this deliberatiō, ſolicited her huſband very inſtantly to departe, whiche he did, and all thinges prepared to the Sea, they toke againe their courſe to Thurin, and had the wynde ſo proſperous, as from thēce in fewe dayes after, they arriued at Marſellis. And wearye of the Seas, he cauſed horſes to be prepared to ryde from thēce to Thurin by land, wher he & his wife liued together

in right great ioy and amitie. The Lorde of Mendozza greatly payned with the long abſence of the Ducheſſe, ſent a gentleman of purpoſe to Galiſia, to know the cauſe of her long tarying. Who brought certain newes that the Duke was comen in perſone to fetche his wife, and that he had caried her awaye with him by Sea. Wherewithal he was marueilouſly out of pacience, determining neuertheleſſe one daye when his affaires were in good order, to go viſite her at Thurin. During the time that theſe thinges remained in this eſtate, as well of the one ſide, as of the other: the Almaines prepared a great army, and entred into Fraũce, where they waſted and burned al the countrey as they paſſed. The king being aduertiſed hereof, ſent for the Duke of Sauoie, to goe mete them with the mẽ of armes of Fraũce. But before his departure from Thurin, he lefte for his Lieutenant generall, the Earle of Pancalier, by the aduiſe and counſell of whome he intended that all the affaires of the Duchie ſhould be ruled and gouerned in his abſence, and that he ſhould in ſo ample wyſe be honoured & obeyed, as his owne perſone This Earle of Pancalier was a noble man, verie prudent in his doinges, and knewe right well howe to gouerne the common wealth, who ſeing that hee had the whole countrie at his commaundement, and hym ſelfe many tymes in preſence of the Ducheſſe, viewing her ſo fayre and comelie, could not ſo well rule his affections, but that by litle and litle he fell into loue with her, in ſuch wyſe as hee forgat hym ſelfe, makyng no conſcience to offer his ſeruice vnto her. But the Princeſſe who was reſolued to lyue a good woman, abhorred all his laſciuious Orations, requiring hym to bee better aduyſed an other tyme, before he preſumed to vtter ſutche talke, excepte to ſutch that were his equals. Telling hym that a man ought not to bee ſo vnſhamefaſt to offer his ſeruice to anye great Ladie, or to make other ſute vnto her, before hee hadde fyrſte knowen by her geſture or woordes, ſome lykely-

hode of

hoode of loue: which he could not deeme in her, for ſo much as ſhe neither to him or to any other had euer, (til that day in all her life) ſhewed ſuch fauour, as other ſuſpicion could be conceiued, but that which was conuenable and meete for her honour. Which when the Countie of Pancalier vnderſtoode, he toke his leaue of her, aſhamed of that he had done. But he folowing the cuſtome of louers, not thinking himſelfe caſt of for the firſt refuſe, eftſones renewed his requeſtes. And framing a louing ſtile, beſought her to haue pitie vppon him, and to reſpect the greatneſſe of his paſſion: and that he could not prolonge his life without the fauour of her good grace, who onely was the very remedie of his euill. The Ducheſſe peſtred with ſuch like talke, ſaide vnto him Sir Countie, me thinke you ought to haue ſatiſ- »
fyed your ſelfe with my firſt deniall, without further conti- »
nuance in the purſuing of your raſhe enterpriſe. Haue you »
forgotten the place that you keepe, and the honour where- »
unto my Lord the Duke my huſband hath exalted you? Is »
this nowe the loyall reward that you render vnto him for »
creating you his Lieutenaunt ouer all his landes and ſeig- »
niories, to demaund the preheminence of his bedde? Aſſure »
your ſelfe for final warning, that if euer hereafter you ſhal »
againe fall into like error, I ſweare vnto you by the faith »
of a Princeſſe, that I will make you to be chaſtiſed in ſuche »
ſort, as al ſemblable Traytors and diſloyal ſeruaunts ſhal »
take example. The Earle ſeing himſelfe refuſed, and thus rebuked, and in doubt that the Princeſſe woulde make her huſbande to vnderſtande his enterpriſe vpon his retourne, chaunging his greate loue into hatred more then mortall, determined whatſoeuer ſhould come thereof, to inuente all meanes poſſible, vtterly to deſtroye the Ducheſſe. And after that he had fanſied diuers thinges in minde, he deuiſed (by the inſtince of the deuil) to cauſe one of his Nephewes, being of the age of xviii. or twentie yeares, which was his heire apparant, for that he had no children, and was one of

the

the fayreſt and beſt condicioned Gentlemen of all Thurin, to ſoꝛt that deuiliſh attẽpt to purpoſe. And finding oppoꝛtunitie, one daye hee ſaide to the ponge man (that depended wholly vppon him) theſe woꝛds. Nephew, thou knoweſt ẏ all the hope of liuing thou haſt in this woꝛld reſteth in me alone, of whom I make ſo good accompte as of my childe. And foꝛ that it pleaſed God to giue me no childꝛen, I haue conſtituted and oꝛdeined thee my ſole and onely heyꝛe with ful hope that from henceforth thou wilt dutifully acknowledge thy ſelfe moſt bounde vnto mee, and therefoꝛe obedient in all thinges which I ſhal commaunde thee, ſpecially in that which may be moſt foꝛ thine aduauncemente. The Duke as thou knoweſt, is abſent, olde, and crooked, and at all houres in the mercy of death thꝛoughe the daungers of the warres. Nowe if he ſhould chaunce to die, my deſire is to mary thee with ſome great Lady: Yea and if it were poſſible with ẏ Ducheſſe her ſelfe, which God knoweth what pꝛofite it would bꝛinge both to thee and thy frendes, and in my iudgemẽt an eaſie matter to compaſſe, if thou wilt diſpoſe thy ſelfe after my counſell, oꝛ at leaſte wiſe, if thou canſt not come to the title of huſband, thou maieſt not faile to be receiued as frend Thou art a comly Gentleman, and in good fauour with the Ducheſſe, as I haue oftentimes perceiued by her communication, albeit that holdinge faſt the bꝛible of her honoꝛ, ſhee hath been afraid hetherto to open herſelfe vnto thee. Spare not my goods, make thy ſelfe bꝛaue and gallant from henceforth whatſoeuer it coſte, and be dilligente to pleaſe her in all that thou maieſt, and time ſhall make thee know that which thy tender yeares hath hither to hidden from thee. The pooꝛe ponge man giuinge faith to the vnfaithfull inuentions of his vncle (whom hee counted as his Father) began oft to frequent the pꝛeſence of the Ducheſſe, and ſhamefaſtlye to ſolicite her by lookes and other offices of humanitie, as nature had taught him, continuing that oꝛder the ſpace of a moneth. Which by the

Ducheſſe

Ducheſſe wel viewed and marked, ſhe was diligent for her part to accept the honeſt and affectionate ſeruice which the yong man dailye did vnto her, & ſhewed vnto him likewiſe a certaine more curteous fauour than to the reſt of ẏ Pages, as wel for the birth & beautie wherwithal nature had enriched him, as for that ſhe ſaw him enclined to do her better ſeruice than the reſt, not thinking of any diſhoneſt appetite in ẏ yongmã, nor ẏ malice of his vncle, who conceiued none other felicitie but in reuenge of the Ducheſſe, his enemie, and not able to beare the cruel mallice rooted in his harte, determined to play double or quit. And callinge his Nephew before him he ſaid vnto him. My childe, I do perceiue and ſee that thou art one of the moſt happieſt gentlemẽ of al Europe, if thou kneweſt how to follow thine owne good luck. For the Ducheſſe not onely is amorous of thee, but alſo cõſumeth for ẏ earneſt loue ſhee beareth thee. But as thou koweſt women be ſhamefaſt and would be ſued vnto in ſecrete, & do delight to be deceiued of men, to thend it might ſeeme how ẅ deceit or force they were cõſtrained to yelo to ẏ which of their own minds they would willingly offer, were it not for a litle ſhamefaſtnes ẏ doth ẅdrawe them. And thereof aſſure thy ſelfe, for I haue oftentimes experimented the ſame, to my great good lucke. Wherfore credite my Councel, and follow mine aduiſe. And thou thy ſelfe ſhalt confeſſe vnto mee, before to morrow at this time, that thou art the happieſt man of the world. I will, then ẏ this night when thou ſeeſt conuenient time, thou ſhalt conueye thy ſelfe ſecretlye into the chamber of the Ducheſſe, and there hide thy ſelfe vnder her bedde, for feare of being eſpied: where thou ſhalt remaine vntil an houre after midnight, whẽ all men be in the depth of their ſleepe. And whẽ thou perceiueſt euery man at reſt, thou ſhalte cloſely riſe, & approching ẏ Ducheſſe bed, thou ſhalt tell what thou art, and I am ſure for the earneſt loue ſhe beareth thee, and for

the

" the long abſence of her huſband, ſhe wil curteouſſlie receiue
" thee betweene her armes, and feaſt thee with ſuch delights
" as amorous folke doe embrace their louers. The ſimple
young man giuing faith to the words of his vncle that was
honoured as a king (thinking perhaps that it proceeded by
the perſwaſion of the Ducheſſe (followed his commaundement,
and obeied wholly his traiterous and abhominable
heſt. Who (opportunitie founde) accompliſhed frō pointe to
point, ẏ which his cruel vncle had cōmaunded. And a litle
before midnight, fearing leaſt his treaſon ſhoulde be diſcouered, toke with him three Councellors, and certaine other
of the Guarde of the Caſtell. Whereunto as Lieutenaunt
to the Duke, he might both enter and iſſue at al times whē
he liſt, and not opening the cauſe of his intent, wēt ſtraight
to the portall of the Ducheſſe chamber, and knocking at
the dore, ſaid that the Duke was come. Which being opened, hee entred in with a nomber of lightes, accompanied
with the Guarde, hauinge a Rapier readye drawen in his
hande, like a furious man beſides himſelfe, began to looke
rounde about, and vnder the bedde of the Ducheſſe: from
whence he cauſed his owne proper Nephew to be drawē.
To whom without geuing him leaſure to ſpeake, for feare
" leſt his malice ſhould be diſcouered, he ſaide. O deteſtable
villaine thou ſhalt die, and therewithall he thruſte the Rapier into him, to the hard hiltes, & doubling another blowe
to make him faile of his ſpeache, hee pearced his throte, ſo
fiercely, as the poore innocente after he had a little ſtaggered, fell downe deade to the grounde. When he had put vp
his rapier, he turned towards the Counſellers, and ſaide
" vnto them. My frends, this is not the firſt time that I haue
" eſpied the laſciuious and diſhoneſt loue betweene this my
" lecherous Nephew and the Ducheſſe, whom I haue cau-
" ſed to die, to honourably in reſpect of his deſert. For by the
" very rigor of the law, he deſerued to haue bin burnt quick,
" or els to be torne in peeces with foure horſes. But my La-

dy the

die the Ducheſſe I meane not to puniſhe, or to prouide chaſtiſement for her: For you be not ignorannt, that the auncient cuſtome of Lombardie and Sauoye requireth that euery woman taken in adulterie, ſhal be burned aliue, if within a yeare and a day ſhe finde not a Champion to fight the combate for her innocencie. But for the bounden duetie ỳ I beare to my Lord the Duke, and for reſpect of the eſtate which he hath committed to my charge, I will to morrow diſpatch a Poaſte, to make him vnderſtande the whole accident as it is come to paſſe. And the Ducheſſe ſhall remaine in this Chamber, with certaine of her maids, vnder ſure keeping and ſafegarde. All this time the Ducheſſe who had both iudgemente and ſpirite ſo good as any Princeſſe that raigned in her time, ſuſpected by and by the treaſon of the Earle. And with a pitifull eye beholding ỳ dead body of her Page, fetching a deepe ſighe, cried out. Oh innocent ſoule which ſometime gaueſt life to this bodye that nowe is but earth, thou art nowe in place where thou ſeeſt clearelye the iniquitie of the murderer, that latelye did put thee to death. And hauing made an ende of this exclamation with her armes a croſſe, ſhee remained as in a ſowne wout mouing either hande or foote. And after ſhe had continued a while in that ſtate, ſhee deſired the Counſellers to cauſe the bodye to be buried, and to reſtore it to the earth whereof it had the firſt creation. For (quoth ſhe) it hath not deſerued to be tied to the gibet, and to be foode for birds of the ayre. Which they graũted not without a certaine greuous ſuſpicion betweene her and the Page. For ſo muche as ſhe excuſed not herſelfe, but the innocencie of him, without ſpeaking any worde of her owne particular iuſtificatiõ. This pitifull aduenture was out of hande publiſhed through all the Citie, with ſo great ſorrow and murmure of the people, as it ſeemed the enemies had ſacked ỳ towne. For there was not one, from the very leaſt to the greateſte of al, but did both loue and reuerence the Ducheſſe, in ſuch

ſort

ſoꝛt as it ſeemed vnto them, that this miſſoꝛtune was falle̅ vpon euery one of their childꝛen. The Earle of Pancalier did nothing all that day, but diſpatch the poaſtes. And hauing cauſed all the whole matter to be regiſtred as it was ſeen to be done: he commaũded the Counſellers, and them of the Garde, to ſubſcribe his letters. And all the matter being put in oꝛder he ſent away two curroꝛs with diligẽce, the one into Englande to aduertiſe the king her bꝛother, & the other to the Duke. Who being arriued, ech man in his place, pꝛeſented their charges. Whereunto both the bꝛother and the huſband gaue full credite without any maner of difficultie; perſwaded pꝛincipally thereunto by ꝑ death of the Nephew. Who (as it was very likely) had not been put to death by his owne vncle, and of whom hee was alſo the very heire, without his moſt greeuous fault, pꝛaiſinge greatly the fidelitie of ꝑ Earle, that had not pardoned his owne pꝛoper bloud, to conſerue his duty and honoꝛ to his ſouereigne Loꝛde. And it was concluded betweene them, by deliberate aduiſe and counſaile, as well of thoſe of the king of England, as by a great nomber of learned men of Fraunce, whom the French kinge made to aſſemble foꝛ ꝑ reſpect in fauour of the Duke that the cuſtome ſhould be ſo inuiolably kepte, as if the Ducheſſe were the moſt ſimple damſell of all the coũtrie: to the ende that in time to come, greate Loꝛdes and Ladyes which be as it were lampes to giue lighte to others, might take example. And that from thẽceforth they ſhould not ſuffer their vertues to be obſcured by ꝑ clouds of ſuch execrable vices. The king of England to gratifie the Earle of Pancalier: who (in his iudgement) had ſhewed himſelfe right noble in this act, ſent him an excellent harneſſe, with a ſwoꝛd of the ſelf ſame trampe by the Currour, with letters of auuſweare wꝛittẽ with his owne hand, how he vnderſtode ꝑ maner of his pꝛoceedings. And the meſſenger vſed ſuch diligẽce, as within few daies he arriued at Thurin. Shoꝛtly after that the king of En-

gland

gland had ſent backe the Currour, the Duke of Sauoie returned his, whom he ſtaied ſo much the longer, becauſe the matter touched him moſt neere. For he would that ẏ matter ſhould be debated by moſt graue & deliberate counſell. And when he had reſolued what to do, he wrote to the cõſellers and other Magiſtrates of Thurin, aboue al things to haue reſpecte that ẏ cuſtome ſhould be inuiolably obſerued, and that they ſhould not in any caſe fauour the adultery of his wife, vpon paine of death. Then in particuler, hee wrote his letters to the Earle, whereby he did greatly allow his fidelitie, for the which he hoped to make him ſuche recompence, as both he and his, ſhould taſte therof during their liues. The Currour of the Duke arriued, & the matter propoued in counſell, it was iudged, that (followinge ẏ auncient cuſtome) a piller of Marble ſhould be placed in ẏ fieldes neere Thurin: which is betweene the bridge of the riuer Poo and the Citie, wherupon ſhould be written the accuſation of the Earle of Pancalier againſt the Ducheſſe, which the Ducheſſe vnderſtanding (hauing none other cõpanie but Emilia, and a yong damſell) diſpoiled herſelfe of her ſilken garmentes, and did put on mourninge weede, martired with an infinite nomber of ſondrie tormentes, ſeing herſelfe abandoned of al worldly ſuccour, made her cõplaints to God: beſeeching him with teares to be protector of her innocencie. Emilia who vnderſtode by her, that ſhee was vniuſtlie accuſed, and ſeing ẏ iminent perill that was prepared for her, determined by her accuſtomed prudence to prouide therfore. And after ſhe had a litle comforted her ſhe ſaide vnto her. Madame, ẏ caſe ſo requireth, ẏ now you must not cõſume time, in teares & other womaniſh plaints, which can nothinge diminiſhe your euill. It ſeemes moſt expediente vnto mee, that you fortefie your ſelfe againſte your ennemye, and finde ſome meane to ſende maiſter Appian in poaſte to the Duke of Mendozza, one of the beſt renowmed in proweſſe of all the knightes in Spaine, whoe beinge aduertiſed of your miſfortune, wyll prouide

ſo

cc ſo well for your affaires, (that your honour being recouc-
cc red) your life ſhall remaine aſſured. Wherefore if you will
cc followe mine aduiſe, you ſhall write him an earneſt letter
cc (as you know right wel how to indite) which Appian ſhal
cc preſent on your behalfe. For if you follow not this counſel,
cc I know none els (as ỹ world goeth now) that will hazarde
cc his life vnder the condicion of ſo ſtraunge a lotte as yours
cc is, ſpecially hauing reſpect to the renowme and magnani-
cc mitie of the Earle, who as you know, is in reputation to be
cc one of the moſt valiaũt men and moſt happy in armes that
cc is in all Sauoie or Lombardie. My deare frende (quoth the
cc Ducheſſe) doe what thou wilt. For I am ſo reſolued and
cc confirmed in my ſorowe, as I haue no care either of death
cc or life, no more than if I had neuer been borne. For neither
cc in the one (nor in the other, can I forſee anye remedie for
cc mine honour alreadie loſt. Madame (quoth Emilia) let vs
cc for this time leaue the care of honour in the hands of God,
cc who knoweth both howe to keepe it, and reſtore it, as ſhall
cc ſeeme good vnto him. And let vs giue order for our parte,
cc that there be no want of diligence, for feare of being ouer-
cc taken. And hauing made an ende of her tale, ſhee gaue her
cc incke and paper, ſayinge vnto her. Now Madame I ſhall
cc ſee at this pinche, if your harte will ſerue you at a neede or
no. The Ducheſſe withdrew her ſelfe a part, and after ſhe had longe diſcourſed in her minde of that which was paſte betweene the knight and her, ſhe wrote vnto him as followeth.

cc My Lord Mendozza, I do not write theſe letters vnto
cc you, vppon any hope to be deliuered by your meane from ỹ
cc poinaũt pricke of fierce death which doth now beſiege me,
cc knowing death alwayes to be the true port & ſure refuge
cc of all afflicted perſons. For ſince that God willeth it, na-
cc ture permitteth it, and my heauie fortune conſenteth to it,
cc I will receiue it with righte good will, knowinge that the
cc Graue is none other but a ſtrong rampier and impregna-

ble

ble caſtel, wherein we cloſe our ſelues againſt the aſſaults of life, and the furious ſtormes of Fortune. It is farre better (as appeareth manifeſtly by me) with eyes ſhut, to waite in Graue, than longer to experimente life (the eyes beinge open) liuing with ſo many troubles vpon earth. But gladly woulde I bringe to remembraunce, and ſet before your eyes how ſometime I abandoned the place which, was no leſſe deare vnto me than mine owne country where I was borne, and delicatelye nouriſhed in honor and delightes, to extende my ſelfe into an infinite nomber of perills, contrarye to the duetie of thoſe that be of mine eſtate, loſinge the name of a Princeſſe to take the title of a caytife pilgrim, for the onely feruent and vnmeaſured loue which I bare you, before I did euer ſee you, or by anye meanes bounde thereunto by any your preceding benefites. The remembraunce whereof (as I thinke) ought now to deliuer ſuch an harde enterpriſe, to the port of your conſcience, that breaking the vaile of your tender hart, you ſhoulde therefore take pitie and compaſſion of my ſtraunge and cruell fortune. Which is not onely reduced to the mercy of a moſt dolorous priſō, and reſteth in the power of a bloudie & mercileſſe Tyrant: But (which is worſe) in the continuall hazarde of a ſhamefull death. Which I do not much lament hauing long deſired to accelerate the ſame with mine owne hands, to finde reſt in an other worlde: were it not that by death I ſhoulde leaue an eternall blot to my good name, and a perpetuall heritage of infamie to my houſe and kindred. Wherefore if it ſo be, that frendſhip loketh for no rewarde, or that frendſhip cānot be paid, but by the tribute of an other, make me now to taſte the auncient fruite of frendſhip. And if pitie be the ſole and onely kepe of Paradiſe, diſplaye it now on the behalfe of her, who (forſaken of al humaine ſuccour) attendeth but the fatall houre to bee throwen into the fier as a poore innocent lambe in ſacrifice. And for that the bearer ſhal make you vnderſtand the reſt by mouth (whom it may

"pleaſe you to credite as mine owne ſelfe) I will make an
"ende of my heauie letter. Beſeeching God to giue a good
"life vnto you, and to mee an honorable death.

The letter cloſed and ſealed vp with the ſeale of ỹ Ducheſſe, ſhee commaunded Emilia to deliuer it to Appian, & to require him to vſe diligence, not ceaſing to ride day and night vntil he come to the place where they left the knight Mendozza, giuinge charge to make him vnderſtande (at length) her innocencie and falſe accuſation. Appian being diſpatched, was ſo affected to pleaſe his maiſtreſſe, and ſo deſirous to ſee her deliuered of her impriſonmente, as hee ceaſſed not to trauaile day and night, till he came within ỹ Frontiers of Spaine. And after that he had riddē yet two or three dayes iourney: approching nere the place wher he thought to find the knight Mendozza, he began to inquire of the hoſt of the Inne where he laye that nighte, as well of his good health, as of his other affayres, whoe made him aunſwere, that it wente euen ſo euill with him at that preſent, as with ỹ pooreſt gentleman of al Spaine. Although
"that he were in deede a very great Lorde. For (quoth hee)
"within theſe few monethes paſt, his ennemies of Tolledo,
"whom he hath diuers times vanquiſhed, haue ſo wel allied
"themſelues together out of al partes of Spaine, that they
"haue brought a great armie to the field. And Fortune of ỹ
"warre hath been ſo fauourable vnto them, that they diſcō-
"fited Mendozza and all his armie. Who hath retired him-
"ſelfe, with thoſe few of his people that hee could ſaue aliue,
"into a litle towne of his, where yet to this preſent he is be-
"ſieged. And ſo it is (as euery man ſayth) ỹ he doth his ende-
"uour maruellouſlie well, in ſuch ſort as his ennemies cānot
"enter the towne. Maſter Appian then demaunded of him, if the towne beſieged were farre of. And he anſwered, that it was about vii. or viii. poaſtes. Then without making any longer inquirie, he toke a guide that accompanied him euen almoſte to the campe. And when he ſawe the towne

a farre

a farre of, he ſent the guide backe againe, & went the ſame daye, to offer his ſeruice to a certaine Captaine of lighte horſemen, who receiued him into wages, & then he bought armour to ſerue his purpoſe. And Maiſter Appian beſids his learning was a wiſe and polliticke man, and determined ſo ſone as any ſkirmiſhe did begin to be foremoſt, and in deede he vſed the matter ſo well, as hee ſuffred himſelfe to be taken priſoner and to be caried into the towne. And being within, he deſired thoſe that had taken him, to conduct him to the Lorde of Mendozza their Chieftaine. Whoe knew him by and by, for that in the voyage which the Ducheſſe made into Spaine, he ſaw him euer more neere her, then any other of her gentlemen. And after that the Lord of Mẽdozza had demaũded of him by what meanes he entred the towne. Upon his aunſwere, he perceyued that hee was a man of good experience, and well affected to the ſeruice of his Maiſtres, that durſt hazard his life in ſuch wiſe to obey her deſire. Incontinently maiſter Appian deliuered vnto him ẏ Ducheſſe letter. Which when he had read, he retired into his chamber with maiſter Appian, hauing his face all bedewed with teares. And becauſe that the letter did import credite, he prayed maiſter Appiã to declare his charge. Who ſaid vnto him. My Lady the Ducheſſe which is at this day the moſt afflicted Princeſſe vnder the coape of Heauen, commendeth herſelfe vnto your honour, and doth humbly beſeech you not to be offended for that at her laſt being in Galiſia, ſhee departed withoute accompliſhing her promiſe made vnto you. Prayinge you to impute the fault vpon the importunitie of the Duke her husband. Whom being conſtrained to obey, ſhe could not ſatiſfye the good will that ſhe bare vnto you. Then he began to declare in order howe the Earle of Pancaher fell in loue with her, and not beinge able to obtaine his deſire, cauſed his Nephew to hide him vnder her bedde: and how hee had ſlaine him with his owne handes. Finallye, the impriſonmente

of the Ducheſſe, and the iudgemente giuen againſte her. Wherat ỹ Lord of Mendozza was greatly aſtonned. And when hee had heard the whole diſcourſe, hee began to conceiue ſome euill opinion of the Ducheſſe. Thinkinge it to be incredible, that the Earle of Pancalier woulde ſo forget himſelfe, as to murder his owne proper Nephewe and adopted ſonne, to be reuenged of a ſeely woman. Neuertheleſſe, he diſſembled that which he thoughte, in the preſence
" of Maiſter Appian, and ſaid vnto him. Appian my frende,
" if mine aduerſe Fortune did not ſpeake ſufficiently for me,
" I could tel thee here a long tale of my miſeries. But thou
" ſeeſt into what extremitie I am preſently reduced, in ſorte
" that I am vtterlye vnable to ſuccour thy maiſtreſſe, I my
" ſelfe ſtil attending the houre of death. And all the pleaſure
" which preſentlye I can do for thee, is to ſet thee at libertie
" from the perill prepared for vs. And without longer talke, hee cauſed a hot ſkirmiſhe to be giuen to his enemies, to ſet Appian at large: who being iſſued forth, made certaine of his men to conduct him to place of ſuretie. Appian ſeinge no way for Mendozza to abãdon his citie for peril of death prepared for him and his, thoughte his excuſe reaſonable. And to attempt ſome other fortune, he vſed ſuch diligence, as he in ſhort time was retourned to Thurin, wher hauing cõmunicated the whole matter to Emilia, ſhe went ſtraight
" to the Ducheſſe, to whom ſhe ſaid. Madame God giue you
" the grace to be ſo conſtant in your aduerſities, as you haue
" an occaſion to be miſcontented with the beauy newes that
" Appian hath brought you. And then ſhe began to recompt vnto her the miſfortune of Mendozza, ỹ thraldome wherunto his enemies had brought him, and for concluſion, that there was no hope of helpe to be expected at his handes. Which when the Ducheſſe vnderſtoode ſhe cryed out. Oh
" poore vnhappy woman amongſte all the moſt deſolate and
" ſorowfull: Thou mayſt well now ſay that the lighte of thy
" life from henceforth beginneth to extinguiſhe and growe

to an

to an ende: ſeing, the ſuccour of him, vpon whom depended
thine aſſuraunce, is denied thee. Ah ingrate knight. Now
knowe I righte well (but it is to late) that of the extreme
loue which I did beare thee, ſprong ẏ firſt roote of all mine
euil, which came not by any accident of Foꝛtune, but from
celeſtiall diſpenſation and deuine pꝛouidence of my God.
Who now doth permit that mine Hipocriſie and counter-
faite deuotion ſhall receiue condigne chaſtiſemente foꝛ my
ſinne. And then Emilia, ſeing her ſo confounded in teares,
ſaid vnto her. Madame it doth euil become a greate wiſe
Pꝛinceſſe, (as you hitherto haue euer been reputed) to toꝛ-
mente her ſelfe: ſith that you know howe all the afflictions
which we receiue from heauen: be but pꝛoues of our fideli-
tie, oꝛ as your ſelfe confeſſeth by your complaintes, to bee
iuſt puniſhment foꝛ our ſinnes. Nowe then be it the one oꝛ
the other, you ought to be foꝛtified againſt the hard aſſault
of your ſoꝛow. And to remit the whole to ẏ mercie of God,
who of his aboundant grace, will deliuer you of your trou-
ble, as he hath done many others when they thought them
ſelues foꝛſaken of all helpe, by cauſinge certaine dꝛopps of
his pitie to raine down vpon them. Alas deare hart (quoth
the Ducheſſe) how eaſie a matter it is foꝛ one that is hole,
to comfoꝛte her that is ſicke. But if thou felteſt my griefe,
thou wouldeſt helpe me to complaine. So greuous a mat-
ter it is vnto mee, with life to looſe mine honour. And I
muſt confeſſe vnto thee, that I ſuſtaine a very cruel aſſault
both againſte death and life, and I cannot either with the
one oꝛ with the other, haue peace oꝛ truce in my ſelfe. Ne
yet do know how to diſſemble my ſoꝛowe, but that in the
ende the ſame will be diſcouered by the fumes of myne ar-
dente ſighes, which thinking to conſtraine oꝛ retaine, I do
nothinge els but burie my ſelfe within mine owne bodye:
Aſſuringe thee, that greater is one dꝛoppe of bloude that
ſwelteth the harte within, then all the teares that maye
be wept in the whole life without. Wheꝛefoꝛe I pꝛay thee

"leaue mee a litle to complaine my dolor, before I go to the "place from whence I ſhal neuer retorne. Emilia, that wil-lingly would haue ſacrificed herſelfe to redeeme the Prin-ceſſe from perill, not beinge able anye longer to endure the hard attempte wherewith pitie conſtrayned her hart, was forced to goe forth and to withdraw herſelfe, into another chamber, where ſhe began to lament after ſo ſtraunge ma-ner, as it ſeemed that it had been ſhee that was deſtened to death. Whiles theſe Ladies continued thus in their ſoro-wes, the knight Mendozza toke no reſt by day or night, ne ceaſſed continually to thincke vpon the diſtreſſe of the Du-cheſſe. And after that he had well conſidered the ſame, hee accuſed himſelfe for fayling her at that greate neede, ſay-"ing. Now do I well knowe that I am for euer hereafter "vtterly vnworthy to beare armes, or to haue the honoura-"ble title of knight, ſith the ſame order was giuen me, wyth "charge to ſuccour afflicted perſons, ſpecially Ladies, whoſe "force onely conſiſteth in teares. And yet neuertheleſſe, I "like a caytife) haue ſo ſhamefullye neglected my dutye to-"wards the chiefe parſon of ỹ worlde, to whom I am great-"ly bounden, as I die a thouſand times, that day wherein I "thincke vpon the ſame. It behoueth mee then from hence-"forth to eſtabliſhe new lawes to my deliberation, and that "I breake the gate of mine auncient rigor: louing much bet-"ter to die in honour, poore, and diſinherited, than to liue, "puiſſant, vnhappie, and a cowarde. Wherfore let fortune "worke her wil. Sithens the Ducheſſe did forſake her cõ-"trie, to come to ſee me in her proſperitie, I may no leſſe do now, but viſite her in her aduerſitie. Preſſed and ſolicited inwardlye with this newe deſire, determined whatſoeuer happened, to go to her reſcue. And hauinge giuen order to all that was neceſſary for the defence of the Citie, putting his confidence in the fidelitie of thoſe that were within: cauſed all his Captaynes to be called before him. Whom hee did to vnderſtande, how he was determined to go ſeeke

ſuc-

ſuccour, to leuie the ſiege of his enemies. Duringe which time he conſtituted his nere kiuſman, his liefetenaunte generall, and the nexte morning before the daye appeared hee gaue a great alarme to his ennemies, wherein hee eſcaped vnknowen. Being mounted vppon a Jenet of Spaine and out of daunger, he toke poſt horſe, and made ſuch expedition as hee arriued at Lions, where he prouided the beſte armour that he could get for money, and two excellent good horſes, whereof the one was a courſer of Naples. And hauing gotten a certaine vnknowen Page, toke his waye to Thurin, where beinge arriued, hee lodged in the ſuburbs, demaunding of his hoſt if there dwelt anye Spaniards in the towne, whoe made aunſweare, that hee knewe but one, which was a good olde religious father, that for the ſpace of twentie yeares was neuer out of Thurin, a man of vertuous life, and welbeloued of all the Citizens, and had the charge of a certaine conuente. Neuerthelesſe his lodginge was a parte from his brethren, to ſolace himſelfe, and to auoide the incommoditie of his age. The knight hauinge learned of his hoſte the place wher this good father dwelled, went with diligẽce betimes in the morning, to ſee him, and ſaid vnto him in ỹ Spaniſh tongue. Father God ſaue you I am a Spaniarde comen hither into this country for certaine mine affaires, towardes whom you mighte doe a charitable deede, if it woulde pleaſe you to ſuffer mee to remayne with you foure or fiue dayes onelye, crauinge nothinge els but lodginge: For my ſeruaunte ſhall prouide for other neceſſaries, whiche the good father willinglye graunted, muche maruelling at his goodlye perſonage. And whiles the Seruaunte was gone to the towne to bye victualls, the good father demaunded of him, of what Countrye in Spaine hee was, which the Knighte franckelye confeſſed. And the fatherlye man then hauinge his face all be ſwente with teares ſayde. Prayſed be the name of GOD that he hath giuen mee the grace before I dye, to

" ſee ſo great a Lord in my poore houſe, of whom I am both
" the ſubiecte and neighbour. And then he began to tell him
howe for deuocion he had forſaken his natiue countrey and
had beſtowed himſelfe there, the better to withdrawe him
from worldly vanitie. Neuertheleſſe he ſaid, that he knew
his father, his mother, & his graundfather. Deſtringe him
to vſe his houſe at commaundement, where he ſhould be o-
beyed as if he were in his owne. And thē the Lord of Men-
dozza ſaid vnto him, that he was departed from Spaine,
of purpoſe to ſee Fraunce, & there to make his abode for a
time. And ẏ paſſing by Lions one aduertiſed him of the in-
fortunate chaunce of the Ducheſſe, whō if he thought to be
innocent of the crime wherof ſhe was accuſed, he would de-
fend her to the ſheading of the laſt drop of his bloude. Ne-
uertheleſſe he would not hazard his life or ſoule, to defend
" her, if he knew her to be guiltie. Which words ẏ good man
" greatly allowed, ſaying vnto him. My Lord, touchinge her
" innocencie. I beleue there is at this day no man liuing, but
" herſelfe and the Earle, her accuſer, that can iudge. But
" one thinge I can well aſſure you, that wee heere, do deeme
" her to be one of the beſt princeſſes, that euer raigned in this
" countrie, ſpecially for that a yeare paſte, ſhe went on foote
" to S. Iames, with ſuche deuotion and humilitie, as there
" was no man but pitied to ſee her ſo mortified for her ſoules
" healthe. And to combate with the Earle of Pancalier, you
" ſeeme vnto me very yong. For beſides the continual exer-
" ciſe that he hath alwayes had in armes, he is wal eſteemed
" to be one of the ſtrōgeſt, readieſt & moſt redoubted knights
" of all Lombardie. The victorie notwithſtanding is in the
" hand of God, who can giue it to whom he pleaſeth: Which
" hee made manifeſt in the yong infante Dauid, againſt the
" monſtrous Giante Golias. To whom the knighte aunſwe-
" red, Father I haue deuiſed a waye how to prouide againſt
" the ſcruple of my conſcience, touchinge the doubte concey-
ued by mee, whether the combat that I ſhall take in hand

againſte

againſt the Earle of Pancalier, be iuſt or not, which is, that „
I vnder colour of confeſſion, might vnderſtand of the Du- „
cheſſe, the trouth of the matter. And therfore if you thinke „
good, I may cauſe my head and beard to be ſhauen, and ap- „
parelling my ſelfe in ſuch habite as you do weare, we two „
may eaſely (as I thinke) with the leaue of her keepers, go „
into the Ducheſſe chamber, to exhort her to pacience: for „
about this time of the yeare, the day is expired. Wherunto „
the good Father without any great difficultie, conſented,
aſwell for reſpect of his good zeale, as for his reuerent du-
tie to the nobilitie of the ſtock whereof he came. And ſo all
thinges prouided, they wente together towardes the ca-
ſtel of the Ducheſſe. And he that had ſeen the knight Men-
dozza in his Fryers apparell, would vnethes haue diſcer-
ned him, to be ſo great a Lorde as he was. For beſides his
diſſembled geſtures, & countenaunces, wherwith he knew
right wel how to behaue himſelfe, he was ſo leane & poore,
aſwell for the care of the battell he loſt, and ouerthrowe of
his people, as for the miſhap of the Ducheſſe, and the peril
of his life at hand, by reaſon of the combate betweene the
Earle and him, as he reſembled rather a holy S. Hierome,
mortified in ſome deſert, then a Lord, ſo noble and valiaũt
as he was. Arriued at the caſtell, the olde Father addreſſed
himſelf to the Guarde and ſayd. Maiſters becauſe the time
for the death of the miſerable Ducheſſe doth approche, we
be come hither to geue her ſuch ſpirituall cõforte, as wher-
with God hath inſpired vs, hoping that hee will this daye
geue vs the grace to induce her to die pacientlye, to the in-
tent that by loſſe of ẏ body, her ſoule may be ſaued. Wher-
unto they accorded willinglye, and cauſed the chamber to
be opened vnto them. They within the chamber went forth
incõtinently, thinking that the Gouernour had cauſed the
good fathers to come to heare the laſt cõfeſſion of the poore
Ducheſſe, who was ſo ſorowefull and penſife as ſhe was
forced to kepe her bed: which came very well to paſſe. For

the

the Knight Mendozza, comming neare vnto her bedde, with his face towardes her, ſo counterfayted hym ſelfe as he coulde not in any manner of wyſe be knowen. And the good olde father Fryer taried in a corner of the chamber a farre of, that he might heare none of their talke. And as the Lorde of Mendozza leaned vpon her bedſyde, he ſayde vnto her in the Italian tongue, which as ſo familiar to him
« as ỳ Spaniſhe. Madame, ỳ peace of our Lord be with you.
« Wherunto the Lady aunſwered. Father why ſpeake you
« of peace, ſithe I am in continuall warre, depriued of al con-
« tentation, and doe but attende the laſt end of my calamitie,
« whiche is a moſte cruell and ſhamefull death, without de-
« ſert. And then the Lorde of Mendozza, who had conſu-
« med the moſte parte of his youthe in good letters, ſaide vn-
« her. I bele Madame you be not ignorant howe miſeries
« and tribulations, fall not by accident or fortune, but by the
« prouidence or diſpenſation of God, before whome one litle
« Sparrowe onely is not forgotten, as the Prophete Amos
« doth manifeſte vnto vs, when he ſayth: There is none euil
« in the Citie that I haue not ſent thither. Whiche is alſo
« apparaunt in Iob, whome the Deuil could not afflicte, be-
« fore he had firſt obtayned licence of God. And it is neceſ-
« ſarye for you to knowe, that triqulations and affliction bee
« tokens of the fore choſen and elected people of God, and the
« true markes of our ſaluation. So that if you conſider the
« order of all the Scriptures, from the beginning of the
« worlde vntyll this tyme, you ſhall fynde that they whome
« God hath alwayes beſt loued and cheriſhed, he hath com-
« maunded to drinke of the cup of his paſſion, and to be more
« afflicted than others: examples whereof be common in the
« Scriptnres. As when Abell was afflicted by Caine his
« brother, Iſaac by his brother Iſmaell, Ioſeph by his bre-
« thren, Dauid by Abſolon his ſonne, the Children of Iſrael
« (the electe people of God) by Pharao. Whiche thinges be-
« inge profoundlye conſidered by Sainct Paule, he ſayde. If

we had

we had not an other hope in Ieſus Chriſte, than in the lyfe
preſent, we might well ſay that we were the moſt miſera-
ble of al others. And yet moreouer ſaith he, it is litle or no-
thing that we endure, in reſpect of ẏ which Ieſus Chriſte
hath ſuffered. Who (although he framed the whole worke
of the worlde) was called the Carpenters ſonne, for preа-
ching, he was ſclaũdered, he was caried vp to a mountaine
to be throwen down, he was called Glotton, Dronkard, lo-
uer of Publicanes & ſinners, Samaritane, Seducer, Di-
uell: ſaying, that in the name of Belzebub he did caſt out
Diuels. But let vs cõſider Madame, a litle further, what
thinges were done vnto him, hee was naked to clothe vs,
priſoner & bounde to vnbinde vs from the chain of the Di-
uell, made a ſacrifice to cleanſe vs of all our inward filth,
we doe ſee that he ſuffred his ſide to be opened, to cloſe vp
hell from vs, we ſee his handes whiche in ſo comely order
made both heauen & earth for the loue of vs, pearced with
pricking nailes, his head crowned wᵭ three ſharped thornes
to crowne vs with heauenly glorie. Let vs way that by his
dolour came our ioye, our health grew of his infirmitie, of
his death was deriued our life: and ſhould we be aſhamed
to haue our head touched with a fewe thornes of trouble?
Strengthen your ſelf then (Madame) in the name of God,
and make you ready to receiue death in the name of him ẏ
was not aſhamed to indure it for you. Is his ſtrong hande
any thing weakened? Is it not in him to ouerthrow the fu-
rie of your enemie, and ſo to humble your aduerſarie that
he ſhall neuer be able to be relieued? How many poore af-
flicted perſones haue there bene ſeene to be abandoned of
all ſuccour, whom he hath beheldе with his pitiful eye, and
reſtored to greater eaſe and contentation, then euer they
were in before? Learne then from henceforte, to comforte
your ſelfe in God, & ſay as the great doctor holy Ignatius
ſayd in his Epiſtle to the Romaines. I deſire that the fier,
the gallowes, the beaſtes, & all the tormentes of the Diuil

might

cc might exerciſe, their crueltie vpon me, ſo as I may haue
cc fruition of my Lorde God. And after that the Knight had
made an ende of his conſolation, the Ducheſſe was ſo repte
in contentation, as it ſeemed her ſoule had already taſted of
the celeſtiall delightes, and would flie euen vp into heauē.
And then feeling her ſelfe lightened like one that had eſca-
ped ſome furious tempeſt of the Seas, ſhe began to cōfeſſe
her ſelf vnto him from point to point, without omitting a-
ny thing of that whiche ſhe thought might greue her con-
cc ſcience. And when ſhe came to the accuſation of the Earle,
cc ſhe prayed God not to pardon her ſinnes, if ſhe had commit-
cc ted in deede or thought, any thing contrarie to the dutie of
cc mariage, except it were one diſhoneſt affection that ſhe had
cc borne to a knight of Spaine, whom vnder pretence of a fai-
cc ned deuotion, ſhe had viſited in Spayne, not committing
cc any thing ſauing good will whiche ſhee bare vnto him.
cc Which maketh me thinke (quod ſhe) that God being mo-
cc ued againſt myne hipocriſie, hath permitted this falſe ac-
cc cuſatiō to be rayſed againſt me by the Earle of Pancalier,
cc whiche I will patiently ſuffer, ſithe his will is ſo. Her con-
cc feſſion finiſhed, ſhe plucked of a ritche Diamonde from her
cc finger, ſaying. Good father, albeit I haue heretofore bene
cc a riche Princeſſe as you knowe, yet nowe myne ennemies
cc haue taken awaye all my goodes from me (this Diamond
cc except) which my brother the kyng of Englande gaue me,
cc when I was maried to the Duke of Sauoie. And becauſe
cc I can not otherwiſe doe you good, I geue it vnto you, pray-
cc ing you to remember me in your prayers, and to kepe it for
cc my ſake. For it is of a greater price then you thinke, and
cc may ſerue one daie to ſupply the neceſſitie of your conuent.
cc The confeſſion ended and the Diamond receiued, the twoo
cc friers retourned home to their cōuent. And ſo ſone as they
cc were arriued there, the Lorde of Mendozza ſayde vnto
cc hym. Father, nowe doe I knowe certainly, that this poore
cc woman is innocent, wherefore I am reſolued to defende

her ſo

ber ſo long as life doth laſt. And I feele my ſelfe ſo touched ,,
and preſſed in mynde, as I thinke it long till I be at the cõ- ,,
bat. Wherefore I praye you if it chaunce that Fortune be ,,
contrary vnto me, after my death, make it to be openly kno- ,,
wen what I am, and chiefly that the Ducheſſe may vnder- ,,
ſtande it, for ſpeciall purpoſe. And if it fortune that I eſca- ,,
pe with life (which can not be but by ỹ death of the Earle) ,,
be ſecrete vnto me in theſe thinges which I haue declared ,,
vnder the vayle of confeſſion. The good father promiſed ſo ,,
to doe. And hauing paſſed all that day and night in praiers
and ſupplications, he armed himſelfe, and made ready his
courſer. And when the dawning of the daye began to ap-
peare, he went in his armour to the gates of the Citie, and
calling one of the Guarde, he ſayd vnto him. Good fellowe ,,
I praye thee bidde the Counte of Pancalier to prepare him ,,
ſelfe, to mainteine the falſe accuſation, which he hath falſe- ,,
ly forged againſt the Ducheſſe of Sauoie. And further tell ,,
him, that there is a knight here, that will make him to de- ,,
nie his horrible vilany before hee parte the fielde, and will ,,
in the preſence of al the people cut out that periured toung, ,,
which durſt cõmit ſuch treaſon againſt an innocent Prin- ,,
ceſſe. This matter was in a moment publiſhed throughout
all the citie, in ſuch ſorte, as you might haue ſene the chur-
ches full of men & women, praying to God for the redemp-
tion of their maiſtreſſe. During the time that the Guarde
had done his Ambaſſage, the Lord of Mendozza went to-
wardes the piller where the accuſation was written, at-
tending when the accuſer ſhould come forth. The Earle of
Pancalier aduertiſed hereof, began incontinently to feele a
certaine remorſe of conſcience, which inwardly gript hym
ſo nere, as he endured a torment lyke to very death. And
being vnable to diſcharge himſelf therof, would willingly
haue wiſhed that he had neuer attempted the diſhonour of
the Lady. Neuertheleſſe that he might not ſeeme ſlacke in
that he had begonne, he ſent woorde to the knight, that he

ſhould

ſhould write his name vppon the Piller, to whome Mendozza made aunſwere, that he might not know his name, but the combat he would make him feele before the daye went downe. The Earle of Pancalier, made difficultie of the combat, if firſte he knewe not the name of hym with whom he ſhould haue to doe. The matter well aduiſed, it was clearely reſolued by the Iudges, that ẏ ſtatutes made no mention of the name, and therefore he was not bounde therevnto, but that the ſtatute did expreſſye fauour the defendant, geuing vnto him the election of the armour, and ſemblablie it was requiſite that the perſone accuſed, ſhould be brought forthyn the preſence of the twoo Champions. Which thi[illegible]es vnderſtanded by the Earle, albeit that he truſted not his quarell, yet making a vertue of neceſſitie, & not vnlearned in the order of ſuch conflictes, forthwith armed hymſelfe, and came into the place ordayned for the campe, where he founde his enemy armed, in a black armour, in token of mourning. Immediatly after, they ſent for the Ducheſſe, who ignorant of the matter, wondered much, when ſhe vnderſtode that there was a knight in the field all armed in black, ſeming to be a noble man, that promiſed ſome great matter by his dexteritie and bolde countenaunce, & would alſo mainteine againſt the Earle of Pancalier, his accuſation to be falſe. The poore Ducheſſe then not being able to imagine what he ſhould be, greatly troubled in mind, and comming forth of the Caſtel, was conducted in a litter couered with black cloth, accompanied with more then two hundreth Ladies and damſels, in ſemblable attire, vnto the place, where the Iudges, the people and the two Knightes were, who did but attend her cõming. And after they had wayted her going vp to a litle ſtage ordained for that purpoſe, the Deputies, for the aſſurance of ẏ campe, demaunded of her theſe wordes, ſaying Madame, For that you be accuſed of adulterie by the Earle of Pancalier here preſent, and the cuſtome requireth that you preſent a

Knight

Knight within the yeare and daye, by force of armes to
trye your right: are you determined to accepte him that is
here preſent, & to repoſe your ſelfe vpon him, both for your
fault and innocencie? The Ducheſſe aunſwered, that ſhee
committed all her right into the mercie of God, who knew
the inwarde thoughtes of her harte, and to the manhode of
the Knight, albeit ſhe thought that ſhe had neuer ſeen him.
And when ſhe had ended thoſe woordes, ſhe fell downe vp-
pon her knees, then lifting vp her eyes all blubbered with
teares towardes heauen, ſhe prayed. O Lorde God which
art the very veritie it ſelf, and knoweſt the bytterneſſe that
I fele in my harte, to ſee my ſelf falſely accuſed, ſhew forth
now the treaſure of thy grace vpō me wretched Princeſſe.
And as thou diddeſt deliuer Suſanna from her trouble, &
Iudith from Holofernes, deliuer me from the hande of a
Tyraunt. Who like a Lion hūgrie for my bloud, deuoureth
both myne honour & life. And hauing made an ende of her
prayer, ſhee remained vnmoueable as if ſhee had bene in a
traunce. And nowe the knight Mendozza, offended to ſee
the Earle to praunce his horſe vp and downe the campe,
making him to vaut and leape, with a countenaunce very
furious ſayd vnto hym. Traytour Counte, becauſe I am
certayne that the accuſatiō which thou haſt forged againſt
this Princeſſe, is inuented by the greateſt villany of the
woꝛld, I do maintaine here before al the people, that thou
haſt falſely accuſed her, and that thou lieſt in thy Throte,
in all that thou haſt contrined againſt her, and that thou
haſte deſerued to bee put into a ſacke, to bee caſte into the
Riuer for the murder that thou haſte committed vppon
thy Nephewe, the innocent bloud of whom, doth nowe crie
for vengeance to be taken for thy ſynne before God. And
ſcarce had he made an ende of his woordes, but the Earle
aunſwered him with a marueilous audacitie. Infamous
villain, which hideſt thy name for feare leſt thy vices ſhould
be knowen, thou arte nowe foully deceiued by thinking to

warrant

" warrant her, who hath offended againſt the Duke her
" huſbande, by her whoredome and adulterie. And for that
" thou haſt parled ſo proudly, and wilt not be knowen, I can
" not otherwyſe thinke but ẏ thou art ſome one of her Ruf-
" fians. And therefore I doe mainteine, that thou thy ſelfe
" doeſt lie, and that thou deſerueſt to be burnt in the ſame fire
" with her, or els to be drawē with foure horſes by the croſſe
" pathes of this towne, to ſerue for an example in the worlds
" to come, not onely for all laſciuious Ladies and Damſels,
" but alſo for ſuch abhominable whoremongers, as be lyke
" thy ſelfe. Incontinently after, the Harraulde of armes be-
gan to make the accuſtomed crie, and the Knightes to put
their Launces in their reſtes, they let run their horſes with
ſuch violence, as ioyning together their ſhieldes, their bo-
dies & heads, they brake their ſtaues, euen to their Gaū-
lets, ſo roughly, as they fel both down to the ground with-
out loſing, neuertheleſſe the raines of the bridles But the
heate of the harte, and deſire to vanquiſhe, made them rea-
dily to get vp againe, and hauing caſt away the troncheons
of their ſtaues, layd handes on their ſwordes, and there be-
gan ſo ſtraunge and cruell a ſturre betwene them, as they
which were the beholders were affrighted to ſee them able
to endure ſo much. For they were ſo fleſhed one vppon ano-
ther, and did ſo thicke beſtowe their ſtrokes without brea-
thing, as the lookers on confeſſed neuer to haue ſeene any
combat in Piemonte betwene two ſingle perſons, ſo furi-
ous, nor better followed then that of the Earle and of the
knight Mendozza. But the Spaniſhe knight encouraged
with the Juſtice of his quarell, & the reward of his fight,
ſeemed to redouble his force. For euen when euery man
thought that power muſt needes fayle him, it was ẏ hour
wherin he did beſt behaue himſelfe. In ſuch ſort, as his ene-
my not being able any lōger to ſuſtein his puiſſaūt ſtrokes,
being wounded in diuers partes of his body, did nowe no
more but defende himſelfe, and beare of the blowes which
were

were beſtowed vpon hym without intermiſſion. Whiche the Spaniſhe Knight perceiuing deſirous to make an ende of the combat, made ſo full a blowe with all his force vpon the top of his helmet, as he wounded his head very ſore. Wherewithall the harte of the Earle began very muche to faint, and ſtaggering here and there like a dronken man or troubled in his ſenſes, was conſtrayned to fall downe from his horſe. And then the Lorde of Mendozza diſmoũting him ſelf, and takyng holde vpõ the corps of his ſhield, plucked it ſo rudely to him, as he ouerturned him on his other ſyde. Then with the pomell of his ſworde he did ſo ſwetely bumbaſt him, as he made his helmet to flye of his head. And ſetting his foote vpõ his throte, made as though with the point of his ſwearde he woulde haue killed hym, ſaying. Counte, the houre is now come that thou muſt goe » make an accompt with God of thine vntrouth and treaſon » which thou haſt committed againſt the Ducheſſe. Ah ſir » knight (q the Earle) haue pitie vpon me, & kil me not I be- » ſeche thee, before I haue a litle bethought me of my con- » ſciẽce. Villaine (q the Spaniard) if I had any hope of thine » amendemẽt, I would willingly geue thee delay of life. But » being a traytour as thou art, thou wilt neuer ceaſſe to af- » flicte innocentes. Neuertheleſſe if thou wilt acknowledge » thy fault publikely, & require pardõ of the Ducheſſe, I wil » willingly leaue thee the to mercy of the Duke, although » that if I did obſerue the rigour of the lawe, I ſhould cauſe » the preſently to receiue ẏ payne prepared for the Ducheſſe. »

To whom he obeied for ſafegarde of his life, & kneeling on his knees before the Ducheſſe in the preſence of al ẏ people made a long diſcourſe of his loue towardes her of the repulſe that ſhe gaue him, and that for reuenge, he ayded him ſelfe with his Nephewe, thinking to ouerthrowe her chaſtitie. Finally, howe he had ſlayne his Nephewe, to induce the Duke to iudge her to be culpable of the adulterie. And then tourning his face towardes the Ducheſſe, ſayde vnto

cc her. Madame it behoueth me to cõfeſſe that the loſſe of this
cc one life is to litle to paye the tribute of the cureleſſe faulte
cc that I haue committed againſt you. Yet ſithe it is ſo, I be-
cc ſeche you by preferring pitie and mercy before the rigor of
cc your iuſtice, you will permit that I may liue yet a certayn
cc dayes to make a view of my life paſt, and to prouide for the
cc ſcruple of my conſcience. Then new ioye approched to gar-
niſhe the ſpirite of the Ducheſſe, and both the ſoule and the
harte began to ſhewe theim ſelues ioyful, in ſuch wyſe, as
ſhe was a long tyme without power to ſpeake, and did no-
thing els but ioyne her handes and lifte vp her eyes to hea-
cc uen, ſaying. O Lorde God, prayſed be thy holy name, for
cc that thou haſt cauſed the bright beames of thy diuinitie, to
cc ſhyne vpon the darkeneſſe, of my ſorrowfull life, enforcing
cc ſo well the mynde of this Traytour the murderer of mine
cc honour by the prickes of thy rigorous iuſtice, openly to ac-
cc knowledge before all men, the iniurie that he hath done
cc me. And without ſpeaking any more wordes, ſhe torned her
face for feare leſt ſhe ſhould make him any other aunſwere.
Then all the people began to laude and magnifie God, and
to ſing Pſalmes for ioye of the deliueraunce of their Du-
cheſſe, who was brought backe and reconducted into the
citie, with ſo great triumphe, as if ſhe had made a ſeconde
entrie. Whileſt theſe things were adoing, the deputies for
the ſuretie of the campe, cauſed the wounded Earle to be
borne to priſon. The knight Mendozza, ſtale ſecretly a-
waye, and after that he had in the next village dreſſed cer-
taine ſmall woundes that he had receiued in the combat, he
toke his way into Spain. In the meane time, the Ducheſſe
cauſed him to be ſought for in euery place, but it was not
poſſible to know any more newes of him, than if he had ben
neuer ſeene. Whereat being grieued beyond meaſure, ſhee
made her mone to Emilia, to know wherefore he ſhould ſo
cc abſent himſelf frõ her. Madame (q Emilia) he is ſure ſome
cc French knight, or els it may be ſome kinſmã of your own,

that

that is come out of England into theſe partes for certayne » other affaires. And fearing leaſt he ſhould bee ſtaied here, » will not be knowen, reſeruing the manifeſtation of himſelf » till an other tyme more apte for his purpoſe. Let him bee » what he may bee (ſayde the Ducheſſe) for ſo long as my » ſoule ſhall remayne within this bodye, I wyll doe hym ho- » mage during life. For the whiche I am ſo duelye bounde » debtour vnto him, as neuer ſubiecte was to his ſoueraigne » Lorde. In this tyme whyleſt theſe matters went thus at » Thurin, the Duke of Sauoie, the Lieutenant generall for the king againſt the Almaines, encountring with his ene- mies in a ſkirmiſhe, by fortune was ſlayne. Whereof the king of England being aduertiſed, and ſpecially of the de- liuerie of his ſyſter, deſirous to haue her about hym, ſente for her to marrie her agayne, and to leaue vnto her the en- tier gouernement of his houſholde. And to gratifie her at her firſte arriuall, he gaue the rule of his daughter vnto her, whiche was of the age of ſixtene or ſeuentene yeares, with whome by certayne meanes there was a mariage practized for the Prince of Spayne.

Let vs now leaue the Ducheſſe to liue in honor with her brother, & retorne we to the Lorde of Mendozza, who be- ing arriued nere vnto his citie, vnderſtode incontinently ỹ they which had beſiedged it had leuied their cãpe. For that they of the towne had ſo well done their endeuour, as not onely their enemies were not able to enter: But alſo they had in a certain ſkirmiſhe taken the Lord Ladolpho their Chieftaine priſoner, who was yet to that preſent detained: becauſe meanes were made for peace to be concluded on al ſides. Neuertheleſſe they durſt doe nothing without hym. Whereat the Lorde of Mendozza, beyng replenyſhed with greate ioye to ſee his affaires proſper ſo well in all partes entred the citie. And the articles of the peace com- municated vnto him, hee founde them verie profitable for him. And being concluded & approued by him, he began to

ſolace himſelfe in his owne houſe, without taking care for any thing ſaue onely from thenceforth to thinke by what meane he might goe to ſee the Ducheſſe, and recount vnto her the iſſue of his affaires. But Fortune prepared him a more readie occaſion than he thought of. For the kyng of Spaine being aduertiſed of certaine talkes that had bene bruted of the mariage of his ſonne with the daughter of ꝑ king of Englande, determined with ſpeede, to ſend a great companie of noble men thyther, to demaunde his daughter in mariage Of the which the Lorde of Mendozza, as wel for his nobilitie, as for the knowledge he had in languages, and other good diſciplines, was elected chiefe, with ſpeciall cõmiſſion to accorde the mariage in caſe it ſhould ſo pleaſe the kyng. The Ambaſſadours vſed ſuche expedition, that they arriued at London where the kinge for that preſente made his abode. Who aduertiſed of their comming, gaue commaundement to the Princeſſe his daughter, and to the Ducheſſe his ſiſter, to prepare them ſelues to receyue a great companye of Lordes of Spayne, whiche that daye would come to his Courte to treate of the aforeſayde mariage. And God knoweth if the Ladies ſpared oughte of that, whiche they thought might augmente their beautie. The king alſo for his part, to doe them more honour, went to meete them in perſone, and at their arriuall, gaue them a moſte friendly welcome. But ſodaynly as they preſented them ſelues to doe their reuerence to the Ladies: the Ducheſſe who incõtinently knew the Lord of Mendozza, began ſo to deteſte him, as ſhe was not able to rule her ſelfe, but (with a ſodayne mutation of colour ſhe abandoned the companie. The Lorde of Mendozza, knowyng the originall of her griefe, lefte not his dutie vndone towardes the Princeſſe, and other Ladyes whyche accompanied her, diſſembling to haue taken no regarde to the abſence of the Ducheſſe. And Emilia, who had followed her miſtreſſe into the chambre, fearynge leaſte there were ſome

ſodayn

ſodaine miſchaunce happened, demaunded of her, wherfore ſhe was retired from a company ſo honourable: and ſayd ỳ ſhe did great wrong to her owne eſtimation. To whom the Ducheſſe (with extreme choler) made aunſwere. Why E- »»
milia, thinkeſt thou that I haue the harte to ſuffer my hand »»
to be kiſſed, by that moſte trayterous and moſte cowardly »»
knight of the worlde, who made no conſcience to abandone »»
me in the greateſt neceſſitie of my life: where as I contra- »»
ry to the dutie of all the lawes of honour, and contrary to »»
my ſexe, did ſo muche abaſe my ſelfe, as to viſite hym in »»
Spayne. Naye rather my dayes ſhall ceaſſe their courſe, »»
than myne affection ſhall euer reuiue in him: He ſhall ne- »»
uer receiue any other fauour of me, but as of his moſt cru- »»
ell and mortall enemy. And then Emilia ſmiling, ſayd vn- »»
to her. In good earneſt Madame, I thought that the ſhar- »»
peneſſe of your impriſonement, with the other tormentes »»
paſte, whiche you indured, might haue put all theſe mat- »»
ters quite in obliuion, and woulde ſo haue mortified you, »»
that you had wholly loſt all deſire of reuenge. But ſo farre »»
as I can perceiue, I am deceiued of myne accompte, ſeyng »»
that ſodaynly ſo ſoone as you behelde the knight Mendoz- »»
za, you began to flie, as if your ghoſtly enemy had come be- »»
fore you, in his moſte hideous & horrible forme. Yet coulde »»
not Emilia perſwade her, to ſhewe her ſelfe abroade before dynner, tyll the king ſent for her, with wooрde that if ſhe came not, he would himſelfe fetche her. And then a little ſhamefaſt colour, began to renew her Alablaſter cheekes, whiche rendred her ſo ruddye and fayre, as the Spanyards confeſſed, neuer to haue ſeene in any parte of the worlde, where they had bene, one ſo fayre and beautifull a wydow. The tables couered for dynner, the king tooke his place, and for their more honourable entertaynement, cauſed thē to be ſet at his owne table: and made the Lorde of Mendozza, to be placed right ouer againſt the Ducheſſe his ſiſter: Who was ſo inflamed and moued with choler, as

ſhee durſte not lifte vp her eyes for feare leaſt vpon the ſodayne ſhe ſhould bee perceyued: Whiche eyes ſparkeling ſometymes with greate yre, reſembled properlye twoo ſtarres of the night, that ſhoote forth their brightneſſe vpō the earth, when all thinges be in ſilence. And all this tyme the Lorde of Mendozza conceyued ſuche pleaſure at theſe prettie toyes, as he would not haue chaunged his ioy for the beſt citie in all Englande. And as the Ducheſſe in this order did firmely fixe her eyes, ſhee ſawe by Fortune a ryche Diamonde that Mendozza ware vpon his finger, whereupon hauing oftentymes caſte her eyes, ſhe ſodaynly knew that it was the very ſame that ſhee had geuen to the good Father that confeſſed her at Thurin, the daye before ſhee was leadde to the Piller, and began then to imagine with her ſelfe, how it might be that he could come by the ſame. And not knowing what to ſaye immediatly after ſhee had dyned, and the tables taken vp, ſhe cauſed Maiſter Appian her Phiſitian to be called vnto her: whome ſhe deſyred to know of the Lord of Mendozza, by what meanes he came by the Diamonde that he ware vpon his finger. Whiche Appian did. And after he had talked with the knight of certaine common matters, he ſayde vnto hym. My Lorde, you haue a very fayre Diamonde there, whiche as I thinke, I haue ſene before this tyme, wherefore Sir I praye you tel me where you had it. To whome the Lorde of Mendozza anſwered in laughing wiſe. Maiſter Appian, where I had the ring, is to ſecret for you to know, but tell my Lady the Ducheſſe, that the knowledge thereof onely appertayneth vnto her. Whiche aunſwere Appian declared to the Ducheſſe. And albeit that ſhe tooke no great pleaſure in the aunſwere: Yet neuertheleſſe very deſyrous to vnderſtande the truth, ſhe repayred to the Knight which the ſame time walked alone in a Gallerie, who after he had kyſſed her handes, began to diſcourſe of his fortunes paſt, declaring vnto her, that he repented, of the refuſall that he made to

Maiſter

Maiſter Appian for her ſuccour, and howe within a while after he rode to Thurin: adding the deuiſe whereby hee had heard her confeſſion: and howe the Diamonde came into his handes, putting her in remembraunce from worde to worde, of all his talke with her, during the tyme that he was in Friers weede, then finally his victorie againſt the Earle, his ſecrete flyght, and all the whole as before hath bene declared. Whereat the Ducheſſe no leſſe abaſhed thã rapt w ioy and admiration, fel downe in a ſwoune betwene his armes, holding her mouth ſo faſte cloſed againſt his, that it ſeemed ſhe would drawe the ſoule out of his bodye, to ioyne and vnite with hers. And after ſhe had remayned a whyle in this traunce, ſhee cried out. O poore harte ſo long tyme plagued. Whiche haſt for the ſpace of a yeare nowe paſſed, bene toſſed with ſo many tempeſtes and diuers aſſaultes of Fortune. Receiue at this preſent the medicine apt for thy health, ſithens thou enioyeſt him betwene thine armes, that by the pryce of his blood, valiant force, & extreme trauailes, hath rayſed thee from death to life. Let Fortune from henceforth doe her will in that ſhe is able to deuiſe againſt me. And yet wyll I for this onely benefite, confeſſe my ſelfe this daye to be eternally bounde vnto her. Madame (quod the Knight) I praye you let vs not renewe the memorie of our former griefes: wherein if by any meane, I haue done you good, I was but the organe or inſtrumente thereof. For God, who is the righter of all wrong, did neuer ſuffer Iuſtice without his due acquitall, howe long ſo euer he taried. So (you not beyng in any wyſe culpable) if I had neuer enterpryſed the combate whereunto I was bounde: Our Lorde God would haue rayſed ſome other to achieue the ſame. Well then my Lord (q the Ducheſſe) ſithens it pleaſeth you not, that I renewe my dolours paſt, which haue taken ende by your meane: I ſhall humbly beſeche you to excuſe mee, if this daye I haue not geuen you that honour and good entertainement whiche

" you deſerued: Aſſuring you that before you ſhall departe
" this countrey, I wyll make you amendes according vnto
" your owne diſcretion. Madame (quod the knyght) for all
" the wronges that euer you did vnto me, (if they may be cal-
" led wronges (the curteſie, fauour and gentleneſſe which al-
" readie I haue receiued, doth at one inſtant requite and re-
" compence. Neuertheleſſe if it may pleaſe you to receyue
" me for your ſeconde huſbande, ſithe it hath pleaſed God to
" call your firſt out of this lyfe into an other: that is and ſhal
" bee the fulneſſe of all the felicitie that I looke for in this
" worlde My Lorde Mendozza, (ſayd the Ducheſſe) the re-
" compence whiche you demaunde of me, is very little in re-
" ſpect of the amendes and ſatiſfaction whiche I oughte to
" make you. But of one thing I can well aſſure you, that if I
" had the whole world at my commaundement, and that I
" were the greateſt Princeſſe of the earth, in all kinde of be-
" auties and giftes of grace, I would willingly ſubmitte my
" ſelf vnto you, in conſideration of your worthineſſe, & bene-
" fits beſtowed vpon me with ſo willing a minde, as preſent-
" ly I do yelde vnto your requeſt. And I muſt nedes cõfeſſe,
" that I am now greatly bounde to Fortune, that hath deli-
" uered me into your handes, from whome I hope neuer to
" be ſeuered, ſo long as my ſoule ſhall reſte within my body:
" being predeſtinated as I beleue, to no other ende: but to
" ſerue and obey you. And as they thought to make a longer
diſcourſe of their talke, Emilia told thẽ, that the king was
in counſell, and that the other Lordes of Spaine attended
his comming. Who with his company, being come before
the king, & hauing done their reuerence vnto him, he begã
to declare his charge, and how they were of purpoſe ſente
to his maieſtie, in the behalfe of the king of Spaine, to de-
maunde the Lady his doughter in mariage, for his ſonne ỹ
Prince of Spain: which he had choſen aſwel to haue his al-
liaunce (a matter by him only deſired) as for the beautie and
good grace, for the which ſhe was ſpecially recommended.

And if

And if ſo bee, he had willed to haue choſen his matche elſ where, ẏ there was not at that day, any Prince in al Europa, that woulde not willingly haue accorded vnto him. To whom the kiug auuſwered. My frendes, I feely my ſelfe ſo much honored, for that it hath pleaſed the king to ſend vnto me, as if he had not preuẽted me, I had thought to haue ſent vnto him for the ſame purpoſe. And albeit that, herein he hath vanquiſhed me in ciuilitie and courteſie: yet I will not faile if I can to ſurmount him in amitie. For he hath bound me during life, in ſuch wiſe, as he and my Lord his ſonne, may boldly vaunt themſelues, to haue a king of England and a realme, from henceforth at their commaundement. The mariage concluded, the Ducheſſe diligentlye made ſute to talke with ẏ king alone, to communicate vnto him, the agreement betweene the Lord of Mendozza & her. And perceiuing that the king was gone into his chamber, ſhe went vnto him, and being alone with him, hauing her face al bedewed with teares, kneling, ſhe ſaid vnto him. My Lord, when I conſider my miſeries paſte, and the cruell aſſaultes that I haue receiued of Fortune, beinge not onely committed to the mercy of a moſte cruell priſon: but (which is more) at the very laſt point of a ſhamefull death: I am ſo afflicted, that the onely remembrauce of thoſe miſeries terrifieth me, and cauſeth a certaine extreme bitterneſſe to riſe in my hart. And when on ẏ other ſide, I thinke of the greate goodneſſe that Almightie God hath ſhewed vnto me, by ſtretching forth his mighty hand to deliuer me out of that perill: chieflie to make mee triumphe, ouer the death of mine enemy. I feele ſuch comforte of minde as all the delightes of the world, be but griefes, in reſpect of the ioye, pleaſure and contentacion, that I receiue Wherein nothing offendeth me ſo much as hitherto that I haue not acknowledged the benefit receiued of him, who was Elected of God to be my deliuerer: neuertheleſſe ſir, by your onely word, you may both ſatiſfie him, and content mee, yea

and

" and (as it were) prolõg the dayes of my life. The king, who loued his ſiſter no leſſe than his daughter, ſeing her pitifull complainte and teares, and to ſpeake with ſuche affection, toke her vppe, and holdinge her by the arme, ſaid vnto her. Deare ſiſter and frende, if I haue not to this preſent, ſatiſfied him that was the cauſe of your deliueraunce, I cãnot be accuſed of ingratitude, for that hitherto I haue not knowen him, ne yet your ſelfe doth knowe what he is, (as you haue oftentimes tolde me:) But of one thing you maye be aſſured: and I ſweare vnto you at this preſẽt, by my Scepter, that, ſo ſone as I ſhall vnderſtande what he is, I will vſe him in ſuch wiſe, as he ſhall thincke himſelfe ſatiſfied and contented, thoughe it did coſte me the one halfe of my kingdome. For the pleaſure, which he hath done vnto you, bindeth not you alone, but mee alſo, to be partaker of that band, both our honours being ioyntly boũd therunto. Alas my Lord (ſaid the Ducheſſe) it is the knighte Mendozza, chiefe of this Ambaſſade, to whom, if it pleaſe you to giue your conſent ẏ we two might marrie, all auncient bands & debtes ſhal remain extinct, & ſo, by a ſmal reward, you ſhal reſtore life to two perſons, almoſt dead, for ẏ exceſſiue loue which one beareth to the other. And therewithal ſhe begã to declare to the king, thoriginal and proceſſe of the whole diſcourſe. Firſt the voyage of the ſiſter of Mendozza into Piemont, her owne peregrination to S. Iames, the honeſt amitie betweene her & Mendozza, the meſſage of maiſter Appian to Mendozza, his refuſall of that requeſt, his retorne after to Thurin, her confeſſion, the Diamonde knowen againe, finally, how all the whole had paſſed betwene them, (the counterfaite deuocion to Sainct Iames onelye reſerued) which for her honours ſake ſhee woulde not tell him. The kinge vnderſtanding this ſtraunge diſcourſe, was ſo rapte with ioye, and appalled with gladneſſe, as hee could not for a longe time, make any aunſwere. When

his

his paſſion was moderated, hee ſaid to his ſiſter. But be you well aſſured, that hee will receiue you for his wyfe: Yea my Lord (quoth ſhee) I ought well to be aſſured of it, ſince he himſelfe hath made the requeſte. And truly (quoth the kinge) GOD forbidde that I ſhould be the cauſe, to breake ſo holy an accorde. For if the Lorde of Mendozza were inferiour in qualitie, nobility, and goods, than hee is: yet hath he ſo much done, both for you and mee, as we may not honeſtlie refuſe him. Howe muche more then be wee bounde to him: being a greate Lorde as hee is, iſſued of noble and famous families of Spaine, riche in goodes, and hauinge hazarded his life for the conſeruation of your honour: and therewithall ſeeketh mine alliaunce. Goe your wayes, (dere ſiſter and frend) goe your wayes, make much of him, and entreate him, as you thincke beſte. And when I haue walked two or three tornes here, I will come vnto him, to cõmunicate more amplie of theſe matters. Scarce had the Ducheſſe leyſure to aduertiſe the Lorde of Mendozza of that which was concluded betweene the kinge and her, but he came downe into the Hall, where the moſte parte of the Spaniſhe Gentlemen walked, and with a very ioyfull countenaunce wente to the knight. To whom hee ſaide. My Lorde Mendozza, I praye you to embrace mee. For ſo farre as I ſee, I haue a better intereſte in you than I thought. And the Lorde of Mendozza thinking to embrace him, his knee vppon the grounde, was immediatlye deſired to ſtande vp. Whom the kinge cleeping aboute the necke, ſaide vnto him, ſo loude as euerye man might heare. Sir knighte, by the GOD of Heauen, ſince that I might commaunde in the realme of Englande, I haue not entertayned Gentleman, nor Prince, to whom I haue bin more endebted, than to you: nor neuer was there any dearer vnto mee, than you, for the greate gratitude and kindneſſe, wherwith you haue bound me, and wherby I ſhal not from

" from henceforth be ſatiſfied, vntil I haue in ſome thinge.
" acknowledged the bonde wherein I am bounde vnto you
When hee had ſpoken thoſe wooꝛdes, hee began to declare from point to point, in the pꝛeſence of all the aſſemblie, the contentes of the whole befoꝛe declared hiſtoꝛie. Whereat, there was none in all the company, but was greatly aſtonned at the pꝛudence of Mendozza, by ſo well diſſembling, and accompliſhing ſo great enterpꝛiſes, without makinge them manifeſt. And the king of Englande, commaunded that the mariage of him and his ſiſter ſhoulde be publiſhed thꝛoughe out his realme, that all his nobilitie might be aſſembled. And foꝛ his greater honour, the kinge did from thencefoꝛth conſtitute him his high Conſtable of Englād, and repoſed himſelfe in him, as vppon a firme piller, foꝛ the adminiſtratiō of the wayghtieſt affaires of his realme. The mariage ſolempnized and conſummate with the Ducheſſe, hee retourned into Spaine, to accompanye the Pꝛince into England, whoſe mariage was celebꝛated at London, with the king of Englands daughter, in ſuch pompe, and ſolempnitie, as ſemblable Pꝛinces be commōlie accuſtomed to do in ſuch like caſes.

The

The Counteſſe of Salesburie

¶ A King of Englande, loued the daughter of one of his noble men, vvhich vvas Counteſſe of Salesburie, vvho after great ſute to atchieue that he could not vvinne, for the entire loue hee bare her, and her greate conſtancie, hee made her his Queene and vvife.

The. xlvi. Nouell.

THis Hiſtorie enſuinge, deſcribing the perfect figure of womanhode, the naturall qualitie of Loue incenſinge the hartes indifferentlye of all Natures children, the liuely Image of a good condicioned Prince, the zealous loue of parentes, and the glorious reward that chaſtitie conduceth to her imbracers, I deeme worthie to be annexed to the former Nouell, wherein as you haue hearde, bee contayned the ſtraunge aduentures of a fayre and innocente Ducheſſe. Whoſe life tried like gould in the fornace, glittereth at this daye, like a brighte ſtarry Planet, ſhining in the firmament with moſte ſplendent brightneſſe aboue all the reſt, to the eternall prayſe of feminine kinde. And as a noble man of Spaine, by beate of Loues rage, purſued ẏ louinge trace of a king of Englãds ſiſter: euen ſo a renowmed and moſt victorious Prince (as the Auctour of theim both affirmeth) thorow the furie of that paſſion, which (as Apuleus ſayth) in the firſte heate is but ſmall, but aboundinge by increaſe, doth ſet all men on fier (maketh earneſt ſute by diſcourſe of wordes, to a Lady herſelfe, a Counteſſe, and Earles doughter, a beautifull & faire wighte, a creature incomparable, the wife of a noble man his owne ſubiect: who ſeing her conſtante forte to be impregnable, after pleaſaunte ſute and milde requeſte, attemp-

tempteth by vndermining to inuade, and when with ſiege prolixe, hee perceiueth no ingenious deuiſe can atchieue ſ long and painfull worke, he threateth mighte and maine, dire and cruell aſſaultes, to winne and gette the ſame, and laſte of all ſurrendred into his hands, and the priſoner crying for mercie, he mercifully is contented to mitigate his conceyued rigour, and pitifully to releaſe the Lady, whom for her womanlye ſtoutneſſe and coragious conſtancie, hee imbraceth and entertayneth for his owne. This greate and worthy king, by the firſt viewe of a delicate Ladie, thorowe the ſappe of Loue ſoaked into his noble harte, was tranſported into manye paſſions, and rapte with infinite pangues, which afterwards, bredde him great diſquietnes. This worthie Prince (I ſay) who before that time like an Alexander, was able to conquere and gaine whole kingdomes, and made all Fraunce to quake for feare, at whoſe approch the gates of euery Citie did flie open, and fame of him prouoked ech Frenchmans knee to bowe, whoſe helmet was made of manhods trampe, and mace well ſteeled with ſtoute attemptes, was by the weakeſt ſtaye of dame Natures frame, a woman: (ſhaped with no viſage ſterne or vglie loke) affrighted & appalled, whoſe harte was armed with no lethal ſword or deadly Launce, but with a Curat of honour and weapon of womanhode, and for all his glorious conqueſts, ſhe durſt by ſinguler combat to giue refuſall to his face. Which ſinguler perſeueration in defence of her chaſtitie inexpugnable, eſclariſheth to the whole flocke of womankinde, the brighte beames of wiſedome, vertue, and honeſtie. No prayers, intreatie, ſuplication, teares, ſobbes, ſighes, or other like humaine actions, poured forth of a Princeſſe hart, could withdraw her from the bounds of honeſtie. No promiſe, preſent, practiſe, deuiſe, ſute, freinde, parent, letter, or counſellour, could make her to ſtray oute of the limites of Uertue. No threate, menace, rigour, feare, puniſhmente, exile, terror, or other crueltie,

could

could diuert her from the ſiege of conſtãcie. In her youthly time, till her mariage day, ſhee delighted in virginitie. From her mariage day during her widow ſtate, ſhe reioyſed in chaſtity. The one ſhe conſerued like a hardie Cloelia, the other ſhe kept like a conſtant Panthea. This notable hiſtorie therfore I haue purpoſed to make common, aſwel for encouragement of Ladies to imbrace Conſtancie, as to imbolden them in the refuſall of diſhoneſt ſutes for which if they do not acquire ſemblable honour, as this Lady did, yet they ſhall not be fruſtrate of the due reward incidente to honour, which is, fame and immortall prayſe, Gentlemen may learne by the ſucceſſe of this diſcourſe, what tormentes be in Loue, what trauailes in purſute, what paſſions like ague fittes, what diſconueniences, what loſte labour, what plaints, what griefes: what vnnatural attemptes be forced. Many other notorious examples be contayned in the ſame, to the greate comforte and pleaſure, as I truſt, of the wel aduiſed reader. And although the auctour of the ſame, perchaunce hath not rightlye touched the proper names of the Aucthours of this tragedie, by perfecte appellations: as Edvvard the third for his eldeſt ſonne Edward the Prince of Wales (who as I read in Fabian) maried the Counteſſe of Salesburie, which before was Counteſſe of Kent, and wife vnto ſir Thomas Holland: & whoſe name, (as Polidore ſayth) was Iane, daughter to Edmond Earle of Kent, of whõ ẏ ſame Prince Edvvard, begat Edvvard ẏ died in his childiſh yeres, & Richard ẏ afterwards was king of England the ſecond of ẏ name, and for ẏ ſhee was kin to him, was deuorced, whoſe ſayde father maried Philip, doughter to the Earle of Henault, and had by her vii. ſonnes: And Alips for the name of the ſayde Counteſſe beinge none ſuche amonges our vulgare termes, but Froſard remembreth her name to be Alice, which in deede is common amonges vs: and the Caſtell of Saleſburie, where there is none by that name, vppon the Frontiers of Scot-

of Scotlande albeit the ſame Froſard doth make mention of a Caſtell of the Earle of Salesburies, giuen vnto him by Edvvard the third when he was ſir VVilliam Montague and maried the ſaide Ladye Alice, for his ſeruice and prowesſe againſt the Scottes: and Roſamburghe for Roxborroughe: and that the ſaid Edvvarde when hee ſaw that hee could not by loue and other perſwaſions attaine the Coũteſſe, but by force, maried the ſame Counteſſe, which is altogether vntrue, for that Polydore and other aucthors, do remember but one wife that hee had, which was the ſayde vertuous Queene Philip, with other like defaults: yet the grace of ẏ Hiſtorie for all thoſe errours is not diminiſhed. Whereof I thoughte good to giue this aduertiſemente. And waying with my ſelfe that by the publiſhing hereof, no diſhonour can redounde to the illuſtre race of our noble kinges and Princes, ne yet to the blemiſhinge of the fame of that noble king, eternized for his victories and vertues in the aũcient Annales, Chronicles and Monuments, forren and domeſticall, (becauſe all natures children be thral and ſubiecte to the infirmities of their firſt parentes,) I do with ſubmiſſion humblie referre the ſame, to the iudgement and correction of them, to whom it ſhall appartaine. Which beinge conſidered, the Nouell doth begin in this forme and order,

THere was a kinge of Englande named Edvvarde, which had to his firſt wyfe, ẏ doughter of ẏ Coũte of Henault, of whom hee had children, the eldeſt whereof was called alſo Edvvard, the renowmed Prince of Wales, who beſides Poictiers ſubdued ẏ Frẽch men, toke Iohn the French king priſoner, and ſent him into England. This Edvvarde father of the Prince of Wales, was not onely a capitall ennemie of the Frenchmen, but alſo had cõtinual warres with the Scottes his neighbours, and ſeing himſelf ſo diſquieted on euery ſide, ordayned

ned for his Lieutenaunt vpon the frontiers of Scotland, one of his Captaynes, named VVilliam Lord Mõtague. To whom becauſe he had fortified Roxborough, & addreſſed many enterpriſes againſt ỹ enemies, he gaue ỹ Earledome of Sarisburie, & maried him honourablie wᵗ one of the faireſt Ladies of England. Certaine dayes after, Kinge Edward ſent him into Flaũders, in ỹ companie of ỹ Earle of Suffolke, where Fortune was ſo contrarie, as they were both taken priſoners, by the Frenchmen, and ſente to the Louure at Paris. The Scottes hearing tell of their diſcomfiture, and how the marches were deſtitute of a gouernour, they ſpeedely ſente thether an armie, with intente to take the Counteſſe priſoner, to raſe her Caſtle, & to make bootie of the riches that was there. But the Earle of Sarisburie before his departure, had giuen ſo good order, ỹ their ſucceſſe was not ſuch as they hoped. For they wer ſo liuely repelled by them ỹ wer within, as not able to indure their furie, in ſteede of making their approches, they were conſtrayned to go further of. And hauinge intelligence by certaine ſpies, that the king of England was departed frõ London, with a great armie, to come to ſuccour the Counteſſe, percepuinge that a farre of, they were able to do litle good, they were faine ſhortly to retire home again to their ſhame. King Edward departed from London, trauayling by great iourneyes with his armye towardes Sarisburie, was aduertized, that the Scottes were diſcamped, and fled againe into Scotland. Albeit they had ſo ſpoyled the caſtle in manye places, as the markes gaue ſufficiente witneſſe, what their intente and meaning was. And althoughe the kinge had thoughte to retourne backe againe vppon their retire, yet being aduertiſed of the great battrie, and of the hotte aſſault they had giuen to the Caſtell, he went forth to viſit the place. The Counteſſe whoſe name was AElips, vnderſtanding of the kinges comming, cauſing all things to bee in ſo good readineſſe, as the ſhortneſſe of the time

could ſerue, furniſhed her ſelfe ſo well as ſhee could with a certaine nomber of Gentlewomen and Souldiours that remained, to iſſue forth to meete the king, who beſides her natural beautie, for the which ſhe was recõmended aboue all the Ladies of her prouince, was enriched with the furniture of vertue and curteſie. Which made her ſo incomparable, that at one inſtante, ſhee rauiſhed the hartes of all the Princes and Lordes that did behold her, in ſuch wiſe, as there was no talke in all the armie, but of her graces & vertue, and ſpecially of her excellẽt and ſurpaſſing beauty. The kinge hauing made reuerence vnto her, after hee had well viewed all her geſtures and countenaunces, thoughte that hee had neuer ſeen a more goodlier creature. Then rapte with an incredible admiratiou he ſaid vnto her. Madame Coũteſſe, I do beleeue, that if in this attire and furniture wherein you now be, accompanied with ſo rare and excellente beautie, had beene placed vppon one of the rampiers of your Caſtell, you had made more breaches with ẏ lokes and beames of your ſparkling eyes, in the hartes of your ennemyes, than they had beene able to haue done in your Caſtel, with their thundring ordinaunce. The Coũteſſe somewhat ſhamefaſt and abaſhed, to heare herſelfe ſo greatly prayſed of a Prince ſo greate, began to bluſhe and taint with roſeall colour, the whiteneſſe of her alablaſter face. Then lifting vp her baſhfull eyes, somwhat towards ẏ king, ſhe ſaid vnto him. My ſoueraigne Lord, your grace may ſpeake your pleaſure. But I am well aſſured, that if you had ſeen the nomber of ſhotte, which by the ſpace of xii. houres were beſtowed ſo thicke as hayle, vpon euery part of ẏ Fort, you might haue iudged what good wil ẏ Scots did beare vnto mee and my people. And for my ſelfe I am aſſured, that if I had made proufe of that which you ſaye, and ſubmitted my ſelfe to their mercie, my bodye nowe had been diſſolued into duſte. The king aſtonned wyth ſo ſage and wyſe aunſwere, chaunging his minde, went towarde

the

the Caſtell: where after interteignement and accuſtomed welcome, he began by litle and litle, to feele himſelfe attached wyth a newe fier. Which the moze he laboured to reſiſt, the moze it inflamed. And feelinge this new mutation in himſelfe, there came into his minde, an infinite nomber of matters, balancing betweene hope and feare, ſomtimes determining to yeld vnto his paſſions, and ſomtimes thinking clerely to cut them of, foz feare leaſt by committinge himſelfe to him affections, the vrgent affayres of the warres, wherewith hee was inuolued, ſhould haue ill ſucceſſe. But in the ende vanquiſhed wyth Loue, hee purpoſed to proue the hart of the Counteſſe, and the better to attayne the ſame he toke her by the hande, and prayed her to ſhewe him the commodities of the Foztreſſe. Which ſhee did ſo well, and with ſo good grace, intertaigne them all ẏ whyle wyth infinite talke of diuers matters, that the litle grifts of Loue which were ſcarcely planted, began to growe ſo farre, as the rootes remayned faſt grounded in the depthe of his harte. And the kyng not able any longer to endure ſuch a charge in his minde, preſſed with griefe, deuiſed by what meanes he might enioye her, which was the cauſe of his diſquiet. But the Counteſſe ſeing him ſo penſife, without any apparaunt occaſion, ſayde vnto him. Sir I doe »
no: a litle maruell, to ſee you reduced into theſe alterati- »
ons. Foz (me thincke) your grace is maruelouſly chaunged »
within theſe two oz thze houres, that your highnes vouch- »
ſaued to enter into his Caſtel foz my ſuccour & reliefe in ſo »
good time, as al ẏ dayes of my life, both I & mine be great »
ly bound vnto you, as to him which is not onely content li- »
berally to haue beſtowed vpon vs, the goods which we poſ- »
ſeſſe, but alſo by his generoſitie, doth conſerue & defend vs »
from the incurſiõs of ẏ enemie. Wherein your grace doth »
deſerue double prayſe, foz a deede ſo charitable. But I cã- »
not tell noz yet deuiſe, what ſhould bee the cauſe that your »
highneſſe is ſo penſife & ſozowful, ſith without great loſſe »

" on your parte, your enemies vndeſtandinge of your ſtoute
" approche, be retired, which ought, as I ſuppoſe, to driue a-
" waye the Melancholie from your ſtomacke, and to reuoke
" your former ioy, for ſo much as victorie acquired without
" effuſion of bloud, is alwayes moſt noble and acceptable be-
" fore God. The king hearing this Angels voyce, ſo amiably
pronoũcing theſe words, thinking that of her owne accord
ſhee came to make him mery, determined to let her vnder-
ſtand his griefe, vpon ſo conueniente occaſion offred. Then
" with a trembling voice he ſaid vnto her Ah Madame, how
" farre be my thoughtes farre differente from thoſe which
" you do thincke me to haue, I feele my hart ſo oppreſt with
" care, as it is impoſſible to tell you what it is, howbeit the
" ſame hath not beene of long continuaunce, being attached
" therewithall, ſince my comminge hither, which troubleth
" me ſo ſore, as I cannot tell whereupon well to determine.

The Coũteſſe ſeing the king thus moued, not knowing the cauſe whye, was vncertaine what aunſwere to make. Which the K. perceyuing, ſaid vnto her, fetching a deepe
" ſighe from the bottome of his ſtomacke. And what ſay you
" Madame thereunto, can you giue mee no remedie? The
" Counteſſe, which neuer thoughte that any ſuch diſcurteſie
" could take place in the kinges hart, taking things in good
" part, ſaid vnto him. Syr, I know not what remedy to giue
" you, if firſt you do not diſcouer vnto me the griefe. But if
" it trouble you, that the Scottiſhe kinge hath ſpoyled your
" countrie, the loſſe is not ſoe greate, as therewith, a Prince
" ſo mightie as you be, neede to be offended: ſithens by the
" grace of God, the vengeaunce lieth in your handes, & you
" may in time chaſten him, as at other times you haue done.
Whereunto, the kinge ſeinge her ſimplicitie, aunſweared,
" Madame the beginninge of my griefe ryſeth not of that,
" but my wounde reſteth in the inwarde parte of my harte,
" which pricketh mee ſo ſoore, as if I deſire from hence-
forth to prolonge my life, I muſte open the ſame vnto you,

reſer-

reſeruing the cauſe thereof, ſo ſecrete, as none but you and
I muſt be partakers. I muſt now then confeſſe vnto you,
that in comminge to your Caſtell, and caſtinge downe my
head to behold your celeſtiall face, and the reſt of the gra-
ces, wherewith the Heauens haue prodigally endued you,
I haue felt (vnhappie man as I am) ſuch a ſodaine altera-
tion, in al the moſt ſenſible partes of my body, as knowing
my forces diminiſhed, I cannot tel to whom to make com-
plaint of my libertie loſt (which of long time I haue ſo hap-
pily preſerued) but onely to you, that like a faithfull kee-
per and onely Treaſurer of my hart, you may by ſome ſhi-
ning beame of pitie bring againe to his former mirth and
ioye, that which you deſire in me: and by the contrarie, you
may procure to me a life more painefull and greeuous, thã
a Thouſand deathes together. When he had ended theſe
woordes, hee helde his peace, to let her ſpeake, attendinge
none other thing by her aunſwere, but ẏ laſt decree either
of death or life. But the Counteſſe with a grauitie, confor-
mable to her honeſtie and honour, without other mouing,
ſaid vnto him. If any other beſides your grace, had been ſo
forgetful of himſelfe to enter in theſe termes, or to vſe ſuch
talke vnto me, I knowe what ſhould be mine aunſwere, &
ſo it might be, that he ſhoulde haue occaſion not to be well
contented, but knowing this your attempt to proceede ra-
ther from ẏ pleaſantnes of your hart, than for other affec-
tion, I wil beleue from hencefoorth, and perſwade my ſelfe,
that a Prince ſo renowmed and gentle as you be, doth not
thincke, & much leſſe meane, to attempt any thing againſt
mine honour, which is a thouſand times dearer vnto mee
thã life. And I am perſwaded, ẏ you do not ſo litle eſteeme
my father, & my huſband, who is for your ſeruice priſoner
in the hands of the Frenchmen, our mortal enemies, as in
their abſence to procure vnto them ſuch defamatiõ & ſlaũ-
der. And by making this requeſt, your grace doth ſwarue
from the bounds of honeſtie very farre, and you do greate

" iniurie to your fame, if men ſhould know what termes you
" do vſe vnto me. In like maner, I purpoſe not to violate ẏ
" faith, which I haue giuen to my huſband, but I intend to
" keepe the ſame vnſpotted, ſo long as my ſoule ſhalbe caried
" in the Chariot of this mortall body. And if I ſhould ſo far
" forget my ſelf, as willingly to commit a thing ſo diſhoneſt,
" your grace oughte for the loyall ſeruice of my father and
" huſband toward you, ſharpely to rebuke me, and to puniſh
" me according to my deſert. For this cauſe (moſt dradde ſo-
" ueraigne Lord) you which are accuſtomed to vanquiſhe &
" ſubdue other, bee nowe a conquerour ouer your ſelfe, and
" throughly bridle that concupiſcence (if there be any) vnder
" the raynes of Reaſon, that being quenched and ouercome,
" they may no more reuiue in you, and hauing liuely reſiſted
" the firſt aſſaultes, the victorie is but eaſie, which ſhalbe a
" thouſande times more glorious and gainefull for you, than
" if you had cõquered a kingdome. The Coũteſſe had ſcarce
made an ende of her tale, but one came to tell them that ẏ
Tables were couered for dinner, the king well fedde with
Loue, dined for that time very ſoberly, and not able to eate
but vppon amorous diſhes, did caſte his lokes inconſtantly
here and there, and ſtill his eyes threw the laſt loke vppon
that part of the table, where the Counteſſe ſate, meaninge
thereby to extinguiſh the boiling flames, which inceſſantly
did burne him, howbeit by thinking to coole them, he fur-
ther plonged himſelfe therein. And wandering thus in di-
uers cogitacions, the wiſe aunſweare that the Counteſſe
made, like a vaunt currour, was continually in his remẽ-
braunce, and was well aſſured of her inuincible chaſtitie.
By reaſon whereof, ſeing that ſo hard an enterpriſe, requi-
red a longer abode, and ẏ a hart ſo chaſt, could not ſo quick-
lye be remoued from purpoſe, carefull on the other ſide, to
giue order to the waighties affayres of his Realme, diſquie-
ted alſo on euery ſide, through the turmoile of warres, de-
termined to depart the next day in the morning, reſeruing

till

till another time moze conuenient, the purſute of his loue. Hauing taking taken ozder foz his departure, in the moz-ning he wente to ſeeke the Counteſſe, and taking his leaue of her, he pzaied her, to thinke better of the talke made vn-to her the day befoze, but aboue al, he beſought her to haue pitie vpon him. Wherunto the Coũteſſe aunſwered, ẏ not onely ſhee pzaied God inceſſantly to giue him victozy ouer his outward enemies, but alſo grace, to tame ẏ carnal paſſi-on, which did ſo tozment him. Certaine dayes after ẏ king Edward was arriued at Londõ, which was ẏ place of his ozdinarie abode, the Counteſſe of Sarisburie was aduerti-ſed, that the Earle her huſband, being out of pzyſon, cõſu-med with griefe and ſicknes, died by the way homewards. And becauſe they had no childzen, ẏ Earledome retourned to the kinge, which firſt gaue the ſame vnto him. And after ſhe had lamented the death of her huſband the ſpace of ma-nye dayes, ſhee returned to her fathers houſe, which was Earle of Warwike. And foz ſo much as he was one of the kinges pziuie Counſel, and the moſt part of the affayzes of the Realme paſſed by his aduiſe and counſell, he continued at London, that hee might be moze neare vnto the kinges perſon. The king aduertiſed of the comming of the Coun-teſſe, thoughte that foztune had opened away to bzing his enterpziſe to deſired effect, ſpecially foz that ẏ death of her huſband, and the witneſſe of his earneſt good will, woulde make her moze tractable. The kinge ſeing all thing (as he thought) to ſuccede after his deſire, began to renue his firſt affections, ſeeking by all meanes to pzactiſe the good will of the Counteſſe, who then was of the age of xxvi. yeares. Afterwards he ozdeyned many triumphes at the Tilt and Tozney, Maſkes, Pomeries, Feaſtes, Banquettes, and other like paſtimes, whereat Ladies accuſtomablye doe aſſemble, who made much of theym all, and ſecretely tal-ked wyth them. Notwithſtanding he could not ſo well diſguiſe and counterfaite his paſſions, but that hee ſtill

ſhewed himſelfe to beare beſte good will to the Counteſſe. Thus the kinge could not vſe ſuch diſcretion in loue, but ꝑ krō his ſecret fier, ſome euident flames did iſſue oute. But the Counteſſe which was a wiſe and curteous Ladye, did eaſely perceiue, how the king by chaunging the place, had not altered his affection, and that hee ſtill proſecuted his talke begon at Sarisburie. She deſpiſing all his amorous countenaunces, continued her firme and chaſte minde. And if it chaunced that ſometimes the king, made more of her, than diſcretion required, ſodainly might haue been diſcried a certaine paleneſſe in her face, which declared the litle pleaſure that ſhee toke in his toyes, with a certaine rigor appearinge, that yelded to the king, an aſſured teſtimonie ꝑ he laboured in vaine. Neuertheleſſe ſhe, to cut of all meanes of the kinges purſute, kept ſtill her fathers houſe, ſhewinge herſelfe, in no place where the king mighte ſee her. The king offended, ſeing himſelfe depriued & baniſhed her preſence, whom he eſteemed as ꝑ comfort of his life, made his ſecretarie, priuie to the whole matter, whoſe fidelity he had wel proued in matters daūgerous, with mind to purſue her by other way, if it chaunced that ſhe perſiſted in her wonted rigor and refuſal. Howbeit before he proceded any further, ſithe he could not ſecretely talke with her, he purpoſed to ſend her a letter, the tenor whereof inſueth.

"MAdame, if you pleaſe by good aduiſe to cōſider ꝑ begin-
"ning of my Loue, the continuance of the ſame, & then
"the laſt iſſue wherunto it tendeth, I am aſſured that laying
"your hand on your hart, you wil accuſe your ſelfe, not only
"of your curſt & froward ſtomacke hitherto appearing, but
"alſo of that newe ingratitude, which you ſhewe vnto me at
"this houre, whoe not contented to bathe and plonge mee
"into the miſſehappe of my paines paſte, but by a newe
"onſet, to abandon your ſelfe from my preſence, as from
"the ſighte of your mortall ennemie: wherein I finde that

heauen

heauen and all his influences, doe crie out for myne ouer-
throwe, whereunto I doe agree, ſince my life taking no bi-
gor and increaſe, being onely ſuſtained by the fauour of
your diuine graces, can not be maintained one onely mi-
nute of a daye, without the liberall helpe of your ſweete-
neſſe and vertue: beſeching you, that if the hartie prayers
of any mortal tormẽted man, may euer haue force & power
to moue you to pitie, it may pleaſe you miraculouſly to de-
liuer from henceforth, this my poore miſerable afflicted
mynde, either from death or martyrdome.

He that is more yours than his owvnne,
Edvvard the deſolate king of England.

The letter written with his own hande, and ſealed with his ſeale, he cõmaunded the Secretarie to go to the Counteſſe, at her fathers houſe, and ſecretly to deliuer the ſame. The Counteſſe hauing red & peruſed it, ſayd to the Secretarie. My frende, you ſhall tell the kyng, that I doe beſech him moſt humbly, to ſende me no more letters or meſſages touching the matters whereof he hath written. For I am in ſuch wiſe reſolued in the aunſwere, which I made him in my Caſtle, as I wyll perſiſte immutable, to the ende of my life. The Secretarie retorninge the aunſwere of the Counteſſe, the king rapte with an impacient and extreme choler, deſired eſtſones to giue another attempt: and conſuming by litle and litle in this amorous fier, began to ſort out of the limits of reaſon. And almoſte out of his wittes, demaunded of his Secretarie. Do you thinke it expedient, that I make requeſt to her father, whoſe counſell I want in other thinges? To whome the Secretarie boldly aunſwered, that he thought it vnreaſonable to ſeeke ayde at a fathers handes to corrupt the doughter: faithfully telling to the king, the repproche and infamie that would followe thereof, as well for the olde ſeruice, that her father hadde done to his auncеſtours, as for his great prowеſſe in armes

for

for which he was ſo greatly commended. But Loue, the mortall enemie of all good counſell, ſo blinded the eyes of the kyng, that without anye further deliberation, he commaunded the Secretarie to go ſeke the father, to demaũde his counſell for matters of importance: whiche the Earle vnderſtanding, obeyed incontinently, where the king alone in a chamber lying vpon a bed, after hee had commaunded him to ſhut the doze and to ſit downe by hym, ſayde theſe wordes. My Lorde, I haue cauſed you to come hither for a certaine occaſion, whiche toucheth me ſo nighe, as the loſſe or preſeruation of my life. For neuer through any aſſaut of Fortune (the ſharpeneſſe wherof I haue often felt) haue I bene vanquiſhed with ſo great diſquiet, as nowe. For I am ſo vexed with my paſſions, as being ouercome by them, I haue none other refuge, but to a moſt vnhappie death that euer man can ſuffer, if preſently I be not holpen. Knowe ye therefore, that I deeme him onely to be happy that by Reaſon can rule his wyttes, not ſuffering hym ſelfe to be caried into vayne deſires: In whiche pointe wee do differ from beaſtes, who being lead onely by naturall order, doe indifferently runne headlong, whether their appetite doth guide them: But we with the meaſure of Reaſon, ought to moderate our doinges with ſuche prouidence, as without ſtraying we may chooſe the right waye of equitie and iuſtice. And if at any time, the weake fleſhe doth faint and giue ouer, we haue none to blame but our ſelues Who deceiued by the fading ſhadow & falſe apparaunce of things, fal into the ditche by our ſelues prepared. And that which I do alleage, is proued, not without manifeſt reaſon, whereof I nowe doe fele experience, hauing let ſlip the raynes of the bridle to farre ouer my diſordinate affections, beyng drawen from the right hande, and traiterouſly deceiued. And neuertheleſſe I can not tell howe to retire to take the right waye, or howe to retourne my back from that which doth me hurt. Wherefore nowe (vnfortunate and miſe-

rable

rable that I am) I acknowledge my ſelfe to be like vnto
him, that followeth his game in the thicket of a woode, ru-
ſhing through thicke and thynne at all aduentures, not
knowing howe to finde the waye he entred in, but rather
the more he deſireth to followe the trace, the more in the
ende he is wrapped in the buſhes. So it is my Lorde, that
I can not and may not for all my foreſayd allegations, ſo
colour my fault, or purge myne error, but that I muſt con-
feſſe and acknowledge it to be in me. But I ſpeake to this
ende, that ſeeking a farre of the originall of my grieke, you
would helpe me to complayne, and thereby to take pitie
vpon me. For to tell you the truthe, I am ſo intricated in
the Labarinthe of my vnbrideled will, as the more I doe
aſpire to the better (alas) the worſſe I am. Haue not I
good cauſe to complaine my Lorde, that after ſo manye fa-
mous victories achieued by Sea and Lande, wherewith I
haue renowmed the memorie of my naune in all places, am
now bound & daunted with an appetite ſo outragious, as I
can not helpe my ſelfe, whereby myne owne life, or rather
death, is conſumed in ſuche anguiſhe and mortall paine, as
I am become the very manſion of all miſchiefes, and onely
receptacle of all miſeries? What ſufficient excuſe for my
fault may I hencefoorth alleage, that in end will not diſplay
it to be both vnprofitable and voyde of reaſon? But what
ſhall be the buckeler of my ſhame, if not my youthly age,
whiche pricketh me forewarde to loue like a ſharpe nedle:
the force whereof I haue ſo ofte repelled, as nowe being
vanquiſhed, I haue no place for reſt, but in thy mercy, who
in my fathers dayes didſt liberally ſpende thy bloud, in
manye notable enterpriſes in his ſeruice, whiche after-
wardes thou haſte ſo well continued, that in many daun-
gerous affaires, I haue diuers times proued the fidelitie
of thy counſell, whereby I haue brought to paſſe thinges
of great importaunce, and therein hitherto neuer founde
thee ſlacke and vnfaythfull. Whiche when I remember

doe

" doe prouoke me to be bolde to declare vnto you mine entẽt,
" whiche by your onely worde you may procure, the fruite
" whereof being gotten, you shall winne the heart of a king,
" to be vsed as you liste for euer. And the more the thing shal
" seeme harde, difficult or painefull, the greater shall your
" merite be, and the more firmely shall he be bounde, whiche
" doth receiue it. Consider then my Lorde, howe profitable it
" is, to haue a king at your commaundement. You haue also
" foure sonnes, whom you can not honourably aduãce with
" out my fauour: swearing vnto you by my regall Scepter,
" that if you comfort me in these my troubles, I will endue
" the three yongest, with so large possessions, as they shall
" haue no cause to be offended with their eldest brother. Re-
" member likewyse, what rewardes I haue bestowed vpon
" them that serue me. And if you haue knowen how liberall
" I haue bene towardes other, thinke then I praye you, how
" bountifully you bynde me towardes you, vpon whome my
" life and death dependeth. The king ending his sorowfull
complainte, stopped by sobbes and sighes, helde his peace.
And the Earle who tenderly loued his Prince, hearing
this pitifull discourse, (the faithfull witnesse of his inward
passion) and not able to coniecture the occasion, was mar-
uellously troubled in him selfe, and without longer aduise,
ouercome with pitie, he made a liberall and very sodayne
offer to the king of his life, his children, and of all that he
" was able to doe. Commaunde, my soueraigne Lorde (quod
" he with weaping teares) what it shall please you to haue
" me doe, if it be, euen to bestowe my life for your sake. For
" by the faith & fealtie that I do owe to God & to your grace,
" I sweare, that many dayes and yeares paste, I haue bound
" my selfe inuiolably, and all mine abilitie without excep-
" tion, so long as this tongue is able to sturre, and breath
" shall remaine within this bodye, faithfully and truely to
" serue your Maiestie, not onely for that duetie bindeth me,
" but if it were for your sake, to trausgresse and exceede the

bandes

bondes of mine honour. But the good olde Earle, whiche neuer thought that a requeſt ſo vniuſt and diſhoneſt, would haue proceeded out of the mouth of a king, with franke and open harte made that liberall offer. The king then hauing ſouuded the depth of the Earles affection, chaunging colour, his eyes fixed on the grounde, ſayde vnto him. Your doughter the Counteſſe of Sarisburie, (my Lorde) is the onely medicine of my trauayles, whome I doe loue better than mine owne life, and do feele my ſelfe ſo inflamed with her heauenly beautie, as without her grace and fauour, I am not able hereafter to liue, for this cõſideration, ſith you deſire to doe me ſeruice, and to preſerue my life, I pray you to deale with her, that ſhe with compaſſion may looke vpon me. Craning this requeſt at your handes, not without extreme ſhame, conſidering as well your honorable ſtate, as your auncient merites imploied vpon me and my progenitours. But according to your modeſtie and accuſtomed goodneſſe, impute the faulte vpon amorous loue, which in ſuch wiſe hath alienated my libertie, and confounded my heart, that now ranging out of the boundes of honour and reaſon, I feele my ſelfe tormented and vexed in mynde. Whereby I am prouoked to make this requeſt, and not able to expel the mortall poyſon out of my hart, which hath diminiſhed my force, intoxicated my ſenſe, and hath depriued my minde frõ all good counſell, as I can not tell what to doe but to ſeeke to you for helpe, hauing no kinde of reſt, but when I ſee her, when I ſpeake of her, or thinke vppon her. And I am at this preſent reduced into ſo pitiful plight as being not able to wynne her by intreaties, offers, preſentes, ſutes, ambaſſages and letters, my onely and laſt refuge and aſſured port of all my miſeries, reſteth in you, either by death to ende my life, or by force to obtayne my deſire. The Earle hearing the the vnciuile and beaſtly demaunde of his ſoueraigne Lorde, bluſhing for ſhame, and throughly aſtonned, filled alſo with a certaine honeſt and

vertuous

vertuous diſdayne, was not able to diſſolue his tongue to render a worthy aunſwere to the afflicted Prince. Finally like one awaked from his dead ſleepe, he ſaid vnto him. Sir my wittes fayle, my vertue reuolteth, my tongue is mute, at the wordes that proceede from you, whereby I fele my ſelfe brought into two ſo ſtraunge and perillous pointes, as paſſing either by one or other, I muſt nedes fall into very great daunger. But to reſolue vpon that which is moſt expedient, hauing geuen vnto you my faithe in pledge, to ſuccour and helpe you euen to the abandoning of honor and life, I will not be contrarie to my wordes. And touching my daughter, for whom you make requeſt, I will reueale vnto her the effecte of your demaunde: yet of one thing I muſt tell you ſir, power I haue to entreate her, but none at all to force her. Inough it is ỳ ſhe vnderſtand of me, what hart and affection you beare vnto her. But I doe maruell, yea & complaine of you, pardon me (moſt drad ſouereigne) and ſuffer me without offence to diſcharge my griefe before your preſence, rather than to your ſhame & mine eternal infamie, it ſhould be manifeſted & publiſhed abrode by other. I ſay that I maruell ſir, what occaſion moued you to commit ſuch reproch in my ſtock and bloud, and by an act ſo ſhamefull and laſciuious, to diſhonor the ſame: whiche neuer diſdained to ſerue both you and yours, to the vttermoſt of their powers. Alas vnhappy father that I am, is this the guerdon and recompence that I & my children ſhall expect for our truſty and faithfull ſeruice? Oh ſir for Gods ſake, if you liſte not to be liberall of your owne, ſeke not to diſhonour vs, and to inflict vpon our race, ſuch notable infamie. But who can loke for worſe at the handes of his mortall & cruell enemie? It is you, euen you it is (moſt noble prince) that doth rauiſhe my daughters honor, diſpoyle me of my contentation, ye take from my children hardineſſe to ſhewe their faces, & from all our whole houſe, the auncient fame and glorie. It is you that doth obſcure ỳ cleareneſſe of my

bloud,

bloud, with an attempt ſo diſhoneſt and deteſtable: as the
memorie thereof ſhall neuer be forgotten. It is you ẏ doth
conſtraine me to be the infamous miniſter of the totall de-
ſtruction of my progenie, and to be a ſhameleſſe Pandarus
of my daughters honor. Doe you thinke to helpe and ſuc-
cour me, when others ſhall attempt to obiect vnto my face
this ſlaunder and reproche: but if your ſelfe doe hurt me,
where ſhall I hereafter ſeke relieſe and ſuccour. If the
hande which ought to helpe me, be the very ſame that doth
geue me the wounde, where ſhall the hope bee of my reco-
uerie? For this cauſe, may it pleaſe your Maieſtie, whe-
ther iuſtlie I doe make my complainte, and whether you
geue me cauſe to aduaunce my cries vp into the heauens,
your ſelfe ſhall be the Iudge. For if like a Iudge in deede
you doe geue ouer your diſordinate affection: I then ap-
peale to the iudgement of your inuincible minde, of late ac-
compliſhed with all curteſie and gentleneſſe. On the other
ſide, I doe lament your Fortune, when I thinke vpon the
reaſons which you haue alleaged, and the greater cauſe I
haue to plaine, becauſe I haue knowen you frō your youth
and haue alwayes deemed you at libertie and free from
ſuch paſſions, not thral or ſubiect to the flames of loue, but
rather geuen to exerciſe of armes. And nowe ſeing you to
become a priſoner of an affection vnworthy your eſtate: I
can not tell what to thinke, ẏ noueltie of this ſodain chaūce
ſemeth to be ſo ſtraunge. Remember ſir that for a litle ſu-
ſpicion of adulterie, you cauſed Roger Mortimer to be put
to death. And (being ſkarce able to tell it without teares)
you cauſed your owne mother miſerablie to die in priſon.
And God knoweth howe ſimple your accuſations were, &
vpon howe light ground your ſuſpicion was cōceiued. Do
not you knowe howe wounderfully you be moleſted with
warres, and that your enemies trauell day and night to cir
cumuent you, both by Sea and Lande? Is it nowe tyme
then to geue your ſelfe to delightes, and to captiuate your

mynde

cc mynde in the pleaſures of Ladies? where is the auncient
cc generoſitie and nobilitie of your bloud? Wher is magna-
cc nimitie and valour, wherewith you haue aſtonned your en-
cc nemies, ſhewed your ſelf amiable to your frendes, & won-
cc derfull to your ſubiectes? Touching the laſt point, wher-
cc in you threaten, that if my doughter doe not agree to your
cc deſire, you will forcibly enioye her, I can neuer confeſſe,
cc that to be the fact of a valiaunt and true king, but of a vile,
cc cowardly, cruell and libidinous Tyraunt. I truſt it be not
cc the pleaſure of God, that nowe at the age you be of, you wil
cc begin to force Gentlewomē that be your humble ſubiects,
cc which if you do, this Iland ſhall loſe ẏ name of a Realme,
cc and hereafter ſhalbe deemed none other, but a Sanctuarie
cc of Theues and murderers. If then, (to conclude this my
cc ſorowefull and heauie complaint) you may, or can by your
cc flatteries, promiſſes and preſentes, allure my doughter to
cc your vnbrideled appetites, I ſhall haue occaſiō to bewayle
cc her diſhoneſtie, and to deeme her, as an incontinent daugh-
cc ter, degenerated from the vertues of her progenitors. But
cc touching your owne perſone, I haue nothing to ſaye, but
cc that herein you doe followe the common ſort of men, that
cc be ſuters to Ladies, willing to pleaſe their fanſies. There
cc reſteth onely nowe for me to aunſwere the fauour, whiche
cc in time to come you promiſe to me and my children. I co-
cc uet not after any thing reprochfull to me or them, or to any
cc of our poſteritie, that may make vs aſhamed, knowing in
cc what contempt and reputation they be, which being borne
cc of baſe parentage, be arriued to goods and honour, by gra-
cc tifying and obeying Princes and Kinges in their diſhoneſt
cc luſtes and appetites. Remember ſir, that within theſe
cc fewe dayes, being in campe againſt the Scottes, you vp-
cc brayded a certaine man (which ſhalbe nameleſſe) for bein
cc a miniſter of your fathers loue, who from the ſtate of
cc Barber, was aduaunced to the degree of an Earle, & ho
cc you ſayd, that if in time to come he amended not his ma

ners, ye

ners, you wonld ſende him to the ſhop againe. And for my
part, I am of opinion, that honeſt pouertie hath euer bene
the auncient and greateſt inheritaunce amonges the noble
Romaines, which if it be cõdemned by the ignorant mul-
titude, and if we therefore ſhould geue place, making grea-
ter accompt and eſtimation, of richeſſe and treaſures, then
of vertue: I doe ſay for mine owne part, that by the grace of
God, I am abundantly prouided, for the maintenãce of me
and mine, not like an ambicious man or couetous, but as
one ſatiſfied with ỹ good wil of fortune. I do moſt humbly
then beſech you (ſir) for concluſion, to take in good parte,
that which my dutie and honour do cõſtraine me to ſpeake.
And ſo by your graces leaue, I will departe towarde my
daughter, to let her vnderſtande from point to point your
Maieſties pleaſure. And without tarying for other replei
of the kyng, he went his waye diſcourſing diuers thinges
in his minde, vpon that which had paſſed betwene the king
and him. The reaſons which the Earle had made, ſo pear-
ced the affections of the paſſionate Prince, as vncertaine
what to ſaye, he condemned himſelfe, knowing verie well,
that the Earle not onely vpon right and iuſt cauſe, had pro-
nounced thoſe wordes: but alſo that he had done the office
of a faithfull ſeruaunt and truſtie counſeller, in ſuche ſort,
as feling his conſcience touched at the quicke, he could not
excuſe himſelf, from committing a diſhoneſt charge to a fa-
ther ſo commendable and vertuous in the behalfe, of his
daughter. Thus he determined to chaunge his opinion.
Afterwardes when he had throwen forth many ſighes, hee
ſpake theſe wordes to himſelfe. O miſerable man, cut of
this amorous practiſe, howe arte thou defrauded of right
ſenſe to caſt thy mynd vpõ her, whom thou ought eſt to vſe
with ſuch reuerence, as thou wouldeſt doe thine owne pro-
per ſiſter, for the ſeruice, which thou and thy progenitors,
haue receiued of the good Earle her father? Open the eyes
of thine vnderſtanding, and knowe thy ſelfe, geue place to

" Reason, and reforme thy vnshamefull and disordinate ap-
" petites. Resist with al thy power, this wanton will, which
" doth enuiron thee. Suffer not this tyraunt loue to bewitch
" or deceiue thee. Sodainly after he had spokē those wordes,
" the beautie of the Countesse representing it self before his
" eyes, made him to alter his minde again, and to reiect that
" which he before allowed: saying thus. I feele in minde the
" cause of mine offence, and thereby doe acknowledge the
" wrong, but what shall I doe? sithe I am not able any lon-
" ger to withstande Beautie that cruell murderer, whiche
" doth force and maister mee so much. Let Fortune then and
" Loue doe what they list, the faire Countesse shalbe myne,
" whatsoeuer come of it. Is it a notable vice in a kinge to
" loue his subiectes daughter? Am I the first vpon whome
" such inconuenience hath come? This talke ended, he delu-
" ded himself, & thinking vpon the contrary, he accused him
" self again, and thē from this he altered again to the other.
" And being in this perplexitie, he passed daye & night, with
" such anguish & dolor, as euery mā doubted his health. And
" floting thus betwene hope & dispaire, he resolued in thend
" to attend the fathers answere. The Earle then being gone
" out of ꝑ kings chābre, aggrauated w̄ sorowfull thoughtes,
" full of rage & discontent thought good to delay the matter
" till the nexte day, before he spake to his daughter: and then
" calling her vnto him, and causing her to sit against him, he
" reasoned ꝑ matter in such wise. I am assured deare daugh-
" ter, that you will no lesse maruell than be astōned, to heare
" what I shal say vnto you, and so much the more, when you
" doe see, how farre my tale shall exceade the order of reason.
" But for so much as of twoo euils the least is to be chosen,
" I doubt not, but like a sage and wise womā, which I haue
" alwayes knowen you to be, you will stay vpon that whiche
" I haue determined. Touching my self, sith it hath plea'ed
" God to geue me knowledge of good and il, hitherto I haue
" still preferred honour before life, bicause (after mine opi-
nion) it

nion) it is a leſſe matter to die innocently, than to liue in dishonour and shame of the worlde. But you know what libertie he hath, which is vnder the power of another, being sometime constrayned to make faire weather, of thinges not onely cleane contrarie to his mynde, but also (which is worse) against his owne conscience, being oftentymes forced according to the qualitie of the tyme, and pleasure of the state, to chaunge his maners, and to put on newe affections. Whereof I haue thought good to put you in remēbraunce, because it toucheth the matter, whiche I purpose to tell you. Thus it is (deare daughter) that yesterday after dynner, the Kyng sent for mee, and being come before him, with a very instant and pitiful prayer, he required me (his eyes full of teares) to doe a thing for hym, that touched his life. I whiche (besides that I am his subiecte and seruaunt) haue alwayes borne a particuler affection to his father & him, without deliberation what the matter should be, betrothed to him my faith to obey his request, if it coste me the price of mine honour & life. He assuring himselfe of my liberall promise, after many wordes ioyned with an infinite number of sighes, discouering vnto me the secrete of his harte, told me, that the torment which he indured, proceded no where els but of the feruēt loue that he bare vnto you. But O immortall God, what man of any discretion, would haue thought that a king could be so impudent and vnshamefast, as to committe to a father a charge so dishonest, towardes his own daughter? The Earle hauing recited in order the history past betwene hym and the kyng, sayde thus vnto her. Consider you swete daughter, myne vnaduised and simple promisse, and the vnbrideled mynde of an amorous Kyng, to whome I made answere, that intreate you thereunto I was able, but force you I coulde not. For this cause (deare daughter) I doe praye you at this instant to obeye the kynges pleasure, and thereby to make a present by your father of your honest chastitie,

cc ſo dearely eſtemed and regarded by you, ſpecially, that the
cc thing may ſo ſecretly be done as the fault be not bruted in
cc the eares of other. Neuertheleſſe, the choyſe reſteth in you,
cc and the key of your honour is in your own hands, and that
cc which I haue ſayde vnto you, is but to kepe promiſe with
cc the king. The Counteſſe all the while that her father thus talked, chaunged her colour with a comly ſhamefaſtneſſe, inflamed with a vertuous diſdaine, that he whiche had beheld her thē, would haue thought her rather ſome celeſtial Goddeſſe, than a humaine creature. And after long ſilence with an humble grauitie, ſhe began thus to make her aunſwere. Your wordes haue ſo confounded me, and brought
cc me into ſuch admiration (my Lorde and right honourable
cc father) that if all the partes of my bodie were conuerted
cc into tongues, they could not bee ſufficient worthely to ex-
cc preſſe the leaſt part of my ſorrowe, and diſquietneſſe. And
cc truely very iuſtly may I complayne of you, for the litle e-
cc ſtimation you haue of me, which am deriued of your owne
cc fleſhe. And for the ranſome of the fraile and tranſitorie life,
cc which you haue geuen me vpon earth, you wyll forrecom-
cc pence nowe defraude me of myne honour. Whereby I doe
cc perceiue that not onely al natures lawes, be cancelled and
cc mortified in you, but which is worſe, you doe exceede ther-
cc in the cruelties of beaſtes, who for all their brutiſheneſſe,
cc be not ſo vnnatural to do wrong to their owne pong, or to
cc offer their fruite to ꝯ mercie of an other, as you haue done
cc yours, to the pleaſure of a Kyng. For notwithſtandynge
cc the ſtraight charge and aucthoritie, whiche you haue o-
cc uer mee, to commaunde me being your right humble and
cc very obedient daughter, yet you oughte to thinke and re-
cc member, that you haue neuer ſeene in mee, any acte, mo-
cc cion, ſigne, or woorde, to incite you to moue ſutche diſho-
cc neſt talk. And although the king many times, with infinite
cc number of prayers, preſentes, meſſages and other ſuch al-
cc lurementes of perſuaſion, hath diſplayed and vttered all

the art

the art of his mynde, to ſeduce and corrupt me, yet he was
neuer able to receiue other aunſwere of me, but that honor
was a thouſand times derer vnto me then life, which ſtill
I meant to kepe ſecret from your knowledge euen as I
haue done from other of mine aliaunce, for feare leaſt you
ſhould be induced, to commit ſome treſpas, or conſpire a-
gainſt our king, foreſeing the ſtraunge accidentes, whiche
haue chaunced for like matters, to the ruine of many cities
and prouinces. But good God, my doubt is nothing to pur
poſe, ſithe that your ſelfe, is the ſhameleſſe Poſt of an act ſo
diſhoneſt. And to cõclude in fewe wordes, daily I had good
hope, that the king ſeing me at a point, ſtill to conſerue my
chaſtitie inuiolable, he would giue ouer to purſue me any
longer, and would haue ſuffered me hereafter, to liue in
quiet, with mine equals, but if ſo be he doe continue obſti-
nate in his olde folly, I am determined rather to die, than
to doe the thing that ſhall hurt me and pleaſure him. And
for feare that he take from me by force that which of mine
owne accord I will not graunt, following your counſell,
of twoo euilles, I will chooſe the leaſt, thinking it more ho-
nourable to deſtroy & kill my ſelfe with mine own handes,
then to ſuffer ſuch blot or ſhame to obſcure the glorie of my
name, being deſirous to committe nothing in ſecrete, that
ſometime hereafter being publiſhed, may make me aſha-
med and chaunge colour. And wher you ſay that you haue
ſworne and gaged your faith to the king, for the aſſuraunce
of your promiſe, it was very ill done, before you did conſi-
der, what power fathers haue ouer their children, whiche
is ſo well defined by the lawe of God, as they be not bound
to their parentes, in that which is againſt his deuine com-
maundementes Muche leſſe may they bynde vs to things
inceſtuous and diſhoneſt, which ſpecially and ſtraightly be
iniopned vs not to perfourme, if we therunto be required.
And it had bene farre more decent, and excuſable before
God, if when you made that foolyſhe promiſe to the kyng,
you had

"you had promiſed him, rather to ſtrangle mee with youre
"owne handes, than to conſent to let me fall into a faulte ſo
"abhominable. And to thend I may tell you the laſt deter-
"mination, and concluſion of that whiche I am determined
"by good aduiſe & immutable counſell: thus it is. You ſhall
"tell the king, that I had rather loſe my life, after the moſte
"cruell & ſhamefull maner that may be deuiſed, then to con-
"ſent to a thing ſo diſhoneſt, hauing long time fixed this ſay-
"ing in mind, That honeſt death, doth honor and beautifie
"the forepaſſed life. The father hearing the wiſe aunſwere
of his daughter, gaue her his bleſſing, in his hart prayſing
her goodly minde, beſeching God to helpe her, and to kepe
her vnder his protection, and to confirme her in that holy &
vertuous determination. Then feling him greatly comfor-
"ted, he repaired to the king, to whom he ſaid. Pleaſeth your
"grace to thintent I might obſerue my promiſe, I ſweare
"by the faith that I doe owe vnto God and you, that I haue
"done what I can with my daughter, diſcloſing vnto her
"your whole minde and pleaſure, and exhorting her to ſatiſ-
"fie your requeſt, but for a reſolute aunſwere ſhe ſaith, that
"rather ſhe is contented to ſuffer moſt cruell death, than to
"commit a thing ſo contrarie to her honour. You know (ſir)
"what I ſayd vnto you ſtill, that I might entreate her, but
"force her I could not. Hauing then obeied your commaun-
"dement, and accompliſhed my promiſe, it may pleaſe you
"to geue me leaue to go home to one of my Caſtels, frō hen-
"ceforth to recline my ſelf to quietneſſe, & to eaſe my decre-
"pite and feeble age. Which the king willingly graunted.
The ſame daye, hee departed from the Courte with his
ſonnes, and went home to his Countrie, leauing at Lon-
don his wife and daughter, and the reſte of his houſholde,
thinking therby to diſcharge himſelf of thoſe thinges with
out the kinges diſpleaſure. The king on the other ſide was
no ſoner aduertiſed of the Earles departure, & that he had
left his daughter behinde him at London, but he knew the

fathers

fathers minde and purpoſe, and fell in ſuche diſpaire of his loue, as he was like to haue runne out of his wittes for ſorrowe. The nightes and dayes were all one to him, for hee could take no reſt, he gaue ouer vſe of armes, and adminiſtration of iuſtice, hunting and hauking, wherin before that time, he had great delight. And all his ſtudy was many times to paſſe and repaſſe before the gate of the Counteſſe, to proue if he might attaine to haue ſome ſight of her. And thinges were brought to ſo pitifull ſtate, that within fewe dayes, the citizens and other gentlemen, began to perceiue the raging loue of their Prince, euery of them with common voice blaming the crueltie of the Counteſſe, that was vnmaried, who the more ſhe proued the king inflamed with her loue, the more ſqueymiſh ſhe was of her beautie. The Peres and noble men, ſeing their king reduced to ſuch extremitie, moued with pitie & compaſſion, began ſecretly to practiſe for him, ſome with threatninges, ſome with flatteries and perſuaſions, ſome went to the mother, declaring vnto her, the eternall reſt and quiet prepared for her & all her friendes, if ſhe would perſuade her daughter to encline to the kinges mind, and contrariwyſe the daunger iminent ouer her head. But all theſe deuiſes were in vayne, for the Counteſſe moued no more, then a harde rocke beaten with diuerſe tempeſtes. And at length, ſeing that euery man ſpake diuerſly, as their affections ledde them, ſhee was ſo troubled and penſife in harte, as fearing to bee taken, and that the kyng vanquiſhed with his ſtrong paſſion, by ſucceſſion of tyme would vſe his force, and violentlye oppreſſe her, founde meanes to get a great sharpe knife, whiche ſhe caried about her ſecretly vnder her gowne, of purpoſe, that if ſhe ſawe perill to be defloured, ſhee might kill her ſelfe. The Courtiers offended with the martyrdome of their Maiſter, and deſyrous to gratifie and ſeeke meanes to doe hym pleaſure, conſpyred all agaynſt the Earles familie, letting the Kynge to vnderſtande, that it were

moſt expedient, for that thinges were out of hope, to cauſe Ælips to be brought to his Palace, that there he might vſe her by force. Wherunto the king (being dronke in his own
" paſſion) did willingly agree. Notwithſtanding, before hee
" paſſed any further for that hee faithfully loued the Coun-
" teſſe, he determined to aduertiſe her mother of that whiche
" he intended to doe, and commaunded his Secretarie to go
" ſeke her with diligence, and without concealing any thing
" from her knowledge, to inſtructe her of the whole. The
" Secretarie finding the mother of the Counteſſe, ſaid vnto
" her Madame the king hath willed me to ſay vnto you that
" he hath done what he can, and more then his eſtate requi-
" reth, to win the grace and loue of your daughter, but for ỹ
" ſhe hath deſpiſed his long ſute, diſdained his preſence, & ab-
" horred his griefes and complaintes, knowing not what to
" do any more, his laſt refuge is in force, doing you to vnder-
" ſtande hereof, to the intent that you and ſhee may conſider
" what is to be done in this behalf. For he hath determined
" whether you will or no, to fetch her out openly by force, to
" the great diſhonour, ſlaunder and infamie of al your kinne.
" And where in time paſt, hee hath loued and fauoured the
" Earle your huſband, he meaneth ſhortly to make him vn-
" derſtand what is the effect of the iuſt indignation of ſuch a
" Prince as he is. The good Lady hearing this ſodaine and
cruell meſſage, was aſtonned in ſuch wiſe, as ſhe thought how ſhe ſawe her daughter already trained by the heares of her head, her garmentes haled and torne in pieces, with rufull & lamẽtable voyce crying out to him for mercy. For this cauſe, with blubbering teares, trembling for feare ſhe fell down at the Secretaries feete, and ſtraightlye imbra-
" cing his knees, ſayde vnto hym. Maiſter Secretarie, my
" deare louing friend: Beſeche the king in my name, to re-
" member the payne and ſeruice done by our Auncеſtours.
" Intreate hym not to diſhonoure my houſe in the abſence
" of the Earle my huſbande. And if you be not able by your

perſua-

perſwaſion to moliſie his hard hart, deſire him for a whille
to take patience, vntill I haue aduertiſed my daughter of
his will and pleaſure, whom I hope to perſwade, that ſhe
ſhall ſatiſfie the kinges requeſt. When ſhe had made this
aunſwere, the Secretary declared the ſame to the kinge,
who madde with anger and paſſioned with loue, was con-
tent, & neuertheleſſe, commaunded his gentlemen to be in
readineſſe to ſeeke the Counteſſe. In the meane time the
mother of faire AElips went to her daughters chamber, &
after ſhe had commaunded all her maids, which accompa-
nied her, to withdraw themſelues out of the chamber, ſhee
began in few woordes to recite vnto her, the meſſage done
vnto her by the Secretary. Finally with ſobbinge ſighes
ſhe ſaid vnto her. The dayes haue been (deare daughter) ỳ
I haue ſeene thee to keepe thy ſtate amonges the chiefeſte
of all the Ladies of this Realme. And I haue counted my
ſelf moſt happie that euer I did beare the in my wombe, &
haue thoughte by meanes of thy beautie & vertue, one day
to ſee thee become the ioye and comfort of all thy frendes.
But now my cogitacions be turned cleane cõtrary, through
thine vnluckie fate: Nowe I thincke thee to be borne not
onely for the vniuerſall ruine of all oure familie, but alſo
(which greeueth me moſt) to be an occaſion and inſtrumẽt
of my death, and the deſolation of all thy frendes. But if
thou wilt ſomewhat moderate thy rygor, all this heauines
ſhortly may be tourned to ioy. For our king and ſoueraign
Lorde is not onely in loue with thee, but for the ardent af-
fectiõ and amitie that he beareth the, is out of his wittes, &
now doth conſpire againſt vs, as though we were Tray-
tors and murderers of our Prince. In whoſe handes (as
thou knoweſt) doth reſt the life, honor & goods both of thy
ſelfe and of vs all. And what glory and triumphe ſhall be
reported of thee to our poſterity, whẽ they ſhal know how
by thy obſtinate crueltie, thou haſte procured the death of
thine old father, the death of thy hoareheaded mother, and

" the deſtruction of thy valiaunt and coragious brethren, and
" diſpoyled the reſt of thy bloud, of their poſſeſſions and abi-
" litie's: But what ſorrowe and griefe will it be, to ſee them
" wander in the world like vagabounds, baniſhed from their
" liuings, and remaine in continuall pouertie, without place
" & refuge of their miſerie's: who in ſteede of bleſſing or pray-
" ſinge the houre of thy birth, will curſſe ỹ in their minds a
" thouſand times, as the cauſe of all their oerthrow & ill for-
" tune. Thinke and conſider vpon the ſame (deare daughter)
" for in thee alone reſteth the conſeruacion of our liues, and
" hope of all our frendes. This lamentable diſcourſe ended,
the afflicted Counteſſe not able anye longer to reſiſte that
pangue, began to waxe ſo faint as wyth her armes a croſſe
ſhe fell downe halfe deade vpon her doughter: who ſeinge
her without mouinge and without any apparaunce of life,
and all the partes of her bodye to waxe cold, ſhee quicklye
layde her downe, and then with helpe and other thinges
apt for ſowninges, ſhee made her come to herſelfe againe,
and thinking wholy to recouer her, ſhe earneſtly promiſed
" to do what ſhe would haue her, ſaying vnto her. Do awaye
" your teares (Madame) moderate your tormentes, reuoke
" your former ioye, and be of good cheere, for I am diſpoſed
" to obey you. God defende that I ſhould be the cauſe of the
" paine which I ſee you to ſuffer. Nowe am I ready to goe
" with you to the kinge, where if it ſhall pleaſe you, wee two
" without other company will do our owne errande and at-
" tempt the beginning of our enterpryſe. The mother full of
ioye, lifting vp her hands to the heauens, tenderlye embra-
ced her daughter, and manye times did kiſſe her, and after
ſhee had commaunded her Coche to be made readye, ſhee
wente forth with her doughter, accompanied onelye with
two Gentlewomen to the kinges Palace. Being come thi-
ther, they ſente worde to the Secretary, that brought her
the meſſage, who conducted them to the kinges Chamber,
" and preſenting them before him, ſayde. Syr, beholde the

companye which you haue ſo long time deſired. Who are
come to do your grace humble reuerence. The king great-
ly aſtonied, went forth to meete them, and with ioyful coū-
tinaunce ſaide. Welcome Lady Counteſſe, and your long
deſired companye. But what good fortune hath brought
you hither nowe? The Counteſſe hauing made her obey-
ſance, yet all frighted with feare, aunſwered him. Behold
here my Lorde your fayre AElips ſo long time wiſhed for,
who taking repentaunce for her former cruelty and rigor,
is come to render herſelfe at your commaundement.
Then the king beholding the yong Counteſſe tremblinge
for feare, like a leafe ſhaken with the winde (with her eyes
fixed on the grounde) approching neer her, toke her by the
hande, and kiſſing her, ſayd. Welcome, my life and ſoule.
But ſhe no more moued than a fierce Liō enuironed with
cruell beaſtes, ſtoode ſtill and helde her peace, her harte ſo
cōſtrayned for ſorrow & deſpite, as ſhe was not able to aū-
ſweare a word. The kinge who thoughte that ſuch paſſion
proceeded of ſhame, commaunded the Gentlewomen, that
were in her company, to departe the chamber, ſauing the
mother which brought her to the entrie of his chamber,
Who withdrawing herſelfe backe, left her to the mercy of
loue and the kinge. So ſone as the king was entred the
Chamber, he ſhutte the dooze after him. Which AElips
perceyuinge, beganne to feele a furious combate betweene
her honour and life, fearing to be defloured, and ſeing her
abandoned of al humaine ſuccour, falling downe proſtrate
at his feete, ſhe ſayd vnto him. Gracious and redoubted
Prince, ſithe my heauy fortune hath brought mee hither,
like an innocente Lambe to the ſacrifice, and that my pa-
rents amazed through your furie, are become reuiſhers
of mee againſt my will, and contrary to the ducty of their
honor, haue deliuered me into your handes, I humbly be-
ſeech your maieſtie, if there remaine in your noble perſo-
nage any ſparke of vertue & Princely affection, before you

paſſe

" paſſe any further to ſatiſfie your deſire, to let me proue and
" vnderſtande by effecte, if your Loue be ſuch, as oftentimes
" by letters and mouth you haue declared vnto me. The re-
" queſte which I will make vnto you ſhall be but eaſie, and
" yet ſhall ſatiſfie mee more than all the contentacion of the
" world. Otherwiſe (ſir) doe not thincke that ſo longe as my
" life doth continue, I am able to do that which can contente
" your deſire. And if my ſute ſhall ſeeme reaſonable, & grou-
" ded vppon equitie, before I doe open and declare the ſame
" more at large, aſſure the performaunce thereof vnto me by
oth. The king hearīg her prayer to be ſo reaſonable, where-
unto rather then to refuſe it, he ſwore by his Scepter, ta-
king God to witneſſe and all the heauenly powers, for cō-
firmacion of that which he pretended to promiſe: ſaide vnto
" her. Madame, the onely maiſtreſſe and keper of my louing
" harte, ſith of your grace and curteſie, you haue vouchſafed
" to come vnto my Palace, to make requeſt of my onely fa-
" uoure and good will, which now I irreuocably do conſent
" and graunt, ſwearing vnto you by that honourable ſacra-
" mente of Baptiſme, whereby I was incorporated to the
" Church of God, and for the loue that I beare you (for grea-
" ter aſſuraunce I cannot giue) I will not refuſe any thing,
" that is in my power and abilitie, to the intent you may not
" be in doubt whether I do loue you, and intend hereafter to
" imploy my ſelfe to ſerue and pleaſure you: for otherwyſe I
" ſhould falſifye my faith, and more feruently I cannot bind
" my ſelfe if I ſhoulde ſweare by all the othes of the worlde.
The fayre Counteſſe ſitting ſtill vpon her knees, although
the king many times prayed her to riſe vp, reuerently toke
the king by the hand, ſaying. And I do kiſſe this royal hād,
" for loyall teſtimonie of the fauour which your grace doth
" ſhew me. Then plucking out a ſharpe knife, which was
" hidden vnder her kirtle, all bathed and waſhed in teares,
" reclining her pitifull eyes towards the king, that was ap-
" palled with that ſight, ſhe ſaid vnto him. Sir, the gift that

I

I require, and wherfore your faith is bound, is this. I moſt humblie deſire you, that rather then to diſpoile me of mine honour, with the ſword girded by your ſide, you do vouchſafe to ende my life, or to ſuffer me preſently, w̄ this sharpe pointed knife in my hand, to thruſt it to my hart, that mine innocent bloud, doing the funerall honour, may beare witneſſe before God of my vndefiled chaſtity, as being vtterly reſolued honourablie to die. And that rather then to loſe mine honoure, I maye murther my ſelfe before you wyth this blade and knife in preſent hand. The king burning with amorous heate, beholding this pitifull ſpectacle, and conſideringe the inuincible conſtancie and chaſtitie of the Counteſſe, vanquiſhed by remorſe of conſcience, ioyned w̄ like pitie, taking her by the hand, ſaid. Riſe vp Lady & liue from henceforth aſſured: for I will not ne yet pretende all the dayes of my life, to commit any thing in you againſt your will. And plucking the knife out of her hand, exclamed. This knife hereafter, ſhall bee the Purſuant before God and men of this thine inexpugnable chaſtitie, ꝑ force whereof wanton loue was not able to endure, rather yelding place to Uertue, which being not alienated from me, hath made me at one inſtāt victorious ouer my ſelfe, which by and by I will make you to vnderſtande, to your greate contentacion and greater maruel. For aſſuraunce wherof, I deſire none other thing of you, but a chaſte kiſſe. Which receyued, hee opened the doore and cauſed the Counteſſe to come in with the Secretarie and the gentlewomen, and ꝑ ſame time hee called alſo the Courtiers and Piers of the Realme, which were then in the baſe Court of the Palace. among whō was the Archbiſhop of Yorke, a man of great reputacion and ſinguler learning, to whom with the knife in his hand, he recited particularly ꝑ diſcourſe of his Loue. And after he toke the Counteſſe by the hande, and ſayd vnto her. Madame the houre is come that for recompence of your honeſt chaſtitye and vertue, I wil and conſent to take

you

you to wife, if you thincke good. The Counteſſe hearinge thoſe wordes began to recoloure her bleake and pale face, with a Vermilion teinte and Roſeal ruddie, and accompliſhed with incredible delight and ioye, falling downe at his
" feete ſaid vnto him. My Lord, for aſmuch as I neuer loked
" to be aduaunced to ſo honourable ſtate as Fortune nowe
" doth offer, for merite of a benefite ſo high and great, which
" you preſent vnto me, vouchſauing to abaſe your ſelfe to the
" eſpouſal of ſo poore a Lady, your Maieſties pleaſure being
" ſuch, behold me ready at your commaundement. The king
" taking her vp from kneeling on the ground, commaunded
" the Biſhop to pronounce with highe voice the vſual wordes
" of Matrimonie. Then drawing a riche Diamond from his
" finger, hee gaue it to the Counteſſe, and kiſſing her, ſaide.
" Madame you be Queene of England, and preſently I doe
" giue you thirty thouſande Angells by the yeare for your
" reuenew. And the Duchie of Lancaſter being by confiſca-
" tion fallen into my hands, I giue alſo vnto you, to beſtowe
" vppon your ſelfe and your frends. Al which inrolled accor-
ding to the maner of the Co ũtrie, the king (accompliſhing the mariage,) rewarded the Counteſſe for the rigorous intereſtes of his ſo long loue, with ſuche hap and content, as they may iudge which haue made aſſay of like pleaſure, and recouered the fruite of ſo long purſute. And the more magnificentlye to ſolemnize the mariage, the kinge aſſembled all the Nobilitie of Englande, and ſomoned them to be at London the firſt day of July then folowinge, to beautifie and aſſiſt the Nupcialles & coronation of the Queene. Then he ſente for the Father and brethren of the Queene, whom he embraced one after an other, honouring ỳ Earle as his father, and his ſonnes as his brethren, whereof the Earle wonderfully reioyſed, ſeinge the conceyued hope of his Daughters honour forted to ſo happie effecte, as well to the perpetual fame of him and his, as to the euerlaſting aduauncement of his houſe. At the appointed day the

Queene

Queene was brought from her fathers houſe apparelled with Royall veſtures, euen to the Palace, and conducted with an infinite nomber of Lords & Ladies to the Church, where when ſeruice was done, the Kinge was maried (againe) openly, and the ſame celebrated, ſhee was conueyed vp into a publike place, and proclamed Queene of Englād, to the exceedinge gratulacion and ioye incredible of all the ſubiectes.

An Aduertiſement to the Reader.

AFter theſe tragicall Nouelles and dolorous Hiſtories of Bandello, I haue thoughte good for thy recreacion, to refreſh thy mind vvith ſome pleaſaunt deuiſes and diſportes. Leaſt thy ſpirites and ſences ſhould be apalled and aſtonned vvith the ſondrie kindes of cruelties remembred in the vij. of the former Nouelles. VVhich be ſo ſtrannge and terrible as they be able to affright the ſtouteſt. And yet conſidering that they be very good leſſons for auoyding of like incōueniences, and apt examples for cōtinuacion of good & honeſt life, they are the better to be borne vvith, and may vvith leſſe aſtonniſhment be read & marked. They that follovv, be mitigated and ſvveetened vvith pleaſure, not altogether ſo ſovver as the former be. Prayinge thee moſte hartely, paciently to beare vvith thoſe that ſhall occure, either in theſe that folovv, or in the other that are paſt before.

Galgano

Galgano and

¶ A Gentleman called Galgano, long time made ſute to Madonna Minoccia. Her husbād ſir Stricca (not knowīg the ſame) diuers times praiſed and commended Galgano, by reaſon whereof, in the abſence of her husband, ſhe ſent for him, and yelded herſelfe vnto him, tellinge him what wordes her husbande had ſpoken of him, and for recompence he refuſed to diſhoneſt her.

The. xlvii. Nouell.

IN the Citie of Siena in Italie there was a rich yong Gentleman called Galgano, borne of noble birth, actiue, and wel trained in al kinde of exerciſe, baliaūt, braue, ſtoute and curteous, in the maners and orders of all countries verye ſkilfull. This Galgano loued a Gentlewoman of Siena named Madonna Minoccia, the wyfe of ſir Stricca a comely knight, and woze in his apparell the colour and deuiſes of his Lady, bearing the ſame vppon his helmet and armour, in all Juſtes, Tourneyes & triumphes, obſeruing noble feaſtes and banquettes for her ſake. But for all thoſe coſtly ſumptuous and noble practiſes, this Lady Minoccia in no wyſe would giue eare vnto his ſutes. Wherfore Galgano at his wittes ende, was voyde of aduiſe what to do or ſaye, ſeing the great crueltie & rigor raigning in her breſte, vnto whom hee daylie prayed for better ſucceſſe & fortune, than to himſelfe. There was no feaſt, banquet, triumph, or mariage, but Galgano was there, to do her hūble ſeruice, and that daye his minde was not pleaſed and contented, wherein he had not ſeene her that had his louing harte in full poſſeſſion. Very many times (like a Prince that coueted peace) he ſente ambaſſadours vnto her, wyth preſentes and meſſages, but ſhe (a proude and ſcornefull Princeſſe) dayned

dayned neither to heare them or receiue them. And in this state stode this passionate Louer a longe time, tormented with the exceeding hote Loue and fealtie that he bare her. And many times making his reuerēt complaints to loue, did say. Ah Loue, my deare and soueraigne Lord, how cru ell & hard harted art thou, how vnmercifully dealest thou with me, rather how deafe be thine eares, that canst not re- cline the same to my nightly complaintes and dailye afflic- tions? How chaunceth it that I do in this maner consume my ioyfull dayes with pining plaintes? Why doest thou suffer me to Loue, and not to be beloued? And thus often- times remembringe the crueltie of Loue, and his Ladies tyranny, hee began to dye in maner like a wight replete w despaire. But in fine, he determined patiently to abide the good time and pleasure of Loue, still hoping to finde mer- cie. And daily gaue himselfe to practise and frequent those thinges, that might be acceptable and pleasant to his La- dy. But shee still persisted inexorable. It chaunced ỳ sir Stricca and his fayre wyfe, for their solace and recreation, repaired to one of their houses hard by Siena. And vpon a time, Galgano passing by with a Sparhauke on his fiste, made as though he went on Hauking, but of purpose one- ly to see his Lady. And as he was going by the house, sir Stricca espied him, and went forth to meete him, and fami- liarly taking him by the hand, prayed him, to take parte of his supper with his wyfe and him. For which curteste Gal gano gaue him thanckes and said. Sir I do thancke you for your curteous requeste, but for this time I pray you to hold me excused, because I am going about certaine affay- res very requisite and necessary to be done. Then sayde sir Stricca. At least wise drincke with mee before you de- part: but giuing him thankes he bad him farewell. Mai- ster Stricca seing that hee could not cause him to tary, toke his leaue, and retourned into his house. Galgano gone from maister Stricca, sayd to himselfe. Ah beast that I am,

"why did not I accept his offer? Why should shamefastnes,
"let me from the sight of her, whom I loue better than all
"the world besides. And as he was thus pensife in cõplain-
tes, his spaniells sprong a Partrich, wherat he let flee his
Hauke, and the Partrich flying into sir Stricca his gardẽ,
his Hauke pursued and seased vppon the same. Maister
Stricca and his Ladye hearinge that passime, ranne to the
garden window, to see the killing of the Partrich. And be-
holding the valiante skirmishe betweene the foule and the
Hauke, the Lady asked whose Hauke it was. Her husband
made aunswere that he knew well inoughe the owner, by
"the goodnesse and hardines of the same. For the owner of
"this hauke (quoth hee) is the trimmest and most valiaunt
"gentleman in all Siena, and one indued with beste quali-
"ties. The Lady demaunded what he was. Maister Galga-
"no (said her husband) who euẽ now passed by the gate, and
"I prayed him very earnestly to supper, but hee woulde not
"be intreated. And truly wyfe, he is the comliest gentleman
"and moste vertuous personage, that euer I knewe in my
"life. With those wordes they wente from the windowe to
supper. And Galgano, when he had lured his Hauke depar-
ted awaye. The Lady marked those words and fixed them
in minde. It fortuned within a while after, that sir Stricca
was by the state of Siena, sent in Ambassage to Perugia, by
reason wherof, his Ladie at home alone, so sone as her hus-
band had taken his iourney, sent her most secrete & trustie
maide, to intreat maister Galgano, to come & speake with
her. When the message was done to Galgano, (if his harte
were on a merie pinne, or whether his spirits dulled with
continuall sorrowe were againe reuiued, they knowe, that
most haue felte the painefull pangues of Loue, and they
also whose flesh haue beene pearced wyth the amorous ar-
rowes of the little boy Cupide.) Hee made aunswere that
hee would willingly come, rendringe thanckes both to the
maistresse and maide, the one for her paine, and the other
for

for her good remembraunce. Galgano vnderstanding that sir Stricca was gone to Perugia, in the eueninge at conuenient time, repaired to the house of her whose sight he loued better, than his owne eyes. And being come before his Lady, with great submission and reuerence hee saluted her (like those whose hartes do throbe, as foretellinge the possession of good tournes and benefites, after which wyth longe sute and trauaile they haue aspired (wherewith the Lady delighted, very pleasantly, toke him by the hande, & imbracing him, said. Welcom mine owne sweet Galgano, a hundred times I say welcome. And for the time with kisses, makinge truce with their affections, the Lady called for Confictes and wyne. And when they had dronke and refreshed themselues, the Lady toke him by the hande and said, My sweete Galgano night beginneth to passe awaye, and the time of sleepe is come, therefore let vs yeld our selues to the seruice and commaundement of our very good Ladye Madame Cytherea, for whose sake I intreated you to come hither. Galgano aunswered, that he was very wel contented. Being within the Chamber, after much pleasaunte talke and louing discourse betweene them, the Lady did put of her clothes, and went to bed. Galgano being somewhat bashfull, was perceyued of the Lady vnto whō she said. Me thincke Galgano that you be feareful & shamefast. What do you lacke? Do I not please you? Doth not my personage content you? Haue you not the thing which you desire? Yes Madame said Galgano. God himself could not do me a greater pleasure, than to suffer me to be cleped wīn your armes And reasoning in this sorte, he put of his clothes also, and laide himselfe by her whom he had coueted and desired of long time. Being in the bed, he said. Madame, I beseech you graunt me one request. What is that Galgano (quoth she.) It is this Madame, said Galgano. I do much maruell, why this night aboue all other, you haue sent for mee: considering how long I haue bin a suter vnto

cc you, and although I haue prosecuted my suite, by great ex-
cc pence and trauaile, yet you would neuer yelde before now.
cc What hath moued you now thus to do? The Lady answe-
cc red I will tell you sir. True it is, ẏ not many dayes a goe,
cc passing by this house, with your Hauke on your fiste, my
cc husband told me that so sone as he sawe you, he went oute
cc to meete you, of purpose to intreate you to Supper, but
cc you would not tarrie: Then your Hauke pursued a Par-
cc trich, euen into my garden, and I seing the Hauke so eger-
cc ly seasing vpon the same, demaunded of my husband whose
cc Hauke it was. He told me that the Hauke did belong to ẏ
cc most excellent yong man of all Siena: and ẏ he neuer in all
cc his life knewe a gentleman better accomplished with all
cc vertues and good qualities, and there withall gaue vnto
cc you singuler prayse and commẽdacion. Whereuppon hea-
cc ring him in such wise to prayse you, & knowing right well
cc your affectionate minde and disposition towards mee, my
cc hart attached with loue, forced me to sende for you, that I
cc might hereafter auoyde disdaine and other scornefull de-
cc meaner, to impeache or hinder your loue. And this briefe-
cc ly is the cause. Is this true said Galgano? Most certaine
cc and true, aunsweared the Lady. Was there no other occa-
cc sion? No verely said the Lady. God defend (q Galgano) ẏ
cc I should recompence the curtesie and good will of so noble
cc a gentleman (as your husband is) wᵗ reproch & villany. Is
cc it meete ẏ good turnes should be requited with vnkindnes?
cc If euer man had cause to defende the honor of his vnkno-
cc wen frende, cause haue I right good and apte. For now,
cc knowinge such a frende, that would by vertuous reportes
cc haue aduaunced me to higher matters, than wherof I am
cc in possession, should I reward with pollucion of his stocke
cc and wife? No, no, Lady: My raginge lute by Loue, is by
cc vertue quenched. Uertue onely hath staunched the flames
cc of vile affections. Seeke another frende, to glut your le-

cherous

cherous minde. Finde out some other companion, to coole
that disordinate loue. Shal I be disloyal to him, that hath
been faithfull vnto mee? Shall I be traytor to him, that
frendly hath commended me? What can be more required
of humane hart, or more desired of manlike minde, but wil
full bent, and fixed to do him good, that neuer erst by iuste
desert, deserued the same. With which wordes sodenly hee
lept out of the bed, And when he had furnished himselfe a-
gaine with his apparell, hee also put vppon him vertuous
frendship, and takinge his leaue of the Lady, neuer after ỳ
time he gaue himselfe to matters of Loue. And maister
Stricca he continually obserued both with singuler loue &
dutifull frendship. Wherby it is vncertaine whether was
most singuler in him, his continency at the very instante by
refrayning that vehemēt heate of loue, which so long time
with great trauaile and coste he had pursued: or his re-
gard of frendship to sir Stricca vppon wordes of com-
mendacion spoken behinde his backe. Both no
doubt be singuler vertues meete for all men to
be obserued: but the subduing of his affec-
tions surmounted and passed.

Of a Duke of Venice

¶ Bindo a notable Architect, and his ſonne Ricciardo, vvith all his familie, frō Florence, vvent tò dvvell at Venice, vvhere being made Citizens for diuers monuments by them done there, throughe inordinate expences vvere forced to robbe the Treaſure houſe. Bindo beinge ſlaine by a pollicie deuiſed by the Duke and ſtate. Ricciardo by fine ſubtelties deliuereth himſelfe from foure daungers. Afterwards the Duke (by his ovvne confeſſion) vnderſtandinge the ſleightes, giueth him his pardon, and his doughter in mariage.

The. xlviii. Nouell.

IN the goodly Citie of Venice, there was once a Duke, that was a noble gentlemā and of greate experience and wiſedome, called Valeriano di meſſer Vannozzo Accettani. In the chiefeſt Church of which Citie called San Marco, there was a ſteple, very faire and ſumptuous, and of greateſt fame of anything at that time ỳ was in Venice, which ſteeple was like to fall downe by reaſon of certaine faultes and decayes in the foundacion. Wherfore ỳ Duke cauſed to be ſearched thorow out all Italie, ſome cunning workeman that would take in hand the reparacion and amendmente of the ſame. With promiſe of ſo much money as he would demaund, for doing thereof. Whereuppon an excellent Architect of Florence, named Bindo, hearing tel of this offer, determined to go to Venice, for ỳ accompliſhmente of that worke, and for that purpoſe with his onelye ſonne and wyfe, hee departed Florence. And when he had ſeene & ſurueyed the ſteeple, he went ſtraight to the Duke, and told him that he was come thither to offer his ſeruice for repayringe of the ſame, whom the Duke curteouſly interci-

tertayned, & prayed him, that he would so sone as he could, begin that worke. Whereunto Bindo accorded, and wyth great diligence, and small time he finished the same, in better forme and suretie thã it was at the first. Which greatly pleased the Duke, and gaue Bindo so much money as he demaunded, making him besides a Citizen of Venice, for the maintenannce of whose state, hee allotted him a sufficient stipend: Afterwards the Duke called him vnto him, & declared ẏ he would haue a Treasure house made, wherein should be disposed and layde vp all the Treasure, & common ornamentes for the furniture of the whole Citie, which Bindo by and by toke vppon him to do, and made it of such singuler beautie, as it excelled all the monumentes of the Citie, wherein all the said treasure was bestowed. In which worke hee had framed a stone by cunninge, that mighte be remoued at pleasure, and no man perceiue it: Meaning thereby to goe into the Chamber when he liste: Whereunto none in all the world was priuie but himselfe. When this Palace and Treasure house was done, he caused all the furnitures of Silkes, hanginges wrought with Golde, Canapees, clothes of state, riche Chayres, Plate, and other Ornamentes of Golde and siluer to be caried thither, which he called La Turpea del doge, and was kept vnder fiue keyes, whereof foure were deliuered to foure of the chiefe Citizens, deputed to that office, which were called Chamberlaynes of the Treasure house, and the fifte keye the Duke himselfe did keepe, so that the Chamber coulde not bee opened excepte they were all fiue presente. Nowe Bindo and his familie dwelling at Venice, and beinge a Citizen there, beganne to spende liberallye, and to liue a riche and wealthye life, and hys sonne Ricciardo consumed disordinatelye, whereby in space of time, they wanted Garmentes to furnishe their bodies, which they were not able to maintaine for their inordinate expences. Wherefore the father vppon a night calling his sonne

vnto him, got a ladder, & a certaine yron instrumente made for the purpose, and taking also with him a litle lime, went to ꝑ hole, which Bindo artificially had made, who taking out the stone, crept in, & toke out a faire cup of Gold, which was in a closet, and afterward he wente out, cowching the stone againe in due place. And whē they were come home, they brake the cup, and caused it to be sould by peece meale, in certaine Cities of Lombardie. And in this sorte, they maintayned their disordinate life begonne. It chaũced not long after, that a Cardinall arriued at Venice, about affayres with the Duke, and the state, who the more honourablie to receiue him, opened the Treasure house to take oute certaine furnitures within, as plate, clothes of state, and other thinges. When the doore was opened, and had taken out the saide necessaries, they founde a cuppe lesse than oughte to be, wherewith the chamberlaines contended amonge themselues, & wente to the Duke, telling him that there wanted a cuppe. Whereat the Duke marueiled, and said that amonges them it must needes be gone. And after many denialls, and much talke, he willed them to saye nothing, till the Cardinall was departed. When the Cardinall was come, hee was receyued with honourable interteignemente, and beinge departed, the Duke sente for the foure Chamberlaines, to consult about the losse of the cup, commaunding them not to departe the Palace, before the same was found, saying that amongs them it must needes be stolen. These foure persons being together, and debating how & by what meanes the cup should be taken away, were at their wittes end. At length one of them saide.

"Let vs consider whether there be anye comminge into the "Chamber besides the dooze, and viewinge it, they coulde not perceiue anye entrie at all. And to proue the same more effectuallye, they strawed the Chamber aboute with fine sifted chaffe, setting the same on fier, which done, they shutte faste the windowes and doores, that the

smoke

smoke and smoulder might not goe out. The force of which smoke was such as it issued through the hole that Bindo made, whereby they perceiued the waye howe the robbery was committed, and went to the Duke to tell him what they had done: The Duke vnderstanding the fact, wylled them to saye nothing, for that he woulde deuise a pollicie howe to take the theefe. Who caused to be brought into the chamber a caldron of pitche, and placed it directly vnder the hole, commaunding that a fyre should be kept daye and night, vnder the caldron, that the same might continually boyle. It came to passe that when the money was spent, which the father and sonne had receiued for the cup, one night they went agayne to the hole, and remouing ỹ stone, the father went in as he did before, and fell into the caldron of pitche (which continually was boyling there) vp to the waste, and not able to liue any longer, he called his sonne vnto him, and sayde. Ricciardo myne owne sweete sonne, death hath taken me prysoner, for halfe my body is dead, & my breath also is ready to departe. Take my head with thee, and burie it in some place that it be not knowen, which done, commend me to thy mother, whome I praye thee to cherishe & comforte, and in any wyse take hede that warely and circumspectlye thou doe departe from hence. And if any man do aske for me, say that I am gone to Florence, about certaine businesse. The sonne lamentably began to lament his fathers fortune, saying. Oh deare father what wicked furie hath thus cruelly deuised sodaine death. Content thy self e (my sonne) sayd the father, and be quiet, better it is that one should dye, than twoo, therefore doe what I haue tolde thee, and fare well. The sonne tooke vp his fathers head, and went his waye, the reste of his bodye remayned in the caldron, like a block without forme. Whē Ricciardo was come home, he buried his fathers head so well as he could, and afterwardes tolde his mother what was become of his father, who vnderstanding the maner

of his

of his death, began piteously to crie out, to whom her sonne
" holding vp his hands, sayd. Good mother hold your peace,
" and geue ouer your weeping: for our life is in great perill
" and daunger, if your outcrie be heard. Therefore good mo-
" ther quiet your selfe, for better it were for vs to liue in
" poore estate, than to die with infamie, to the vtter reproche
" and shame of all our familie. With whiche woordes, he ap-
" peased her. In the morning the bodye was founde and ca-
ried to the Duke, who maruelled at it, and could not de-
" uise what he should be, but sayd. Surely there be two that
" committed this robberie, one of them we haue, let vs ima-
" gine how we may take the other. Then one of the foure chā
" berlaines sayd. I haue found out a trap to catche the other
" if it will please you to heare mine aduise, which is this. Im-
" possible it is, but this theefe that is dead, hath either wife,
" children or some kinsman in the citie, & therfore let vs cause
" the bodie, to be drawen throughout the streates, and geue
" diligent hede whether any persone doe complaine or lamēt
" his death And if any such be found, let him be taken & exa-
" mined: which is the next way as I suppose, to finde out his
" cōpanion. Which being cōcluded, they departed. The body
was drawē throughout ꝑ citie with a Guard of mē atten-
ding vpon the same. As ꝑ executioners passed by the house
of Bindo, whose carcasse laye vppon the hurdle, his wyfe
stode at the wyndowe, and seing the body of her husbande
so vsed, made a great outcrie. At whiche noyse the sonne
" spake to his mother and sayde. Alas mother what do you.
And beholding his fathers corps vpon the hurdle, he toke
a knife and made a great gashe into his hande, that the
bloud aboundauntly issued out. The Guarde hearing the
noyse that the woman made, ran into the house, and asked
" her what she lacked. The sonne aunswered. I was caruing
" a peece of stone with this knife, and by chaunce I hurt my
" hande, whiche my mother seeyng cryed out, thynking that
" I had hurt my selfe more than I haue. The Guarde seing

his

his hande all bloudy and cut, did beleue it to be true, and from thence went round about ỹ liberties of the citie, finding none that seemed to lament or bewayle that chaunce. And returning to the Duke, they tolde him howe all that labour was imployed in vayne, whereupon he appointed them to hang vp the dead body in the market place, with secret watche in like maner, to espie if any persone by day or night, would come to complaine or be sorowfull for him. Which body was by the feete hanged vp there, and a continuall watche appointed to kepe the same. The rumor hereof was bruted throughout the citie, and euery man resorted thither to see it. The woman hearing tell that her husbandes carcasse should be hanged vp in the market place. saide diuerse times to her sonne, that it was a very great shame for him to suffer his fathers body in that shamefull sort to be vsed. To whom her sonne made answere, saying. „ Good mother, for Gods sake be contented for that whiche „ they do, is for none other purpose, but to proue me: where- „ fore be pacient a while, till this chaũce be past. The mother „ not able to abide it any longer, brake out many times into these words. If I were a man, as I am a woman, it should „ not be vndone now: and if thou wilt not aduẽture thy self, „ I will one night giue the attempt. The yong man seing ỹ „ froward nature of his mother, determined to take away ỹ body, by this policie. He borrowed twelue friers frockes or cowles, and in the euening went downe to the hauen, and hired twelue Mariners, and placed them in a backe house, geuing them so muche meate and drinke as they woulde eate. And when they had well whitlet and tippled them selues, he put vpon them those friers cowles, with visards vpon their faces, and gaue euery of them in their hands a burning torch, making thẽ to seme as though they had ben Diuels of hel. And he himself, rode vpon a horse al couered with blacke, beset rounde about with monstrous and vglie faces, euerye of them hauinge a burnyng candle in hys

mouth

mouthe, and riding before with a visarde of horrible shape vpon his head, sayde vnto them: doe as I doe: And then marched forward to the market place. When they came thether they ran vp and downe with roring voyces crying out like Deuils, being then past midnight and very darke. When the watche sawe that straunge sight, they were afrayde, thinking that they had bene Deuils in deede, and that he on horsebacke in that forme, had ben the great Deuill Lucifer himselfe. And seing him runne towardes the gibet, the watche toke their legges & ran away. The yong man in the shape of the great Deuill, toke downe the body and layd it before him on horsebacke, who calling his companie away, roode before in poste. When they were come home, he gaue them their money, & vncasing them of their cowles, sent them away, and afterwardes buried the body so secretly as he could. In the morning, newes came to the Duke that the bodye was taken awaye, who sent for the Guarde to knowe what was become thereof. To whome
"they sayde these wordes. Pleaseth your grace, about mid-
"night last past, there came into the market place a compa-
"nie of Deuils, among whom we sawe the great Deuil Lu-
"cifer himselfe, who as wee suppose, did eate vp the bodye,
"which terrible sight & vision, made vs to take our legges.
The Duke by those wordes perceiued euidently, that the same was but a practise, to deceiue them of their purpose, notwithstanding, he determined once again to deuise some meanes in the ende to knowe the truthe, and decreed a constitucion, that for ỳ space of, xx. dayes no fresh meate should be solde in Venice. At which decree all the citie marueiled. Afterwardes he caused a verie faire fatte calfe to be solde, setting the price of euery pounde at a Fiorino, which amounteth to a French crowne or there aboutes, and willed hym that solde it, to note and marke them that bought it. Thin-
"king with him selfe, that he which is a theefe is licorous of
"mouth, delicate in fare, and would not stick to geue a good

price

price although it cost him a French crown for euery pound. »
Making proclamatiõ, that he which would buye any fresh
meate, should resort to the market place where was to bee
solde. All the Marchauntes and Gentlemen, repaired to
buye some of the Veale, & vnderstanding that euery pound
would not be solde vnder a Frenche crowne, they bought
none at all. This Calfe and the price was bruted in all pla- »
ces, and came to the knowledge of the mother of this yong »
man, who said vnto her sonne. I haue a minde to eate some »
of the Veale, now solde in the market. Ricciardo answe- »
red, Mother make no haste to buye it, first let it be cheape- »
ned by other, and at length I will deuise a meane that you »
shall haue it. For it is not wysedome for vs to be the first- »
that shall desire it. The mother like an ignorant and vn- »
skilfull woman, was importunate to haue it. The sonne fea- »
ring that his mother would sende for some of the Veale, »
by other, caused a Pie to be made, and prepared a flagon »
full of wyne, both which were intermixed with thinges to »
cause sleepe, and taking bread, the sayd Pie, and the flagon »
of wyne, when it was night, putting on a counterfait beard, »
and cloke, went to the stall where that Veale was to bee »
solde, which as yet was whole and vnbought. And when he
had knocked at the shop doore, one of the Guard asked who
was there. To whom Ricciardo said. Can you tel me wher »
one Ventura doth kepe his shop? of whom one of them de- »
maunded what Ventura? I know not his surname sayde »
Ricciardo, that I would he had bene hanged, when I came »
first to dwell with him. Why, who sent thee said one of the »
Guarde? his wyfe (quod Ricciardo) who bad me carry him »
this meate and wyne for his supper. But I pray you sayde »
Ricciardo, let me leaue the same with you, till I goe home »
to know better where he kepeth his stall. And maruell not »
my maisters though I know not where his shop is, for it is »
not long sithens I came to dwell in this citie. And so lea- »
ving behind him the Pie, and the bread with the flagon of »

wyne,

wyne, he made haste to departe, & tolde them that he wold come againe by and by. When he was gone, one of them toke the flagon, and dranke, and afterwardes gaue it to his companion, and said. Drinke, for thou neuer diddest tast of better wyne in all thy life. His companion dranke, and merily communing of this matter, they fel a sleepe. Ricciardo loking in at a hole of the doore, seing them a sleepe, went in, & toke the calfe and caried it home whole as it was, and saide to his mother. Hold mother, there is your luste, cut it out. And by and by she cut out a great pece. The Duke so sone as he heard that the calfe was stolen, and the maner howe, did wonder very muche, purposing yet to knowe what hee was. And caused a hundred poore people to come before him, whose names being written, he said vnto them. Get ye to all the houses in Venice, vnder colour to begge almes. And marke if you see in any house flesshe dressed, or any pece in making ready to be eaten at the fier, which if you doe, ye must be importunate in begging, till they giue you either flesh or broth. And he amōg all you ỳ shal bring me the first newes, I wil giue him .xx. crownes. These beggers dispersed themselues into euery corner of the citie, craning their almes, amongs whom one of them asked his almes at the house of Ricciardo, & approching nere, espied openly flesh at the spit, & besought a morsell there of for Gods sake: to whom the vndiscrete woman, seeing that she had plenty, gaue a litle pece. The poore man thanked the good wife and prayed God to saue her life. And as hee was going down ỳ steps of the doore, Ricciardo met him with the flesh in his hand. Wherewithall astonned, he willed him to return, and sayde he would giue him more. The begger glad of that, went in againe, whome Ricciardo caried in to his chamber, and when he was within, he strake such a full blowe vpon his head, with an axe, as he killed him, and threwe him into a Iakes, shutting the doore after him. In the euening, these poore men retourned to the Duke accordi

to their promise, and sayde they coulde finde nothing. The The Duke called them by their names, and compting the number, founde one lesse than he had sent, whereat he marueiled. And after he had well aduised with him selfe, what should become of him that lacked, he sayde. Certainely the poore man is slayne. Then causing the Councell to be assembled, he declared what he had done: and yet sayde that it were meete the partie were knowen. Whereunto one of the Senatours sayde. Your grace hath duely made search by the belly and mouth, to finde out this verlet: I thinke it nowe necessarie that triall be made, by Lechery, whiche commonly accompanieth liberous mouthes. Then it was concluded that the moste riotous and lecherous youg men, suche as the Duke had in greatest suspicion to the number of .xxv. should be warned to appeare before him, whiche accordingly was done, amonges whome was this Ricciardo. These ponge roisters assembled in the Palace, euery of them maruelled wherefore the Duke had caused them to come thether. Afterwarde the Duke commaunded .xxv. beddes to be made in one of his great chambers, to lodge euery of the sayd, xxv persons by hym selfe, & in the middes of the chamber he cõmaunded a riche bed of estate to be set vp & furnished, wher was appointed to ly his own daughter, which was an exceading faire creature. And in ỹ night when these yong men were layde in their beddes, manye gentlewomen, attendant vpon the Lady, came in to bryng her to her lodging. And her father deliuered to her a sawser full of black die, or stayning, and saide vnto her. If any of these yong men, that doe lie here by thee, doe offer to come to thy bedde, looke that thou marke him in the face with this staining colour, that he may be knowẽ. At which woordes all the yong men maruelled, and therefore durste not attempt to goe vnto her, but said one to an other. Surely this cõmaundement of the Duke hath some secret mistrie in it. Notwithstanding, Ricciardo determined about

midnight

midnight to go to her bed. And when the candle was out, being awake of purpose, he rose vp & went to the gẽlewomans bedde, and began to imbrace and kisse her. The maiden when she felt him, sodainly dipped her finger in the colour, and stained his face, not perceiued of him, whẽ he had accomplished the thing he came for, hee returned to his place. And then began to imagin vpon the Dukes wordes, and for what policie he spake them. And lying a litle while still, musing vpon the same, he went againe to the gentlewomans bedde, hauing throughly disposed himself to the pleasures of this paradise lambe. And perceiuing her to dippe her finger in the sawcer, and rubbe his face, Ricciardo toke away the sawcer from the beddes side, and round about, bestowed the colour vpon the faces of his felowes, who were so faste a sleepe, as they did not fele him. Some he marked with two spottes, some with six and some with .x. himselfe he painted but with foure, besides those wherewith already he was berayed by the gentlewoman. Whiche done, he set the saucer agayne by the beddes side, and when he had bidden her farewell, faire and softly, he returned againe to his bedde. In the morning betimes, the Damosels of the chamber came in to helpe the Ladye to make her readye, which done, they wayted vpon her to the Duke, who asked her how the matter stode. She aunswered well, for she had done his commaundement. And tolde him howe one came vnto her three times, and euery time she gaue him a tainte in his face. The Duke by and by sent for them that were of his counsell. To whome he said. Sirs I haue founde out this good fellow, and therfore I haue sent for you, that we altogether may goe to see him. They went all into the chãber, and viewing thẽ round about, they perceiued all their faces coloured, whereat they fell into a great laughter. Then one of them sayde to an other. Suerly this fellowe hath the subtilest head that euer was knowen and concluded that one of the cõpany had set ỹ colour in their faces.

The

The yong men beholding one an other, paynted in that sorte, brake into great sporte and pastime. Afterwardes the Duke examined euery of them, and seeing that he was not able by any meanes to vnderstande by whome it was done, he determined to knowe the man before he departed, and promised to him that should confesse the truthe, to giue his daughter to him in mariage, and with her a very great dowrie, and a generall pardon. Wherefore Ricciardo vnderstanding the Dukes mynde, toke hym aside, and tolde hym the whole matter particularly from the beginning to the ende. The Duke imbraced hym, and gaue him his pardon, and with great ioye and triumphe he solemnized the mariage betwene hym and his daughter. Wherewithall Ricciardo encouraged, proued a very stoute and valiaunt man, in suche wyse almoste, as the affaires of the whole state passed through his handes. And liued a long time after, with the loue and good wyll of the whole cominaltie of Venice.

Philenio Sisterno.

¶ Philenio Sisterno, a Scholler of Bologna, being mocked of three faire Gentlevvomen, at a banket made of set purpose, he vvas reuenged on them all.

The. xlix. Nouell.



AT Bologna, whiche is the nobleſt citie of Lombardie, the mother of ſtudies, and accompliſhed with al things needefull and requiſite for ſuch a flouriſhing ſtate, there was a yong Scholler, a Gentleman of the Countrie of Crete, named Philenio Sisterno, of very good grace and behauiour. It chaũced that in his time, there was a great feaſt made in the Citie, wherunto were bidden the fayreſt dames, and beſte of reputation there. There was likewyſe, many Gentlemen and Schollers of Bologna, amonges whome was this Philenio Sisterno: who followyng the manner of young men, dallying ſometime with one, ſometyme with an other: and perceiuing them for his purpoſe, determined to daunce with one of them. And comming to one whiche was called Emerentiana, the wyfe of Sir Lamberto Bentiuoglia, hee prayed her to daunce. Who being verie gentle, and of no leſſe audacitie than beautiful, refuſed not. Then Philenio leading forth the daunce very ſoftly, ſometymes wryngyng her by the hand, ſpake ſomewhat ſecretly vnto her, theſe wordes.

"Madame your beautie is ſo great, as without doubt it ſur-
"mounteth all that euer I ſawe, and there is no woman in
"the world, to whome I beare ſo great affection, as to your
"perſone, whiche if it were correſpondent to me in loue, I
"would thinke my ſelf the beſt contented man in the world,
"otherwyſe I ſhall in ſhorte tyme bee depriued of life, and
"then you ſhall be the cauſe of my death. And louing you
"(Madame) as I doe, and as my dutie requireth, you ought

to take

to take me for your seruaunt, vsing me & those litle goodes
whiche I haue, as your owne. And I doe assure you, that
it is impossible for me to receiue greater fauour from hea-
uen, than to see my selfe subiecte to suche a gentlewoman
as you be, whiche hath taken me in a nette lyke a byrde.
Nowe Emerentiana whiche earnestly had marked those
sweete and pleasaunt woordes, like a wyse gentlewoman,
semed to geue no eare thereunto, & made him no aunswere
at all. The daunce ended, and Emerentiana being set down
in her place, this young Scholler went to take an other
Gentlewoman by the hand, and began to daunce with her:
whiche was not so sone begonne, but thus he said vnto her.
It needeth not Madame, that by woordes I doe expresse the
feruent loue which I beare you, & will so do, so long as my
poore spirite shall gouerne & rule my members: and if I
could obtaine you for my maistresse and singuler Ladye, I
would thinke my self the happiest mã on liue. Then louing
you as I do, & being wholly yours, as you may easely vn-
derstand, refuse me not I beseech you for your humble ser-
uaunt, sithe that my life & all that I haue dependeth vpon
you alone. The yong gentlewoman, whose name was Pan-
themia, perceiuing his meaning, did not aunswere him any
thing at that time: but honestly proceded in her daunce, &
the daunce ended, smyling a litle, she sat downe with the o-
ther dames. This done, amorous Philenio rested not vntil
he had taken the thirde by the hand (who was the gentlest,
faitest, and trimmest dame in all Bologna) and began to
daunce with her romping aboute, to shewe his cunning be-
fore them that came to behold him. And before the daunce
was finished, he saide thus vnto her. Madame it may so be,
as I shall seme vnto you very malapert to manifest the se-
cret loue that I haue and doe beare you at this instant, for
which you ought not to blame me but your beautie, which
rendreth you excellent aboue al the rest, & maketh me your
slaue and prysoner. I speake not of your commendable be-

cc hauiour, of your excellent and maruellous vertues, which
cc be such & of so great effect, as they would make the Gods
cc descend to contemplate the same. If then your excellent
cc beautie and shape, so well fauoured by nature, & not by art,
cc may seeme to content the immortall Gods, you ought not
cc to be offended, if the same doe constraine me to loue you, &
cc to inclose you in the priuie cabane of my harte. I beseeche
cc you then gentle Madame (the onely comfort of my life) o
cc haue pitie vpon him that dieth a thousand times a daye, for
cc you. In so doing, my life shalbe prolonged by you, commē-
cc ding me humbly vnto your good grace. This faire gentle-
woman called Simphorosia, vnderstanding the sweete and
pleasaunt wordes vttered from the very harte of Philenio,
could not dissemble her sighes: but waying her honor, be-
cause she was maried, gaue him no answere at all. And the
daunce ended, she retourned to her place. Nowe it chaun-
ced, as these three Ladies, did sit together, iocundly dispo-
sed to debate of sundrie mery talke, behold, Emerentiana, ỹ
wife of seignior Lamberto, not for any euill, but in sporting
cc wise, said vnto her companions. Gentlewomen, I haue to
cc tell you a pleasaūt matter which happened to me this day.
cc What is that said her cōpanions? I haue gottē this night
cc said she) in dauncing, a curteous louer, a very faire Gentle-
cc man, and of so good behauiour as any in the worlde: who
cc said that he was so inflamed with my beauty, as he tooke
cc no rest day nor night: and from point to point, rehearsed vn
to them, all that he had said. Which Panthemia, and Sim-
phorosia vnderstāding, answered that ỹ like had chaūced
vnto theim, and they departed not from the feaste, before
eche of theim knewe him that was their louer. Whereby
they perceiued that his woordes proceded not of faithfull
loue, but rather of follie & dissimulatiō, in such wise, as they
gaue so lyghte credite thereunto, as of custome is geuen
to the woordes of those that bee sicke. And they departed
not from thence, vntill all three with one accorde, had con-

spired

spired euery one, to giue him a mocke: Philenio cõtinuing thus in loue, sometime with one, sometime with an other, and perceiuing that euery of them seemed to loue him, hee determined with him selfe, if it were possible to gather of them the last frute of his loue. But he was greatly deceyued in his desire, for that all his enterprise was broken. And that done, Emerentiana whiche could not any longer dissemble the loue of the foolishe scholer called one of her maydes, which was of fayre complexion, & a iolly wenche, charging her that she should deuise meanes to speake with Philenio, to geue him to vnderstande the loue whiche her maistresse bare vnto him, and whẽ it were his pleasure, she willingly would one night haue him at home at her house. Which newes when Philenio heard, he greatly reioyced, and said to ỹ maid. Returne to your maistresse faire maid, and commend me vnto her, telling her in my behalf, that I doe praye her to loke for me this euening, if her husbande be not at home. During which time, Emerentiana caused a certaine number of fagots of sharpe thornes to be made and to be layd vnder her bed, still wayting for her minion. When night was come, Philenio toke his sworde, & went to the house of his enemy, and calling at the doore with the watchworde, the same incontinently was opened. And after that they had talked a litle while together, and banketted after the best maner, they withdrew themselues into ỹ chamber to take their reste. Philenio had no soner put of his clothes to goe to bedde, but Seignior Lamberto her husbãd came home. Which the maistresse of the house perceiuing, made as though she had bene at her wittes ende, & could not tell whether to conuey her miniõ, but prayed him to hide himself vnder the bedde. Philenio seeing the daunger, wherein both he and the wife were, not taking with him any other garmentes, but only his shirte, crept vnder the bed, where he was so cruelly prickt and scratched with the thornes, as there was no parte of his bodye (from the

toppe of his head to the sole of his foote) free from blouds, and the more he sought to defende himselfe in that darke place, the more sharpely and piteously he was tormented, & durst not crie, for feare least seignior Lamberto would kill him. I will leaue to your consideration in what plight this poore wretch was in, who by reason of his miserable being as he was brecheleſſe in that terrible purgatorie, euen so was he speachleſſe and durst not speake for his life. In the morning when seignior Lamberto was gone forth, ẏ poore scholler put on his clothes so well as he could, & all bloudy as he was, returning to his lodging, was like to die. But being diligently cured by Phisicians, in short time he recouered his former health. Shortly after, Philenio began to pursue again his loue towardes the other two, ẏ is to say, Pāthemia and Simphorosia, & founde conuenient time one euening to speake to Panthemia, to whom he rehearsed his griefes & continuall tormentes, praying her to haue pitie vpon him. The subtile & wise wenche Panthemia, fayning to haue compassion vppon him, excused her selfe by lacke of meanes to content his desire, but in thend vanquished with faire supplications & maruellous sighes, shee made him to come home to her house, and being vnready, dispoyled of al his apparell to go to bed with his Lady, she required hym to go with her into a litle closet, wher all her swete smels and perfumes were, to the intent he might be well perfumed before he went to bedde. The young dolt not doubting the subtiltie of this wicked woman, entred the closet, and setting his foote vpon a borde vnnayled from the ioyst, fell so depe into a store house where marchauntes vse to lay their cottons and wolles, as he thought he had broken his necke, and his legges, notwithstanding, as fortune would, he had no hurt. This poore scholler being in ẏ darke place, began to seke for some doze or ladder to go out, & finding no thing for his purpose, he cursed the houre & time that euer he knew Panthemia. When the dauning of the day began

to ap-

to appeare, the simple Sot discried in one place of the stoze house certain ventes in ẏ wall, which gaue some light, because they wer old & couered ouer with mosse, in such wise as he began with maruelous foꝛce, to pluck out the stones in the moste decaied place of the wall, and made so great a hole, as he went out. And being in a lane hard by the great streate, barefoote and bare legged, and in his shirt, he went home to his lodging, vnknowen of any. A litle whyle after Simphorosia vnderstanding of the deceits, whiche the other twoo had done to Philenio, attempted to geue hym the thirde, whiche was not inferioꝛ to the other twayne. And foꝛ that purpose she began a farre of to caste her amorous lokes vpon hym, letting hym to knowe that shee was in great distresse foꝛ his loue. This pooꝛe soule hauing already foꝛgotten his foꝛtune paste, began to walke vp and downe befoꝛe her house, like a man altogether toꝛmented and painted with loue. Then Simphorosia, seing him to be farre in loue with her, sent hym a letter by an old woman, whereby she aduertised hym, that his beautie and good behauioꝛ, so puissantly did gouerne her affections as she could take no rest night noꝛ day, foꝛ the earnest loue she bare him. Wherefoꝛe she ꝓyed him if it were his pleasure, to come and speake with her. Philenio receiuing that letter, and perusing the contentes, not considering the deceite ꝓpared foꝛ him, ne yet any longer remẽbꝛing the iniuries past, was moꝛe ioyfull and glad than euer he was befoꝛe. Who taking pen and paper, aunswered her againe, that he foꝛ his parte suffered no lesse toꝛmentes foꝛ her sake, yea and in respect of vnfayned loue, that he loued her farre better than she did hym, and at all tymes when shee pleased, bee would be at her commaundement to doe her seruice. The aunswere read, and opoꝛtunitie found, Simphorosia caused him to come home to her house, & after many false sighes, she said vnto him. My deare frend Philenio, I knowe none other in all the woꝛld, that hath bꝛought me into this state and

cc and plighte wherein presently I am, but you, because your
cc beautie good grace, and pleasaunt talke, haue so sette my
cc harte on fyre, as I feele it to kindle and burne like dyre
cc woode. Which talke maister Scholler hearing, thought assuredly that she consumed for loue of him. This poore Nodgecock, contriuing the time in sweete and pleasaunt wordes, with his dareling Simphorosia, the time approched that he should go to bed with his faire Lady, who said
cc vnto him. My sweete frende Philenio, abide a whyle, and
cc let vs make some banket and collation, who taking him by
cc the hande, caried him into her Closet adioyning, wher was
cc a table ready furnished with exquisit conficts and wynes
cc of the best. This gentlewoman had made a composition in the wyne, to cause this yong Gallant to sleepe for a certain time. Philenio thinking no hurte, toke the cup and filled it with the wine, and dranke it vp at one draught. His spirits reuiued with this refreshing, after he had bene very well perfumed and washed in swete waters, he went to bedde, & within a while after this drinke began to worke, and hee slepte so soundly, as Canon shot, or the greatest gonnes of the worlde were not able to wake hym. Then Simphorosia perceiuing the drinke beginne to worke, called one of her sturdy maides that wel was instructed in the game of this pageant. Both whiche carying this poore sleepy Scholler by the feete and armes, and opening the dore very softlye, they fayre and well bestowed hym in the middeste of the streete, a good stones caste of from the house, where he lay all the nighte. But when the dawning of the daye dyd appeare, or an houre before, the drynke lost his vertue, and the poore soule began to awake, and thinking that he had bene a bedde with the Gentlewoman, he perceiued hymself bre-
cheleste and in his shirt, more dead then aliue, through the colde that he had endured, by lying starke naked vppon the earth. The poore wretche was not able to help himselfe so much as with his armes and legges, ne yet to stande vpon

his

his keete without great paine. Notwithstanding, through creping and sprawling, hee got home to his house vnseene of anye, and prouided so well as hee could for recouery of health. And had it not been for his youth, which did helpe him at that instant, his sinewes had been benommed for euer. In the end, hauing atteined his former state of health, he still remembred the iniuries past, and without shewing any signe of anger or displeasure, made as though he loued them all three better then euer he did before, and sometime seemed to be in loue with the one, and sometime with an other. They again for their part, nothing mistrusting the malice of Philenio, set a good face on the matter, vsinge amorous cheere and countenaunce towards him, but when his backe was tourned, with mockes and floutes they toke their pleasure. He bearing in his brest secrete despite, was still desirous with his hand to marke them in the face, but like a wise man, waying the natures of womē, he thought it woulde redounde to his greate shame and reproch, if hee did them any hurt. And therefore restrayning the heate of his choler, vsed patience. And yet by deuisinge and practising, how hee might be euen with them and reuenged, hee was in great perplexitie. Very shortly after, it chaunced ỹ the scholler had inuented a meane, easely to satisfie his desire, and so sone as hee had fully resolued what to do, Fortune therunto was fauourable. Who hyred in the Citie of Bologna a very faire house, which had a large hall, & comodious chambers, & purposed to make a greate & sumptuous feast, and to inuite many Ladies and gentlewomen to the same. Amongs whom these three were the first that should be bidden: which accordingly was done. And when the feast day was come, the three Gentlewomen that were not very wise at that instante, repaired thither nothing suspecting the schollers malice. In the end, a litle to recreate the gentlewomen, and to get them a stomacke, attendinge for supper time, the scholer toke these his three louers by

the

the hand, and led them friendly into a chamber, somewhat to refresh them. When these three innocent women were come into the Schollers chamber, hee shut fast the dooze, and going towards them, he sayde. Behold faire Ladies, "now the time is come foz me to be reuenged vpon you, and "to make you suffer the penaunce of the tozment wherwith "ye punished me foz my great loue. The gentlewomen hearing those cruell wozdes, rather dead then aliue, began to repent that euer they had offended him, and besides ẏ they cursed themselues, foz giuinge credit vnto him whom they ought to haue abhozred. The scholler with fierce and angry countenaunce, commaunded them vpon paine of their liues to strippe themselues naked. Which sentence when these three Goddesses heard, they began to loke one vppon another, weeping & prayping him, that although he woulde not foz their sakes, yet in respect of his owne curtesie and naturall humanitie, that hee woulde saue their honour aboue all thinges. This Gallant reioysing at their humble and pitifull requestes was thus curteous vnto them, that he would not once suffer them to stand w̄ their garmentes on, in his prezence. The women casting themselues downe at his feete, wept bitterly, beseeching him that he woulde haue pitie vpon them, and not to be the occasion of a slaunder so great and infamous. But he whose hart was hardened as the Diamonde, said vnto them, that this facte was not wozthy of blame, but rather of reuenge. The women dispoyled of their apparel (and standing befoze him, so free from couering as euer was Eue befoze Adam) appeared as beautifull in this their innocent state of nakednes, as they did in their brauerie: in so much that the yong scholler viewing from toppe to toe, those fayze and tender creatures, whose whitenesse surpassed the Snow, began to haue pitie vpon them: but calling to his remembzaunce the iniuries past, and the daunger of death wherein he was, he reiected all pitie, and continued his harde and obstinate determination.

tion. Then he toke all their apparell, and other furnitures
that they did weare, and bestowed it in a little chamber, &
with threatning words commaunded all three to lie in one
bed. The women altogether astonned, began to say to them
selues. Alas what fooles be we? What will our husbands
and our frendes say, when they shal understand that we be
found naked and miserablie slaine in this bed? It had been
better for vs to haue died in our cradels, than apprehended
and found dead in this state and plight. The Scholler se-
ing them bestowed one by an other in the bed, like husband
and wyfe, couered them with a very white & large sheete, ỹ
no part of their bodies might be seene and knowen, & shut-
ting the Chamber dooze after him. Philenio went to seeke
their husbands, which were dauncing in the Hall. And the
daunce ended, he intreated them to take the paines to goe
with him. Who was their guide into the Chamber where
the three Muses lay in their bedde, saying vnto them. Sirs
I haue brought you into this place to shewe you some pa-
stime, & to let you see the fayrest thinges that euer you saw
in your liues. Then approching neere the bed, & holding a
torch in his hand, he began fayre & softly to lift vp the sheete
at the beds feete, discouering these fayre Ladies euen to ỹ
knees. Ye should haue seen then, how the husbands did be-
hold their white legges, and their wel proportioned feete,
which don, he disclosed them euen to the stomack, & shewed
their legges, & thighes farre whiter thã alablaster, which
seemed like two pillers of fine marble, with a rounde body
so wel formed as nothing could be better. Consequẽtly he
tourned vp the sheete a litle further, & their stomackes, ap-
peared somewhat round and plumme, hauing two rounde
breasts, so firme and feate, as they would haue constrayned
the great God Iupiter, to imbrace and kisse them. Where-
at the husbandes toke so great pleasure and contentmente,
as coulde be deuised. I omitte for you to thincke in what
plighte, these poore naked women weare, hearinge their

husbands

husbandes to mocke them. All this while, they laye verye quiet, and durst not so much as to hem or coughe, for feare to be knowen. The husbãds were earnest with the Scholler to discouer their faces, but hee wiser in other mennes hurtes, than in his owne, would by no meanes consent vnto it. Not contented with this, the yong scholler shewed their apparel to their husbands, who seing the same, were astonned, & in viewing it with great admiration, they said
"one to another. Is not this ỳ gowne that I once made for
"my wife? Is not this the Coyfe that I bought her? Is not
"this the Pendãt that she weareth about her necke? Be not
"these the ringes that set out and garnisht her fingers? Be-
ing gone out of the Chamber, for feare to trouble ỳ feast, he would not suffer them to depart, but caused them to tarie supper. The Scoller vnderstandinge that supper was ready: and that the Maister of the house, had disposed all thinges in order, he caused the geastes to sit downe. And whiles they were remouing & placing ỳ stooles & chayres, he returned into the chamber, wher the three Dames lay,
"and vncouering them, he said vnto them Bongiorno, faire
"Ladies, did you heare your husbandes? They be here by, &
"do earnestly tarie for you at supper. What do ye meane to
"do? Up and rise yee Dormouses, rubbe your eyes, & gape
"no more, dispatche and make you ready, it is time for you
"now to repayre into the Hall, where the other Gentlewo-
"men do tarie for you. Behold now how this Scholer was reuenged by interteigning them after this maner. Then ỳ poore desolate women, fearing least their case would sorte to som pitiful successe, dispayring of their health, troubled and discomforted, rose vp looking, rather expecting death than any other thing. And tourning them toward ỳ Scol-
"ler, they said vnto him. Maister Philenio, you haue had suf-
"ficient reueng vpõ vs: the best for you to do now, is to take
"your sword, & to bereue vs of oure life, which is more loth-
"some vnto vs than pleasaunt. And if you will not do vs ỳ

good

good tourne, suffer vs to go home to our houses vnknowē, „
that our honours may be saued. Then Philenio thinking „
that he had at pleasure vsed their persons, deliuered them their apparel, & so sone as they were ready, he let them out at a litle dooze, very secretlye, vnknowen of anye, & so they wēt home to their houses. So sone as they had put of their fayze furnitures, they folded them vp, & layd them in their chestes. Which done, they went about their houshold busines, till their husbands came home, who being retourned, they founde their wiues sowing by ẏ fire side, in their Chābers. And because of their apparell, their ringes and Iewels, which they had seene in the Scholler's Chamber, it made them to suspect their wiues, euery of them demaunding his seuerall wife, where she had bin ẏ nighte, & where their apparell was. They well assured of themselues, aunswered boldly, that they were not out of their house all the euening, and taking the keyes of their cofers, shewed them their apparell, their ringes and other things, which their husbandes had made them. Which when their husbandes saw, they could not tell what to say, and forth with reiected all suspicion, which they had conceiued: telling them from point to point, what they had seen ẏ night. The women vnderstanding those wordes, made as though they knew nothing, and after a litle spozt and laughter betweene them: they went to bed. Many times Philenio met his Gentlewomen in the streates and said vnto them. Which of you „
was most afraide or worste intreated? But they hol- „
ding downe theyr heads, passed forth not speaking a word. In this maner the Scholler was requited so well as he could, of the deceites done against him, by the three gentlewomen afozesaid.

The

The pitifull murther

¶ The piteous and chaſte death of one of the Muleters wiues of the Queene of Nauarre.

The L. Nouell.

IN ỳ Citie of Amboiſe, there was a Muleter that ſerued the Queene of Nauarre, ſiſter to kinge Fraunces the firſte of that name, which was brought a bedde of a ſonne at Blois: To which towne the ſaid Muleter was gone to be paide his quarters wages, whoſe wyfe dwelled at Amboiſe beyond the bridges. It chaũced that of long time one of her huſbands ſeruauntes did ſo diſordinately loue her, as vppon a certaine day he could not forbeare but he muſte vtter the effect of his Loue borne vnto her. Howbeit ſhee being a right honeſt woman, toke her mans ſute in very ill part, threatning to make her huſband to beate him, and to put him away, and vſed him in ſuch wyſe, that after ỳ time he durſt not ſpeake thereof any more, ne yet make ſigne or ſemblance. Keeping yet that fier couered within his breſt, vntill his Maiſter was ridden out of the Towne, and that his Maiſtreſſe was at euenſong at S. Florẽtines, a church of the Caſtle farre from her houſe. Who now being alone in the houſe, began to imagine how he might attempt that thinge by force, which before by no ſupplication or ſeruice he was able to attaine. For which purpoſe, hee brake vp a borde betweene his maiſtreſſe chamber and his. But becauſe the Curteins of his Maiſter and Maiſtreſſe bed, and of the ſeruaunts of the other ſide, couered and hid ỳ walles betweene, it could not be perceyued, nor yet his malice diſcried, vntill ſuch time as his Maiſtreſſe was gone to bed, with a litle wenche of xii. yeares of age. And ſo ſone as the yoore woman was fallen into her firſt ſleepe, this varlet

entred

entred in at a hole which he had broken, & cõueyed himself into her bed in his shirt, with a naked swoorde in his hande. Who so sone as she felt him layed downe by her, lepte out of her bed, perswading him by all possible meanes meete for an honest womã to do. And he indued with beastly loue, rather acquainted with the language of his Mulets, then with her honest reasons, shewed himselfe more beastly then the beasts, with whom he had of long time bin conuersant. For, seing her so oft to runne about the table that he could not catch her, & also that she was so strong, as twise she ouercame him, in dispaire that he should neuer enioy her alone, hee gaue her a great blow w̄ his swoord ouer ẏ raines of the back, thinking that if feare and force could not make her to yeld, paine and smart should cause her. How be it the contrarie chaunced. For like as a good man of armes whē he seeth his owne bloud, is the more set on fier to be reuēged vpon his enemies to acquire honor: euen so the chaste hart of this woman, did reenforce and fortefie her courage in double wise to auoyde and escape the hands of this wicked varlet, deuising by all meanes possible by fayre words to make him acknowledge his fault. But he was so inflamed with furie, as there was no place in him to receiue good counsell. And eftsones with his swoord, he gashed her tender bodye with diuers and sondry strokes, for the anoyding, wherof so fast, as her legges could beare her, she ran vp & downe the chamber. And when through wāt of bloud she perceiued death approch, lifting vp her eyes vnto heauē and ioyning her hands together, gaue thanckes vnto God, whom she termed to be her force, her vertue, her pacience and chastitie, humblie beseeching him to take in good part the bloude which by his commaundemente was sheade in honor of that precious bloude, which from his owne sonne did issue vppon the Crosse, whereby shee did beleeue firmelye and stedfastlye, that all her sinnes were wiped awaye and defaced from the memorye of his wrathe and anger,

and

and in sayinge, Lorde receiue my soule which was dearely bought and redeemed with thy bounty & goodnes, shee fell downe to the ground vpon her face where the wicked villaine inflicted her body with manifold wounds. And after she had lost her speache and the force of her body: this most wicked and abhominable varlet, toke her by force, which had no more strength and power to defende herselfe. And when he had satisfied his cursed desire, he fled away in such hast, as afterwards for all the pursute made after him, he could not be found. The yong wench which lay with her, for feare hid herselfe vnder the bed. But when she perceyued the villaine departed, shee came vnto her maistresse, & finding her speachlesse and without mouing, she cryed out at the window vnto ỹ nexte neighbours to come to succour her. And they which loued her, and esteemed her so wel as any woman in ỹ towne, came presently vnto her, & brought diuers Surgeons with them, who findinge vpon her body xxv. mortall woundes, they did so much as in them laye to helpe her. But it was impossible. Howbeit shee laye one houre without speache, makinge signes with her eyes and hands, declaring that she had not lost her vnderstandinge, being demaũded by the priest, of the fayth wherin she died, and of her saluacion, she aunswered by such euident signes, as her liuely speach and cõmunication could not haue declared it better, howe that her trust and confidence was in the death of Jesus Christ, whom she hoped to see in the celestiall Citie, and so with a ioyfull countenaunce, her eyes erected vp to the heauens, she rendred her chast body to the earth, and her soule to her creator. And when shee was shrouded ready to the buriall, as her neighbours were attending to followe her to the Church, her poore husbande came home, and the first sight he sawe, was the body of his dead wife before his doore, whereof before that instant hee had no newes. And whẽ he vnderstode ỹ order of her death, he then doubled his sorrowe, in such wyse that he was also

like

like to die. In this sort was this marter of Chastitie buried in the Church of S. Florentine, where all the honest dames & wiues of the citie endeuoured themselues to accõpany her, and to honour her with suche reuerence as they were able to do: accomptinge themselues most happie to dwell in that Towne, where a woman of such vertuous behauiour did dwell. The foolish and wanton seing the honour done to that deade bodye, determined from that time forth to renue their former life and to chaũge the same into a better.

A King of Naples.

¶ A King of Naples, abusing a Gentlemans wife, in the ende did weare the hornes himselfe.

The Lj. Nouell.

IN the Citie of Naples when king Alphonsus raigned, in whose time wãtonnesse bare chiefest sway, there was a gentleman so honest, beautifull and comely, as for his good conditions, and wel knowen behauiour, an old gentlemã gaue to him his daughter in mariage, which in beautie and good grace was passingly well beloued and comfortable to her husband. The loue was great betwene them, till it chaunced vpon a shroue tide, that the king went a masking into the Citie, where euery man endeuoured to intertaine him the best he could. And when he came to this gentlemans house, he was best receyued of any place in all the towne, aswell for banqueting, as for musicall songes, & the gentlewoman, the fayrest that the king sawe in all the Citie to his contentacion. And vpon the end of the banket, she sang a song with her husbande, with a grace so good as it greatly augmented her beautie. The king seing so many

perfections in one body, conceyued not so great pleasure in the sweete accords of her husband and her, as he did howe to deuise, to interrupt and breake them. And the difficultie for bringinge that to passe, was the greate amitie that hee sawe betweene them. Wherefore he bare in his hart that passion so couert, as he possibly could. But partly for his owne solace and comforte, and partly for good will of all, hee feasted all the Lords and Ladyes of Naples, where the gentleman and his wife were not forgotten. And because man willingly beleeueth, that he doth see, he thought that the lokes of that gentlewoman promised vnto him some grace in time to come, if the presence of her husband were no let therunto. And to proue whether his cõiecture were true, he sente her husbande in commission to Rome, for the space of xb. dayes or iii. wekes. And so sone as he was gone, his wyfe which hitherto had not felt any long absence frõ her husband, made great sorrow for the same, whereof she recõforted by the king, many times by sweete perswasions and by presents & gifts, in such sort, ẏ she was not onely cõforted, but contented with her husbandes absence. And before the three weekes, were expired of his returne, she was so amorous of the king as she was no lesse sorowful of his comming home, thẽ she was before for his departure. And to the intent the kings presence might not be loste, they agreed together, ẏ when her husbãd was gone to his possessions in the countrie, she should send word to the king, ẏ he might haue safe repaire vnto her, and so secretly, ẏ his honour, (which he feared more then he did the fact) might not be impaired. Upon this hope, this Ladies hart was set on a merie pin. And when her husband was come home, shee welcomed him so wel, ẏ albeit he knewe how ẏ king made much of her in his absence, yet he would not beleeue ẏ he so did for any dishonest fact. Howbeit by continuance of time this fier ẏ could not be couered, by litle & litle begã to kindle, in such wise, as the husbãd doubted much of the truth

a

and watched the matter so neere, as he was almost oute of doubt. But for feare, least the partie which did the wrong, should do him greater hurt, if he seemed to know it, he determined to dissemble the matter. For he thought it better to liue w some griefe, then to hazard his life for a woman ẏ did not loue him. Notwithstanding, for this displeasure, he thought to be euen with the king if it were possible. And knowinge ẏ many times despite maketh a woman to do ẏ which Loue cannot bring to passe specially those ẏ haue honourable harts and stoute stomacks, was so bold without blushing, vpon a day in speaking to the Queene, to say vnto her, ẏ he had pitie vpon her, for that shee was no better beloued of the king her husbãd. The Queene which heard tell of the loue betwene ẏ king & his wife. I cannot (q she) both enioy honour and pleasure together, I knowe well ẏ honor I haue, whereof one recciueth the pleasure, & as she hath the pleasure, so hath not she ẏ honor. He which knewe wel by whom those words were spoken, said vnto her. Madame, honor hath waited vpon you euen from your birth, for you be of so good a house, as to be a queene or Empresse, you cãnot augment your nobilitie, but your beautie, grace, and honestie, hath deserued so much pleasure, as she ẏ depriueth you of ẏ which is incidẽt to your degree, doth more wrong to her self then to your person. For she for a glorie ẏ hath turned her to shame, hath therewithall lost so much pleasure, as your grace or any Lady in ẏ realme may haue. And I may saye vnto you (Madame) ẏ if the kinge were no king as he is. I thincke ẏ he could not excel me in pleasing of a woman. Being sure ẏ to satisfie such a vertuous personage as you be, he might exchange his cãplexion w mine. The Queene smiling, answered him. Although ẏ king be of more delicate and weaker complexion than you be, yet the loue that he beareth mee, doth so much content mee, as I esteeme the same aboue all thinges in the world. The gentleman said vnto her. Madame, if it were so, I woulde

"take no pitie vpon you, for I know wel that the honest loue
"of your hart, would yeld vnto you great contentment, if the
"like were to be found in the king. But God hath foreseene
"and preuented the same, least enioyinge your owne desire,
"you would make him your God vppon earth. I confesse
"vnto you (saide the Queene) that the Loue I beare
"him, is so great, as ỳ like place he could not find in no wo-
"mans hart, as he doth in mine. Pardon me Madame (saide
"the Gentleman) if I speake more francklye, your grace
"hath not sounded the depth of ech mans harte. For I dare
"be bold to say vnto you, that I do know one that doth loue
"you, and whose loue is so great, as your loue in respecte of
"his is nothing. And for so much as he seeth the kinges loue
"to faile in you his doth grow and increase, in such sort, that
"if your loue were agreable vnto his, you should be recom-
"pensed of all your losses. The Queene aswel by his words
as by his countenaunce, began to perceiue, that the talke
proceded from the bottom of his hart, and called to her re-
membraũce that long time he had endeuored to do her ser-
uice, with such affection, as for loue he was growen to be
melancolike, which she thought before, to rise through his
wiues occasion, but now shee assuredly beleued that it was
for her sake And thus the force of Loue, which is well dis-
cryed when it is not fayned, made her sure of that, which
was vnknowen to all the world. And beholding ỳ gentle-
man which was more amiable than her husband, & seing, ỳ
he was forsaken of his wife, as she of the king, prested with
despite & ialousie of her husband, & prouoked w̃ loue of the
gentleman, begã to say with finger in eye, & sighing sobbs.
"O my God, must vengeaũce get & win ỳ at my hand, which
"Loue cannot doe? The gentleman well vnderstanding her
"meaning, aunsweared. Madame vengeance is sweete vnto
"him which in place of killinge an ennempe, giueth life to a
"perfecte freinde. I thincke it time that trouth doe re-
"moue from you the foolishe loue, that you beare to him

which

which loueth you not. And that iust and reasonable loue
should expell from you the feare, which out not remaine in
a noble and vertuous hart. But now Madame, omittinge
to speake of the greatnesse of your estate, let vs consider þ
we be both man and womã, the most deceiued of the world,
and betrayed of them which we haue most dearely loued.
Let vs now be reuenged (Madame) not onely to render vn-
to them, what they deserue, but to satisfie the loue which
for my part I can no lõger beare, except I should die. And
I thincke, that if your harte be not harder than Flinte, or
Diamõt, it is impossible but you must perceiue som sparke
of fier, which increaseth more than I am able to dissemble.
And if pitie of me which dieth for your loue, doth not moue
you to loue me, at least wyse let loue of your self constraine
you, which (being so perfect a creature as you be) doth de-
serue to enioy the hartes of the noblest and most vertuous
of the world. Suffer I say, the contempt and forsaking of
him, moue you, for whom you haue disdayned al other per-
sons. The Queene hearing those words, was so rauished,
as for feare to declare by her countenaunce the trouble of
her spirite, leaning vppon the Gentlemans arme, went in-
to a gardẽ hard by her Chamber, where she walked a long
time not able to speake a woord. But the Gentleman se-
ing her halfe wonne, when he was at the ende of the Alley
where none could see them, hee certified her by effect, the
loue which so long time he kept secrete from her. And both
with one consent reioyced in reuenge, whereof the passion
was importable. And there determined, that so oft as hee
went into the Country, and the king from his Castell into
the Citie, he should retourne to the Castel to see þ Quene.
Thus deceyuing the deceyuers, all foure were partakers
of the pleasure, which two alone thought to enioy. The ac-
word made, they departed, the Lady to her Chamber, and
the Gentleman to his house, with such contentacion, as
they had quite forgottẽ al theyr troubles past. And þ feare

which either of them had of the assembly of the king and of the Gentlewoman, was tourned to desire, which made ỹ Gentleman to go more oft then he was wonte to doe into the countrye, being not past halfe a mile of. And so lone as the king knew therof, he fayled not to visite his Lady, & the gentleman the night folowing wēt to the Castle to salute the Queene, to do ỹ office of the kinges Lieuetenaūt, so secretly as no man did perceiue it. This voyage endured lōg time, but the king because he was a publike person, could not so well dissemble his Loue, but all the worlde did vnderstand it, and all men pitied the gentlemās state. For diuers light persons behinde his backe would make hornes vnto him, in signe of mockerie, which he right well perceyued. But this mockerie pleased him so wel, as he esteemed his hornes better then the kings Crowne. The king and ỹ Gentlemans wife one day, could not refraine (beholding a Stagges head set vp in the Gentlemans house) from breaking into a laughter before his face, saying, how that head became the house very well. The gentleman that had so good a hart as he, wrote ouer that head these words.

These hornes I weare and beare for euery man to view.

But yet I weare them not in tokē they be trew.

The king retourning againe to the Gentlemās house, finding this Title newlye written, demaunded of the gentleman the signification of them.

Who said vnto him.

If Princesse secret things, be from the horned hart concealed.

VVhy should like things of horned beastes, to Princes be reuealed.

But

But content your self. All they that weare hornes, be par- »
doned to weare their capps vpon their heads. For they be »
so sweete and pleasaunt, as they vncappe no man, and they »
weare them so light, as they thincke they haue none at all. »
The king knew well by his wordes that he smelled some- »
thing of his doings, but he neuer suspected þ loue betwene »
the Queene and him. For the Queene was better conten- »
ted wyth her husbandes life, and with greater ease dissem-
bled her griefe. Wherefore eyther parts liued long time in this loue, till age had taken order for dissolucion there-of. Behold Ladyes (q Saffredante) this Historye which for example I haue willingly recited to thintente that when your husbands do make you hornes as big as a Goate, you maye render vnto him the monstrous heade of a Stagge, peace (q Emarsuite smyling) no more wordes, least you reuiue some sleeping sweet soule, which without slur would not awake, with any whispring.

¶ The rashe enterprise of a Gentleman against a Princesse of Flaunders, and of the shame that hee receyued thereof.

The Lij. Nouell.

THere was in Flaunders a Lady of an honorable house, which had two husbands, by whom shee had no children that were then liuinge. Duringe the time of her widowhoode, shee dwelte within one of her brothers, that loued her very well, which was a noble mã, and had maried a kings doughter. This yong Prince was muche giuen to pleasure, louinge huntinge, passime,

and the company of kayre Ladyes, accordingly as youth requireth. He had a wyfe that was curst and troublesome, whom the delectations of her husband in no wyse did contente and please. Wherefore this noble man caused his sister daily to keepe company with his wife. This Gentlewoman his sister, was of pleasaunt cõuersation, and therewithal very honest and wyse. There was in the house of this noble man, a Gentleman whose worship, beautye and grace, did surpasse all the rest of his companions. This Gentleman perceyuing the sister of his Lorde and Maister to be pleasaunte and of ioyfull countenaunce, thoughte to proue if the attempt of an honest frende would be vouchsaued, but he founde her aunswere to be contrary to her cõtenaunce. And albeit that her aunswere was such as was meete for a Princesse and right honest Gentlewoman, yet because she perceyued him to be a goodly personage, and curteous, she easily pardoned his bold attempt, and seemed that she toke it not in ill part when he spake vnto her. Neuertheless shee warned him, after that time, to moue no such matter, which he promised, because he would not lose his pleasure, and the honour that hee conceyued to entertaine her. Notwithstandinge, by processe of time his affection increased so much, as he forgot the promise which he had made her, wherefore he thoughte good not to hazarde his enterprise by wordes: for that hee had to long against his wyll experimented her wyse and discrete aunsweares. And therewithall he thought if he could finde her in some conuenient place (because she was a yong widow, of lusty yeares and good complexion) it were possible shee woulde take pitie vppon him, and of herself. And that he might bring his purpose to effecte, he said to his Maister that he had besides his owne house very goodly game, and that if it pleased him to kill three or foure Stagges in the moneth of May, he should see very good passime. The Lord aswell for the loue hee bare to the Gentleman, as for the

pleasure

pleasure he had in hunting, graunted his request. And wēt to his house, which was so faire and well furnished, as the best Gentleman in all the countrey had no better. The gētleman lodged his Lord and Lady in one side of the house, & in the other directly against it, her whome he loued better than himselfe. The chamber where his maistres laye, was so well hanged with Tapistrie, and so trimely matted, as it was impossible to perceiue a falling doze, harde by ẏ beds side, descending to his mothers chamber, which was an old Lady, muche troubled with the Catarre & Rume. And because she had a Cough, fearing to disease ẏ Princesse which laye aboue her, she chaunged her chamber with her sonne. And euery night the olde Gentlewoman brought comfects to the Lady foz her recreation, vpon whom the Gentleman wayted, who (foz that he was well beloued and very familier with her brother) was not refused to be present at her rising and going to bedde. Whereby he daily toke occasion to increase his loue and affectiō. In such sozte as one night, after he had caused the Lady to sit vp late, (she being surprised with sleepe) he was fozced to depart the chamber, & to repaire to his own. Wher when he had put on the most brauest perfumed shirt that he had, & his cap foz the night so trimmely dzessed, as there wanted nothing, he thought in beholding himself, that there was no Lady in the wozld that would refuse his beautie and comlinesse. Wherefoze promising himselfe a happie successe in his enterprise, hee went to his bed where he purposed not long to abide, foz the desire that he had to enter into an other, whiche should be moze honourable and pleasaunt vnto him. And after he had sent his men away, he rose to shut the doze after them, and hearkened a good while, whether he could heare any noyse in the Ladies chamber aboue. And whē he was sure that euery man was at rest, he began to take his pleasaunt iourney, and by litle & litle opened the falling doze, whiche was so well trimmed with cloth, that it made no noyse at all, and

all,and went vp to the Ladies bed side, which then was in her first sleepe, and without respecte of the bonde and promise that he made vnto her,or the honorable house wherof she came,without leaue or reuerēce,he laid himselfe down beſides her,who felt him betweene her armes before she perceiued his cōming. But she which was somewhat strong, vnfolded her selfout of his handes,and in asking him what he was,began to strike,to bite and scratche, in suche wyse, as he was constrained(for feare least she should crye out)to stoppe her mouth with the couerlet, which was impossible for him to do. For when she sawe him to presse with all his force to despoyle her of her honor, she spared no part of her might to defende and kepe her selfe,and called(so loude as she could) her woman of honor, that laye in her chamber, whiche was a very auncient and sober gentlewoman,who in her smock,ran straight to her maistresse.And when the Gentleman perceiued that hee was discouered, hee was so fearfull to be knowen of the Ladye,as sone as he could hee shifted himself down by his trapdoze.And where before he conceiued,hope and assuraunce to be welcome,now he was brought in despaire for retourning in so vnhappy state. When he was in his chamber,he found his glasse & candle vpon the table, and beholding his face all bloudy with the scratchings and bitinges, whiche shee had bestowed vpon him,the bloud wherof ran down his fayre shyrt,better bloudied then gilted, he began to make his moone in this wise.

"O beautie,thou art nowe payed thy desert, for vppon thy "vayne promise haue I aduentured a thing impossible. And "that which might haue bene the augmēting of my delight "is nowe the redoubling of my sorowe. Being assured that "if she knewe howe contrary to my promise I haue enter- "prised this foolishe fact, I should vtterly forgoe the honest "and comon conuersation whiche I haue with her aboue al "other. That which my estimation, beautie and good beha- "uiour doe deserue,I ought not to hyde in darkenesse. To

gaine

gaine her loue, I ought not to haue assayed her chast bodye by force, but rather by seruice and humble pacience, to wayte and attend till loue did vanquishe. For without loue all the vertue and puissance of man is of no power & force. Euen thus he passed the night in such teares, griefes and plaintes, as can not be well reported and uttered. In the morning, when he beheld his bloudy face all mangled and torne, he fained to be very sicke, and that he could abide no light, til the company were gone from his house. The Lady whiche thus remained victorious, knowing that there was no man in all her brothers Court, that durst attempt a deede so wicked, but her hoste which was so bolde to declare his loue vnto her, knew well that it was he. And whē she and her woman of honour had searched all the corners of the chamber to knowe what he was, and could not finde hym, she sayd vnto her woman in great rage. Assure your selfe it can be none other, but the Gentleman of the house, whose villanous order I wyll reueale to my brother in the morning, in such sorte, as his head shalbe a witnesse & testimony of my chastitie. Her woman seing her in that furie, sayd vnto her. Madame I am right glad to see the loue & affectiō which you beare to your honor, for ꝑ increase wherof, you doe not spare the life of one, which hath aduentured himselfe so muche for the loue that hee beareth vnto you. But many times such one thinketh by those meanes to increase loue, which altogether he doth diminishe. Wherefore (Madame) I humbly beseche you to tell me the truthe of this facte. And when the Ladie had recompted the same at lengthe, the woman of honour sayd vnto her. Your grace doth say that he got no other thyng of you, but scrathes and blowes with your fistes. No I assure you (quod the Ladie) and I am certaine if hee gette hym not a good Surgeon, the markes will be seene to morowe. Wel Madame (quod the genlewoman) sithens it is so, me thinketh you haue greater occasion to prayse GOD, then to muse

vpon

"vpon reuenge: For you may beleue, that sithens he had the
"courage to enterprise so great an exploit, and that despite
"hath failed him of his purpose, you can deuise no greater
"death for him to suffer, then the same. If you desire to be re
"uenged, let Loue and shame alone bring that to passe, who
"knowe better which way to tormente him than your selfe:
"and with greater honor to your persone. Take heede Ma-
"dame from falling into such inconuenience as he is in. For
"in place of great pleasure whiche he thought to haue gay-
"ned, he hath receiued the extremest anoyance, that any gēt-
"leman can suffer. And you Madame by thinking to aug-
"ment your honor, you may decrease and diminish the same.
"And by making cōplaint, you shal cause that to be knowen,
"which no man knoweth. For of his part (you may be assu-
"red) there shall neuer be any thing reuealed. And when
"my Lorde your brother at your requeste, shall execute the
"iustice which you desire, and that the poore Gentlemā shal
"be ready to die, the brute will runne that he hath had his
"pleasure vpon you. And the greatest numbre will say, that
"it is very difficult for a Gentleman to doe suche an enter-
"prise, except the Lady minister some great occasion. Your
"grace is faire and yong, frequenting your life in pleasant
"company, there is none in all the Court, but seeth & mar-
"keth the good countenaunce you beare to that Gentlemā,
"whereof your selfe hath some suspicion. Which will make
"euery man suppose that if he hath done this enterprise, it
"was not without some consent from you. And your honor
"which hetherto hath borne your port a loft, shall be dispu-
"ted vpon in all places where this historie shall be remem-
"bred. The Princesse well waying the good reasons & ad-
"uise of her gentlewoman, knewe that she spake the truthe
"and that by moste iust cause she should be blamed: consid-
"ring the familiaritie and good countenaunce which dayly
"she bare vnto the Gentleman. Wherefore she inquired of
"her woman of honour, what was beste to bee done. Wh-

auuswa

answered her thus. Madame sith it pleaseth you to receiue ,,
mine aduise, by waying the affection whereof it proceedeth, ,,
me thinke you ought in your hart to reioyce, that the good- ,,
liest, and moste curteous gentleman that liueth, could nei- ,,
ther by loue, or force, dispoile you of your greatest vertue & ,,
chastitie. For which (Madame) you are bounde to humble ,,
your selfe before God, acknowledging that it is not done by ,,
your vertue, bicause many women walking in more paine- ,,
ful and more vnpleasaunt trade then you do, haue humilia- ,,
ted and brought low by men farre more vnworthy of loue, ,,
then he which loueth you. And ye ought now to feare more ,,
then euer you did, to vse any semblance & take of amitie, bi- ,,
cause there haue bene many that haue fallē the second time ,,
into daungers & perils, which they haue auoyded at ẏ first. ,,
Remēber (Madame) that loue is blind, who blaseth mens ,,
eyes in such sort, as where a man thinketh the waye moste ,,
sure, ther he is most readie to fal. And I suppose Madame, ,,
that you ought not to seme to be priuie of this chaunce, nei- ,,
ther to him, ne yet to any els, & when he remembreth anye ,,
thing to you, doe make as though you did not vnderstande ,,
his meaning, to auoyde twoo daungers. The one of vaine ,,
glorie for the victorie you haue had, the other to take plea- ,,
sure in remēbring things, that be so pleasaunt to the flesh, ,,
which the most chaste haue had much a do to defend theim ,,
selues frō feling some sparkes, although they seke meanes ,,
to shunne & auoyde them withall their possible power. Mo- ,,
reouer Madame, to thende that he thinke not by suche ha- ,,
zard and enterprise to haue done a thing agreable to your ,,
minde, my counsell is, that by litle and litle, you doe make ,,
your selfe straunge, & vse no more your wonted grace vnto ,,
him, that he may know how much you despise his folly and ,,
consider how grea your goodnesse is, by cōtenting your self ,,
with the victory which God hath geuen you, without see- ,,
king any further vlticn or reuengement. And God graunt ,,
you grace (Madame) to continue that honestie whiche hee ,,

hath

" hath planted in your hart, and by acknowledging that all
" goodnesse procedeth from him, you may loue him and serue
" him better than euer ye did. The Princesse determined to credite the counsayle of her gentlewoman, slepte with so great ioye as the poore gentlemã waked with sorrow. On the morrow the noble man ready to depart, asked for his hoste, vnto whom answere was made that he was so sicke, as he could not abide ẏ light, or endure to heare one speake. Wherof the Prince was sore abashed, and would haue visited him, but that it was tolde him he was a slepe, and was very loth to wake him. Wherefore without bidding him farewell, he departed, taking with him his wife and sister, who hearing the excuse of the Gentleman, that would not see the Prince, nor yet his cõpanie, at their departure, was persuaded that it was he, that had done her al that torment, and durst not shew the markes which she had signed in his face. And although his maister did sende oftimes for him yet came he not to the Court, vntill he was healed of his woundes, except that whiche loue and despite had made in his harte. When he came to the Courte and appeared before his victorious enemie, he blushed for shame of his ouerthrowe. And he which was the stoutest of all the company, was so astonned as many times being in her presence, he could not tell which way to loke or tourne his face. Wherfore she was assured that her suspicion was certain & true, by litle and litle estraunging her self from him, but is was not done so sleightly or politikely, but that he perceiued it well enough, and yet he durst make no semblaũce, for feare of worse aduenture. Notwithstanding he conserued both loue in his hart, and pacience in his minde, for the losse of his Ladies fauour, which he had right well deserued.

¶ The

Amadour and Florinda.

¶ The loue of Amadour and Florinda. VVherein be cõteined mani sleightes and dissimulations together, vvith the renovvmed chastitie of the said Florinda.

The. Liij. Nouell.

IN the Countie of Arande, in Aragon, a Region in Spaine, there was a Ladie whiche in the best time of her youth, continued the widow of the Earle of Arãde, with one sonne, and one daughter, called Florinda. The sayde Lady brought vp her children in all vertue and honestie, meete and conuenable for Lordes and Gentlemen, in such sorte, as her house was renowmed to be one of the most honorable in all the Region of Spaine. Many times she repaired to Tolledo, where the kinge of Spaine helde his Court, and when she came to Sarragosa, which was harde adioyning to the Court, she cõtinued long with ỳ Queene, and in the Courte, where she was had in so good estimatiõ as any Lady might be. Upon a time going towardes the king, according to her custome, which was at Sarragosa, in his Castle of Iafferie, this Lady passed by a village that belonged to the Viceroy of Caralongne, who still continued vppon the frontiers of Parpignon, for the great warres that were betwene the Frenche king and him. Howebeit, at ỳ time peace being concluded, the Viceroy with all his captaines were come to do reuerence to ỳ king. The Viceroy knowing ỳ the Countesse of Arrande did passe through his countrie, went to mete her, as well for auncient amitie, as for the honor he bare vnto her being allied to the kyng. Nowe this Viceroy had in his companye diuers honest Gentlemen, whiche through the frequentation and continuance of the long warres, had gotten suche honour and fame, as euery man that might see them and behold them, did accompt them selues happy.

But

But amonges all other, there was one called Amadour, who although he was but. xviii. or. xix. yeares of age, yet he had such an assured grace and witte so excellent, as he was demed amongs a thousand persones worthy to haue the gouernement of a common wealth, whiche good witte was coupled with maruellous naturall beautie, so that there was no eye, but did content it self eftsones to beholde hym. And this beautie so exquisite, was associated with wonderfull eloquence, as doubtfull to say, whether merited greatest honor, either his grace & beautie, or his excellēt tōgue. But that which brought him into best reputation, was his great hardinesse, whereof the common reporte and brute, was nothing impeached or staied for all his youth. For in so many places he shewed his chiualrie, as not only Spain but Fraunce and Italie, did singularly commend and set forth his vertue: bicause in all the warres wherin he was present, he neuer spared him self for any daūger. And whē his countrie was in peace and quiet, he sought to serue in straunge places, being loued & estemed both of his frendes and enemies. This gentleman for the loue of his Captaine was come into that countrey, where was arriued the Coūtesse of Arande, and in beholding the beautie & good grace of her daughter, which was not then past. xii. yeres of age, he thought that she was the fairest and most vertuous personage that euer he sawe: and that if he could obtaine her good will, he should be so well satisfied as if he had gained all the goods & pleasures of the worlde. And after he had a good whyle viewed her, for all the impossibilitie that reason could deuise to the contrary he determined to loue her, although some occasion of that impossibilitie, might rise through the greatnesse of the house wherof she came, & for want of age which was not able as yet to vnderstande the passions of loue. But against the feare thereof he was armed with good hope, persuading himselfe, that time & pacience would bring happie ende to his trauayle. And from

that

that time gentle Loue whiche without any other occasion than by his own force was entred the harte of Amadour, promised him fauour and helpe by all meanes possible to attaine the same. And to prouide for the greatest difficultie, which was the farre distance of ỹ countrie wher he dwelt, and the small occasion that he had thereby any more to see Florinda, he thought to marry against his determination made with the Ladies of Barselone & Parpignon, amõges whom he was so conuersant by reason of the warres, as he semed rather to be a Cathelan, than a Castillan, although he wer borne by Tollede, of a riche and honourable house, yet bicause he was a yonger brother, he inioyed no great patrimonie or reuenue. Notwithstanding, loue and fortune seing him forsaken of his parentes, determined to accomplishe some notable exployt in him, and gaue him (by meanes of his vertue) that which the lawes of his countrey refused to geue. He had good experience in factes of warre, & was so well beloued of al Princes and Rulers, as he refused many times their goodes, being resolued not to care or esteme the benefites of Fortune. The Countesse of whome I spake, arriued thus at Saragossa, was very well intertained of the king, and of his whole Court. The Gouernour of Catalogne, many times came thither to visite her, whõ Amadour neuer failed to accõpany, for the onely pleasure he had to talke with Florinda. And to make himselfe to be knowen in the company, hee went to Auenturade, whiche was the daughter of an old knight that dwelt hard by the house, whiche from her youth was brought vp with Florinda, in such familiar sorte, as she knewe all the secrets of her harte. Amadour, as well for the honestie that he found in her, as for the liuing of. iii. M. Ducates by the yeare which she should haue with her in mariage, deterined to geue her such intertaignemẽt, as one that was disposed to marry her. Wherunto the gentlewoman did willingly reuline her eare. And bicause he was poore, & the father of ỹ

damosell rich, she thought that her father would never accorde to the mariage, except it were by meanes of the Coũtesse of Arande. Wherupõ she went to madame Florinda, "and saide vnto her, Madame, you see this Castillan gentle- "man, which so oftentimes talketh with me, I doe beleue ỹ "his pretence is to marry me. You do know what a father I "haue, who will neuer geue his consent, if he be not persua- "ded therunto by my Lady your mother and you. Florinda which loued the damosell as her selfe, assured her that shee would take vpon her to bring that matter to passe, with so earnest trauaile as if the case were her own. Then Auentu rade brought Amadour before Florinda, who after he had saluted her, was like to fall in a sowne for ioy, & although he were cõpted the moste eloquent persone of Spaine, yet was he now become mute & dumb before Florinda, wher- at she maruelled much. For albeit she was but. xii. yeares of age, yet she vnderstode that there was no man in Spaine that had a better tongue, or a more conuenable grace than he. And seing that he said nothing vnto her, she spake vnto "him in this wise. The fame which is bruted of you (sir Ama "dour) throughout the whole countrie of Spaine, is such as "it maketh you knowen & esteemed in this company, & giueth "desire and occasion to those that know you, to imploy them- "selues to do you pleasure. Wherefore if there be any thing wherin I may gratifie you, vse me I beseech you, Amadour that gased vpon the beautie of that Lady, was rapt & sur- prised, not well able to render thankes vnto her. And al- though Florinda maruelled to see him without aunswere, yet she imputed it rather to bashfulnesse than to any force of loue, and departed without further talke. Amadour know- ing the vertue which in so tẽder yeares began to appeare in Florinda, saide vnto her whome he purposed to marry. "Doe not maruell, though my speache doe fayle before Ma- "dame Florinda, for the vertues and discretion, hidden in "that yonge personage, did so amase mee, as I wiste not

what

what to saye. But I praye you Auenturade (quod he) who knoweth all her secretes, to tell me, if it be otherwyse possible, but that she hath the harte of all the Lordes & Gentlemen of the Court: for they which know her and doe not loue her, be stones, or beastes. Auenturade whiche then loued Amadour more than all the men in the worlde, and would conceale nothing from him, said vnto him, that Madame Florinda was generally beloued: but for the custome of the countrie, fewe men did speake vnto her. And (quod she) as yet I se none that make any semblance of loue vnto her, but two young Princes of Spaine, which desire to marry her, whereof the one is the sonne of the Infant Fortune, and the other of the Duke of Cadouce, I praye you then (quod Amadour) to tell me which of them as you thinke, doth loue her best. She is so wise said Auenturade that she wil confesse or graunt her loue to none, but to such as her mother pleaseth. But yet so far as we can iudge she fauoureth muche better the sonne of the Infant Fortune, than the Duke of Cadouce. And for that I take you to be a man of good iudgement, this day you shall haue occasiõ to consider the truth. For the sonne of the Infant Fortune is brought vp in Court, & is one of the goodliest & perfectest yong gentlemen in al christendome. And if the mariage do procede, according to our opinion which be her women, he shalbe assured to haue Madame Florinda. And then shalbe ioyned together the goodliest couple in the world. And you must vnderstand, that although they be both very yong, she of. xii. yeares of age, and he of. xv. yet is there three yeares past since their loue first began. And if you be disposed aboue other to obtaine her fauour, mine aduise is, that ye become friend & seruaunt vnto him. Amadour was very ioyfull to heare tell that his Lady loued some man, trusting that in tyme he should wynne the place, not of husbande, but of seruaunt. For he feared nothing at all of her vertue, but a lacke of disposition to loue. And after this communi-

cation, Amadour bent himselfe to haunt the societie of the sonne of the Infant Fortune, whose good will he sone recouered. For all the pastimes whiche the yong Prince loued, Amadour could doe right well. And aboue other, he was very cunning in riding of horsses, and in hãdling al kindes of armes and weapons, and in all other pastimes & games meete for a yong Gentleman. Warres began in Languedoc, and Amadour was forced to retire with the Gouernour, to his great sorrowe and grief. For he had there no meane to returne to the place where he might se Florinda. For which cause he spake to his owne brother, whiche was Steward of the king of Spaines houshold, & declared vnto him what courtesie he had found in the house of the Coũtesse of Arande, & of the damosel Auenturade: praying him that in his absence he would do his indenour, that the mariage might proceede, and that he would obtaine for him ẏ credit and good opinion of the king and Queene, and of al his friendes. The Gentleman which loued his brother, as well by natures instigation, as for his great vertues, promised him his trauaile and industrie to the vttermoste. Which he did in such wise as the old man her father, nowe forgetting other naturall respect, began to marke and beholde the vertues of Amadour, which the Countesse of Arande, and specially faire Florinda, painted and set foorth vnto him, and likewyse the yong Earle of Arande whiche increased in yeares, and therewithall in loue of those that were vertuous, and geuen to honest exercise. And whẽ the mariage was agreed betweene the parentes, the said Steward sent for his brother whilest ẏ truce endured betwene the two kings. About this time, the king of Spain retired to Madric, to auoyd the euil aire that was in many places, where by the aduise of diuers of his counsell, and at the request of the Countesse of Arande, he made a mariage betwene the yong Duchesse the heire of Medina Celi, & the yong Earle of Arande, as wel for the vnion of their house,

as also

as also for the loue he bare to the said Countesse. And this mariage was celebrated in the Castell of Madric, whereunto repaired Aamadour, who so well obtained his suite, as he maried her, of whom he was muche better beloued, than his smal loue toward her deserued, sauing that it was a couerture & meanes for him to frequent the place where his minde and delight incessantly remained. After he was maried, he became well acquainted & familiar in the house of the Countesse, so that he was so conuersaunt amonges the Ladies, as if he had bene a woman. And although hee was then but .xxii. yeares of age, he was so wise and graue, as the Countesse imparted vnto him all her affaires, commaunding her sonne and daughter to intertayne him, and to credite all thinges wherein hee gaue counsell. Hauing wonne this great estimation, he behaued himselfe sowyse and politike, that euen the partie whiche he loued knewe no parte of his affection. But by reason of the loue that Florinda bare to the wife of Amadour, whome shee loued more than any other womã, she was so familiar with him, as shee dissembled no part of her thought, declaring vnto him all the loue that she bare the sonne of the Infant Fortune. And he that desired nothing more than throughly to winne her, ceassed not from cõtinuance of talke, not caring whereof he spake, so that he might hold her with long discourse. Amadour had not after his mariage continued a moneth in that companie, but was constrained to retire to the warres, where hee continued more than twoo yeares, without retourne to see his wife, who still abode in ỹ place where she was brought vp. During the time, Amadour wrote many letters vnto his wife, but the chiefest substãce therof consisteth in cõmendations to Florinda, who for her part failed not to rẽder like vnto him, many times writing some prettie worde or posie with her own hand, in the letter of Auenturade. Which made her husband Amadour diligent many times to write again vnto her, but in al this

doing, Florinda conceiued nothing, but that he loued her, with such like loue, as the brother oweth to ꝑ sister. Many times Amadour went and came, but in the space of fiue yeares, he neuer sawe Florinda twoo monethes together. Notwithstanding, Loue in despite of their distaunce and long absence, ceassed not to increase. And it chaunced that hee made a voyage home to see his wyfe, and founde the Countesse farre frō the Court, bicause the kyng of Spain was done to Vandelousie, and had takē with him the yong Earle of Arande, whiche then began to bere armes. The Countesse was retired to a house of pleasure, whiche shee had vpon the frontiers of Arragon and Nauarre, and was right ioyfull when shee see Amadour, who almoste three yeares had bene absent. He was very wel[illegible]ceiued of euery man, and the Countesse commaunded that he should be vsed and intreated as her owne sonne. During the time that he so iourned with her, she communicated vnto hym all ꝑ affaires of her house, & committed the greatest trust thereof to his discretion, who wan such credite in the house as in all places where he liste, the doores were opened vnto him. Whose wysedome and good behauiour made him to be esteemed, like a Sainct or Aungell. Florinda, for the loue and good wyll she bare vnto his wyfe and hym, made muche of him in all places where she sawe him. And therfore tooke no hede vnto his countenaunce, for that her hart as yet felt no passion, but a certen contentation in her selfe, whē she was in the presence of Amadour, and of any other thing she thought not. Amadour to auoyde the iudgement of them that haue proued the difference of Louers countenaunces, was very ware and circumspect. For when Florinda came to speake vnto hym secretly (lyke one that thought no hurt) the fier hydden in his breste, burned so sore, as he could not staye the blushyng colour of his face, nor the sparkes whiche flewe out of his eyes. And to the intent, that through long frequentation, none might espie the same,

the same, he intertaigned a very fayre Ladye called Paulina, a woman in his tyme accompted so fayre, as fewe men whiche behelde her, coulde escape her bondes. This Ladye Paulina vnderstanding howe Amadour vsed his Loue at Barselone and Parpignon, and how he was beloued of the fayrest Ladies of the Countrie, and aboue all of the Countesse of Palamons, whiche in beautie was pryzed to be the fayrest in all Spayne, and of many other, sayde vnto hym. That shee had great pitie of hym, for that after so manye good Fortunes, he had maried a wyfe so foule and deformed. Amadour vnderstanding well by those woordes, that she had desyre to remedy her owne necessitie, vsed the best maner he coulde deuise, to the intent that in makyng her beleue a lye, he should hyde from her the truthe. But shee subtile and well experimented in Loue, was not contente with talke, but percepuing well that his harte was not satisfied with her Loue, doubted that hee coulde not serue his Lady in secrete wise, and therefore marked hym so nere, as daylye shee had a respecte and watche vnto hys eyes, whiche hee coulde so well dissemble, as shee was able to iudge nothyng, but by darke suspicion, not without great payne and difficultie to the Gentleman, to whome Florinda (ignoraunt of all their malice) dyd resorte many tymes in presence of Paulina, whose demeaner then was so familiar, as he with maruellous payne refrayned his lookes, against his harte and desire. And to auoyde that no inconuenience should ensue, one daye speaking to Florinda, as they were both leaning at a wyndow, sayd these woords.

Madame, I beseche you to tell mee whether it is better to speake or to die. Wherũto Florinda answered readily, saying. I will euer geue councell to my friendes to speake and not to dye. For there be fewe woordes spoken but that they may be amended, but the life lost cannot be recouered. Promise me then said Amadour, that not onely ye will accept those woordes which I will say, but also not to be astonned

cc or abashed, till ye haue heard the end of my tale. To whom
cc she aunswered. Say what it please you, for if you do affray
cc me, none other shall assure me. Then he began to saye vnto
cc her. Madame, I haue not yet bene desirous to disclose vnto
cc you the great affection which I beare you, for twoo causes.
cc The one, bicause I attend by my long seruice, to shewe you
cc the experience thereof. The other, for that I doubted you
cc would thinke a great presumption in me (which am but a
cc poore gentleman) to insinuate my selfe in place whereof I
cc am not worthy. And although I were a Prince as you be,
cc the loyaltie yet of your harte, will not permitte any other,
cc but him which hath already taken possession (the sonne I
cc meane of the Infant Fortune) to vse in talke any matter of
cc loue. But Madame, like as necessitie in time of great warr
cc constraineth men to make hauoke of their owne goodes, &
cc to consume the greene corne, that the enemy take no profit
cc and relefe thereof, euen so doe I hazard to aduaunce the
cc frute, which in time I hope to gather, that your enemies &
cc mine may inioye thereof none aduauntage. Knowe ye Ma-
cc dame, that from the time of your tender yeares, I haue in
cc such wyse dedicated my selfe to your seruice as I ceasse not
cc still to aspire the meanes to achieue your grace & fauour.
cc And for that occasion, I did marry her whome I thought
cc you did loue best. And knowing the loue you beare to the
cc sonne of the Infant Fortune, I haue indeuoured to serue
cc him as you haue sene. And that wherein I thought you dyd
cc delighte, I haue accomplished to the vttermosse of my
cc power. You doe see that I haue gotten the good wil of the
cc Countesse your mother, of the Earle your brother, and of
cc all those that doe beare you good wyll. In suche sorte as
cc in this house I am esteemed, not like a seruaunt, but as a
cc sonne. And all the labour whiche I haue sustayned these
cc fiue yeares past, was for none other cause, but to lyue all
cc the daies of my life with you. And vnderstand you wel, that
cc I am none of those whiche by these meanes doe pretende

to re-

to receiue of you anye profite or pleasure, other than that
which is good and vertuous. I do know that I can neuer
marrie you, and if I could I would not for letting the loue
that you beare vnto him, whom I desire to be your hus-
bande, likewise to loue you in vicious sorte, like them that
hope to recompence their seruice, with dishonour of their
Ladies, I am so farre of from that affection, as I had ra-
ther be dead thã to see you by desert worthy of lesse loue, &
that your vertue shoulde by any meanes be diminished for
any pleasure that might happen vnto mee. I do pretend &
craue for the ende and recompence of my seruice, but one
thing. Which is, that you will continue my loyall & faith-
full maistresse, neuer to withdrawe from me your wonted
grace and fauour, and that you will maintaine mee in that
estate wherein I am. Reposinge your trust and fidelitie in
me more than in any other, making your selfe so assured of
me, as if for your honor or any cause touching your person,
you stand in neede of the life of a Gentleman, the same shal
right willingly be employed at your commaundement. In
like maner all thinges vertuous and honest which euer I
shal attempt, I beseech you to thinke to be done onely for
ỹ loue of you. And if I haue done for Ladies of lesse repu-
tacion than you be, any thing worthy of regard, be assured
that for such a maistresse as you be, my enterprises shal in-
crease in such sort, as the things which I found difficult &
impossible, shall be easelie for me to accõplishe. But if you
do not accept mee to be wholy yours, I determine to giue
ouer armes, and to renounce valiaunce, because it hath not
succoured me in necessitie. Wherfore Madame, I humblie
beseech you that my iust request may not be refused, sith w
your honour and conscience you cannot well denie ỹ same.
The yong Lady hearing this vnaccustomed sute, began to
chaunge her colour, and to caste downe her eyes like an a-
mased woman, not withstandinge, being wyse and discrete
she said vnto him. If (Amadour) your request vnto me be

"none other than you pretende, wherefore haue you discour-
"sed this long Oration? I am afraid lest vnder this honeste
"pretence there lurketh some hidden malice to deceiue the
"ignorance of my youth, wherby I am wrapt in great per-
"plexitie how to make you aunswere. For to refuse the ho-
"neste amitie which you haue offered, I shall doe contrary to
"that I haue done hitherto, for I haue reposed in you more
"trust than in any liuing creature. My conscience or mine
"honour cannot gainesay your demaunde, nor the loue that
"I beare to the sonne of the Infãt Fortune, which is grou-
"ded vpon fayth of mariage. Where you say that you pre-
"tende nothinge but that is good and vertuous, I cãnot tell
"what thing should let me to make you aunswere according
"to your requeste, but a feare that I conceiue in hart, foũded
"vpon the small occasion that you haue to vse that speache,
"for if you haue alreadye what you demaunde, what doth
"constraine you to speake so affectuouslie? Amadour that
"was not without an aunsweare, saide vnto her. Madame
"you speake very wisely, and you do me so much honour, for
"the confidence and truste which according to your sayinge
"you do repose in me, as if I doe not content my selfe with
"such a benefite, I were the vnworthiest man aliue. But vn-
"derstande Madame, that he which goeth about to builde a
"perpetual mansion, ought to haue regard to a sure & firme
"foundacion. Wherfore I which desire perpetually to re-
"maine your seruaunte, doe seeke not onely the meanes to
"kepe my selfe neare about you, but also to foresee that none
"doe vnderstãd the great affection that I do beare you. For
"although my mind be so vertuous and honest, as the same
"may disclose it selfe before the whole worlde, yet there bee
"some so ignorant and vnskilfull of louers harts, as manye
"times will iudge contrary to trouth, wherof proceedeth so
"ill brute & report, as if the effectes were wicked. The cause
"which hath made me so bold to say & declare vnto you thus

much

much, is the ſuſpicion that Paulina hath conceyued, for ꝑ
I cannot loue her. Who doth nothing els but marke and
eſpie my countenaunce in euerye place, and when you vſe
your familiar talke with me before her, I am ſo afraide to
ſhewe any ſigne whereby ſhee maye grounde or verifie her
iudgemente, that I fall into that inconuenience, which I
would willingly auoyde. Wherefore I haue thought good
to beſeech you (before her and thoſe which you do know to
be ſo malicious) to refraine from talkinge with mee ſo ſo-
dainlye, for I had rather dye, than anye liuinge creature
ſhould haue miſtruſt thereof. And were it not for the loue
which I beare vnto your honour, I had not yet declared
the ſame vnto you, for I do hold my ſelfe ſufficiente happy
and content of the onely loue and affiaunce that you put in
me, crauing nought els butt the continuance of the ſame.
Florinda wel ſatiſfyed with this aunſwere, began to feele
in parte a further thing to growe than euer ſhe did before.
And hearing the honeſt reaſons alleaged by him, ſaid, that
her honeſtie and vertue ſhoulde make aunſweare for her,
and therewithall aſſented to his demaunde. Whereof
whether Amadour were ioyful, Louers neede not doubt.
But Florinda credited more his counſell, than he woulde
haue had her. For ſhee being fearefull and timerous, not
ouely before Paulina, but in all other places, vſed farre o-
ther countenaunce than ſhe was wont to do. And in this a-
lienation of her former familiarity, ſhe miſliked the conuer
ſatiõ that Amadour had with Paulina, whoſe beauty was
ſuch, that ſhee could not otherwiſe beleeue, but ꝑ hee loued
her. And Florinda to paſſe ouer her heauineſſe, daily vſed
the company of Auenturade, that began marueloully to be
ialous betweene her huſbande and Paulina, whereof ſhee
made complaint many times to Florinda, who comforted
her ſo well as ſhee coulde, like one attached with the ſame
diſeaſe. Amadour coniecturinge by the countenaunce of
Florinda, that not onely ſhee was eſtraunged from hym

through

through his former aduertisement, but also that there was some other displeasure conceyued, comming vpon a time, "from euēsong out of the Monasterie, he sayd vnto her. Ma- "dame, what countenaunce do you make me? Such as I "thincke doth please you best, answered Florinda. Then A- madour suspectīg a matter, to know whether it were true, "began to saye. Madame, I haue so vsed Paulina, as she be- "ginneth to giue ouer her opiniō of you. She answered him. "Ye cannot do a better thing either for your selfe or for me. "For in doing your selfe a pleasure, you do honour vnto me. Amadour iudged by these words that she thought he toke pleasure to talke of Paulina, wherewith he became so des- perate, as hee could not forbeare to say vnto her in anger: "Madame, you begin very sone to torment your seruaunte. "There was neuer paine more greeuous vnto mee, than to "be forced to speake to her whom I loue not. And sithens al "that which I do for your seruice is taken in ill part, I wil "neuer speake againe vnto her, whatsoeuer happen. And to "dissemble mine anger and contentacion, I wil addresse my "selfe to some place hereby, till your fācie be ouer past. But "I hope I shall receiue newes from my Captaine, to re- "tourne to the warres, where I will so longe continue, as "you shall well knowe, that nothing els but you alone doth force me to tarrie here. And in saying so, without attēding for her aunswere, hee incontinently departed, and shee re- mayned so sad and pensife as any woman coulde be. And Loue began to shewe his greate force in such wyse, as shee knowing her wrong incessantly wrote to Amadour, pray- ing him to retourne home, which he did within few dayes after that his choler was past. And to tell you what busi- nesse there was, to interrupte and breake the ialousie con- ceiued, it were superfluous. But in the ende, he wanne the field, so that she promised him, not onely to beleeue that he loued not Paulina, but also helde her selfe assured that it should be to him a martirdome intollerable, to speake vn-

to her

to her, or any other, except it were to do her seruice. After that Loue had banquished this presente suspicion, and that the two Louers began to take more pleasure in their mutuall talke than euer they did before. Newes came that ỳ king of Spaine was about to addres his Armie to Saulse, wherfore he ỳ was wont to be there with the first, was not like now to fayle to augment his honour. But true it is, ỳ his griefe was presently more greate, than at other times before, aswell for losinge the pleasure which he enioyed, as for feare to finde some mutacion and chaunge at his returne, because he saw Florinda pursued by great Princes and Lords, and alreadye come to the age of xv. yeares, and thought that if she were maried in his absence, he should neuer haue occasion to see her againe, except the Countesse of Arande would apponte his wyfe to waite vppon her. For accomplishment wherof he made such frends, as the Cõtesse & Florinda promised him, that into what soeuer place she were maried his wyfe Auenturade should attende vpõ her. And although it was in questiõ that Florinda should be maried into Portugall, yet determined that his wyfe should neuer forsake her. And vppon this assuraunce, not without vnspeakeable sorow, Amadour departed and left his wyfe with the Countesse. When Florinda was alone, her seruaunt departed, shee gaue her selfe to all vertuous life, hopinge thereby to atteine the fame of a most perfecte Lady, and to be counted worthie the interteignemente of such a seruaunt. Amadour arriued at Barsalone, was banqueted and intertayned of the Ladies, after the old maner, but they finding him so altered and chaũged, thought that Mariage could neuer haue had such power vppon man, as it had ouer him. For he seemed then to disdaine, what somtime he greatly desired, and specially the Countesse of Palamons, whom he derely loued, could deuise by no meanes to make him go alone home to his lodging. Amadour tarried at Barsalone so little while as hee coulde, because hee

might

mighte not come late to the place where hee purposed to winne and atchive honour. And being arriued at Saulse, great and cruell warres were comenced betwene the two kinges, which I purpose not to recite, ne yet the noble enterpzises done by Amadour, whose fame was bzuted aboue the rest of his companions. The duke of Nagyers, arriuinge at Parpignon, had charge of two thousand men, & prayed Amadour to be his Lieuetenaunte, who with that band serued so well, as no crie was hard in all the skirmishes, other than of Nagyers. It chaunced that the king of Thunis, which of long time had warre with ꝑ spaniarts, vnderstandinge howe the kinges of Spaine, and Fraunce were together by the eares at Parpignon and Narbone, thought that in better time he could not anoye the king of Spaine. Wherefoze he sent a great nomber of Foists and other vessels, to robbe & spoile those frontiers which were ill guarded and kept. They of Barsalone seing a nomber of Shippes passe befoze the Towne, aduertised the king that was at Saulse, who immediatly sent the Duke of Nagyers to Palamons. And when the shippes discried that the place was well guarded, they made as though they would passe further. But about midnight they retourned, and landed so many men, that the Duke of of Nagyers was taken pzisoner. Adamour which was very vigilãt, hearig allarme, pzesently assembled so many men as he could, and defended himself so wel, as ꝑ foze of his enemies a long time could not hurt him. But in thende knowing that the Duke of Nagyers was taken pzisoner, and that the Turks were determined to burne the Citie of Palamons, and then to fier the house which he strongly had fozced againste them, hee thought it better to render himself, than to be cause of the losse of so many good souldiozs as were vnder his gouernmente, & also by putting himselfe to raunsome, he hoped in time to come to see Florinda. Then he submitted himselfe to a Turke called Derlyn, ꝑ gouernoz of the king of Thu-

nis,

nis, who conueyed him home to his maister, where he was well entertaigned, & better kept. For they thought ỳ hauing him in their hands, they had gotten the only Achilles of Spaine. In this sort Amadour cõtinued almost ỳ space of two yeares, in the seruice of ỳ king of Thunis. Newes came into Spaine of this ouerthrow, wherof ỳ frends of ỳ Duke of Nagyers, were very sorowfull. But they ỳ loued the honor of their countrie, thoughte Amadour to bee the greatest losse, the bruite wherof was noysed in the house of the Countesse of Arande, wher at ỳ time the poore gentlewoman Auenturade lay very sore sicke. The Cõtesse suspecting very much the affection ỳ Amadour bare vnto her daughter, which he suffered and dissembled for his vertues sake, called her daughter aside, & told her ỳ pitious newes. Florinda which could well dissemble said vnto her, that it was a great losse for al their house, but specially she pitied the state of his poore wife, because at that time she was so sore sicke. But seing her mother weepe so bitterly, she let fal some teares to keepe her cõpany, least through to much dissimulacion, her loue might be discouered. After ỳ time, the Cõtesse spake to her many times, but she could neuer perceiue by her countenance, any cause of certaine suspicion. I wil leaue to speake of ỳ voyages, ỳ prayers, ỳ supplications & fastings, which Florinda did ordinarily make for the safegard & prosperitie of Amadour, who incontinently so sone as he was arriued at Thunis, sent newes to his frẽds, & by a sure messenger aduertized Florinda, ỳ he was in good health & hope to retourne. Which newes was to the poore Lady, ỳ only meanes to releue & ease her sorow. And doubt ye not, but ỳ meanes of writing, was vtterly debarred frõ Amadour, wherof Florinda acquited her self so diligently, as by her letters & epistles, he receiued great cõsolatiõ & cõfort. The Cõtesse of Arãde receiued cõmaundemẽt frõ the king, to repaire to Sarragosa, where bee ỳ time was arriued. And there she found ỳ yõg Duke of Cardõne

making sute.

sute to the king and Queene, for mariage of her daughter. The Countesse vnwilling to disobey the king, agreed, thinkinge that her daughter being very yonge, had none other affection, but that which already had taken sure impression. When the accorde was concluded, shee sayde vnto her daughter, that she had chosen that matche, as best worthy to ioyne with her person. Her daughter considering howe in a thing already done it was to late to take counsell, said vnto her, that God was to be praised in all things. And seing her mother so far alienated frō her intent, she thought it better to shew her selfe obedient, than to take pitie vpon herselfe. And to comfort her in that sorowe, she vnderstode that the infant Fortune was at the point of death. But before her mother or any other persō, she shewed not so much as one signe or token therof, straying her griefe so much, as the teares by force retiringe to her harte, did cause the bloud to issue forth at her Nose, in such abundance, as her life was in present daunger. And to recouer her of that disease, shee was maried vnto him, for whose sake shee had rather haue chaunged her life for present death. After the mariage, Florinda went with her husbande into the Duchy of Cardonne, and in her company Aduēturade, to whō she secretly made complaint, as wel of her mothers rigor, as also of the sorow she concepued for the losse of the sonne of the Infant Fortune But of her griefe for Amadour, she spake no worde, but by way of comforting her. This yong Lady thē determined to haue God & the respect of her honoure before her eies, and so wel to dissemble her griefes, as none at any time should perceiue that shee misliked her husband. In this sort Florinda passed long time, in a life no lesse pleasaunt than death. The report whereof she sent to her good seruaūt Amadour, who vnderstanding her great loue, & wel disposed hart, and the loue shee bare to the Infant Fortune, thought that it was impossible she could liue long, and lamented her state more than his owne. This

griefe

griefe augmented his paine of imprisonmente, wishinge to haue remayned a slaue all the dayes of his life, so that Florinda had had a husbande respondent to her desire, forgettinge his owne griefe by feeling that his frende did suffer. And because he vnderstode by a secret freind which he had gotten in the Court of the king of Thunis, ꝑ the king was minded to offer him ꝑ gibbet, or els to make him renounce his fayth, for the desire hee had to retaine him still, and to make him a good Turke, he behaued himself so well, wyth him that toke him prisoner, that he gaue him leaue to depart vpon his fayth, taxing him at so greate raunsome, as he thought a man of so small substance was neuer able to pay. And so without speaking to the king his Maister, hee let him go vpon his fayth. After he had shewed himselfe at the Court of the king of Spaine, he departed incõtinently to his frends to get his raunsome, & went straight to Barsalone, whether the yong Duke of Cardonne, his mother, & Florinda, was gone aboute certaine affaires. Auẽturade so sone as she heard tell that her husband was come, declared the same to Florinda, who seemed for her sake greatly to reioyce therat. But fearing that the desire she had to see him would make her chaunge countenannce, and that they which knew not the cause therof, would conceiue some ill opinion, she stode still at a window to see him come a far of. And so sone as she espied him, shee went downe a paire of darke staires that none mighte perceiue her chaunge of colour. When she had imbraced Amadour, shee led him into her chamber, and from thence to her mother in law, which had neuer seene him before. He had not continued there two dayes, but he was so well beloued, as he was before in the house of the Countesse of Arande. I will omitte the words and talke betwene Florinda and Amadour, and the complaintes which he made vnto her of his ill aduenture, that hee had sustayned in his absence. And after manye teares vttered by her, for the heauines she had taken, aswel

for the mariage against her wil, as for the losse of him ẏ she loued so dearely, & for him whom she thoughte neuer to see againe, shee determined to take her consolation in the loue and fidelitie ẏ she bare to Amadour, which notwithstanding she durst not open & declare. But he ẏ much doubted therof, lost no occasion and time to let her know & vnderstande the great loue he bare her. And euen vppon the point that she was ready to receiue him, not as a seruaunt, but for her assured & perfect frend, there chaunced a maruellous Fortune. For the king for certaine matters of importance, incontinently sent forth Amadour, wherof his wyfe conceyued such sorrow, as hearing those newes, she sowned & fell from the stayres where she stode, wherewith she hurte herselfe so sore, as neuer after she reuiued. Florinda (that by ẏ death of her had lost all comfort) made such sorrow, as one that was destitute of good frends and kinsfolke, but Amadour toke the same in worst part. For he had not onely lost one of the most honest women that euer was, but also the meanes that he should neuer after that time haue occasion, to visit Florinda. For which cause he fell into such sickness, as he was like to haue died sodainly. The old Duchesse of Cardonne, incessantly did visite him, & alledged many philosophical reasons to make him paciẽtly to receiue death, but it anayled nothing. For if death of thone side did torment him, Loue on ẏ other, did augment his martirdome. Amadour seing that his wyfe was buried, & that the king had sent for him, (hauing no occasion of lõger abode there) he entred into such dispaire, as hee seemed to be oute of his wittes. Florinda which in comforting him was almost desolate, remayned by him one whole afternone, vsinge very honest and discrete talke vnto him, thinking thereby to diminishe the greatnesse of his sorrowe, & assured him ẏ shee would deuise wayes how he might visite her more oft thã he did thinke for. And because he must depart ẏ next morning, & was so feeble and weake ẏ he could not rise from

his

his bed, he intreated her to come & se him at night after euery man was retired to bed. Which she promised to doe, not knowing ẏ Loues extremety was voyd of reason. And he that saw no hope euer after that time to see her againe, whō so lōg time he had serued: & of whom he had neuer receyued other interteignmēt than ẏ you haue heard, was so beaten & ouercom ẅ loue long dissembled, & of the despaire he conceiued, that (all meanes to vse her company taken a^way) he purposed to play double or quit, either to lose her, or to win her fauour for euer, & to pay himself at one instāt, the reward which he thought he had right wel deserued. Wherfore he caused the curtaines of his bed to be drawē, that they which came into the chāber might not see him, cōplayning of sickness more than he was wont to do, wherby they of the house thought he would not haue liued 24. houres. After euery one of ẏ house had visited him at night Florinda (at the special request of her husband) came to see him, thinking for his cōfort, to vtter vnto him her affectiō, and how aboue all other she would loue him, so far as her honor did permit. And sitting downe in a chayre at the beds head, she began to cōfort him, & therẅal powred out many teares. Amadour seing her sorowful and pensife, thought ẏ in her great torment he might easely attaine ẏ effect of his intēt: And lifted himself vp in his bed, which Florinda perceyuing, she would haue staied him, because she thought ẏ through weakenes he was not able to moue. And kneeling vpon his knees, he said vnto her. Must I for euermore forgo your sight mine owne deare Lady? And in saying so he fel downe betwene her armes like one ẏ fainted for lack of strength. Then poore Florinda imbraced him, & of long time held him vp, doing all ẏ was possible for his comfort. But ẏ medecine she gaue him to ease his sorow, did rather increase the same more strong. For in kayning himself half dead, without speaking any word, he attēpted ẏ which the honor of womānhode doth defend. Whē Florinda perceiued

his ill intent, she could scarce beleue the same, considering his honest requests made before time, & therfore asked him what it was ẏ he desired. But Amadour fearing to heare her aunswere which he knew well could be none other but chaste & vertuous, wout further talke, pursued his purpose so earnestly as he could, wherw Florinda beinge astonned did suspect he had bin out of his wittes rather than beleue that he wente about her dishonor. Wherefore with loude voice she called a Gentlemã ẏ was in the chamber. Which Amadour hearing, vtterly in dispaire, threw himself so sodenly into his bed, as the gentleman thought he had beene dead. Florinda rising out of the chaire, saide vnto him. Goe quickly & fetch some good vineger. Which the Gentlemã did. Then Florinda began to say vnto him. Amadour what follie hath inchaunted your wisedome? And what is that which you would haue done vnto me? Amadour ẏ through the force of loue had lost al reason, said vnto her. Doth my long seruice merite a recõpence of such cruelty? And wher is the honesty then said Florinda, which so many times you haue preached vnto me? Ah Madame said Amadour. I beleue it is impossible your selfe more faithfully to loue your owne honour than I do. For when you were vnmaried, I could so wel subdue my harte and affection, as you did neuer vnderstand my will and desire. And now ẏ you be maried, to the intente your honour may reste in couerte, what wrong do I to aske that which is mine owne? For by force of loue I haue won you. He that first enioyed your harte, hath so ill followed the victorie of your bodye, as hee hath well deserued to lose altogether. He that possesseth your body, is not worthy to haue your hart, wherefore your body is none of his, ne yet he hath no title in the same. But I Madame, these fiue or sixe yeares haue sustayned suche paynes and trauaile for your sake, as you are not ignoraunte but to me appertayneth both your body and harte, for whose sake I haue vtterlye forgotten mine owne.

And

And if you can finde in your hart to defende mee from my right, doubt ye not but they which haue proued the forces of Loue, wil lay the blame on you, which hath in this sort robbed me from my libertie, and with your heauenly graces hath obscured my sences, that not knowing hereafter what to do, I am constrayned to go without hope for euer to see you againe. Notwithstanding warrante your selfe, that in what place so euer I am, you shall still possesse my harte, which shall continue yours for euer, be I vppon the lande or water, or betweene the hands of my moste cruell enemies. But if I could recouer before my departure, that surety of you which the greatnesse of my loue deserueth, I shall be strong enough patiently to beare the griefes of my long absence. And if it please you not to graũt me this request, you shal shortly heare tell that your rigor hath rẽdred vnto me a most vnhappy and cruel death. Florinda no lesse astonned than sorie, to heare such words proceede frõ him, of whom she neuer had any such suspicion weepinge saide vnto him. Alas Amadour, is this the meaning of those vertuous words which sithens the beginning of my youth ye haue vttered vnto me? Is this the honor of the conscience, which you haue many times perswaded me rather to die than lose the same? Haue you forgottẽ the good examples recited vnto me of vertuous dames that haue resisted foolish loue? And is this the maner of your contempt of Ladies that were foolish and vaine, whose light behauiour you dissembled so much to abhorre? I cannot beleeue Amadour that you are driuen into such madnes & furie, as the feare of GOD, your owne conscience, & the estimaciõ of mine honor, should be altogether out of your minde and memorie. But if it so be as you say, I do praise the goodnes of God, which hath preuented the mishap that nowe I am fallen into, in shewing me by your words, the hart which I did not know. For hauing lost the sonne of the inkãt Fortune, who not onely is maried into another place, but also

"loued another, & I now maried to him, which I cãnot loue,
"I thought & determined wholly, w̃ al mine hart & affectiõ
"to loue you, founding ẏ same vpon ẏ vertue which I knew
"to be in you, which loue by your meanes onelye I haue cõ-
"ceiued, & therfore did more esteeme my honor & conscience,
"than the prize of mine owne like. Vppon assurance of this
"stone of honestie I am com hither thinking to build a most
"sure foundacion. But (Amadour) in one momẽt thou haste
"declared, how in place of a pure foundacion, thy buildinge
"is reared vpon a light sand, & vncõstant ground, or els vpõ
"a filthy and foule quamire. And where I began to erect a
"good part of the lodgings of this building vpon the groũd
"of the fidelitie, hoping to dwel there for euer, sodenly thou
"hast ouerthrowen the whole plot. Wherfore, you must im-
"mediatly breake in sõder the hope & credit ẏ euermore you
"haue found in me, & determine ẏ in what place soeuer I be,
"not to pursue me either by worde or countenaunce. And da
"not thinke, ẏ I can or will at anye time hereafter chaunge
"this mine opiniõ, reciting this my last A dieu w̃ great sor-
"row & griefe. But if I had made an othe of this perfect a-
"mitie & loue, I know mine harte would haue died vpõ this
"breach, although the astonishment in that I am deceiued,
"is so great, as I am wel assured it will make my life either
"short or sorowfull. And therefore I bid you farewel & that
for euer. I purpose not to tel you ẏ sorow which Amadour
felt by hearing those words. Because it is impossible not
only to write them, but also to thincke them, except it be of
such as haue had experience of the like. And seing ẏ vppon
this cruel conclusion she would haue gone away, he caught
her by the arme, knowing well ẏ if he did not remoue ẏ ill
opinion, which by his owne occasion she had conceyued, hee
should lose her for euer. Wherfore he said vnto her w̃ a ve-
"ry faint chere. Madame, al the dayes of my life I haue des-
"red to loue a womã endued with honestie & vertue. And be-
"cause I haue found so few, I would faine haue tried whe-

ther

ther your perſō had bin worthy of eſtimacion & loue, wher- »
of now I am wel aſſured, & hūblie do praiſe God therefore, »
becauſe mine hart is addreſſed to ſuch perfectiō: beſeching »
you to pardon this fond & bold attēpt, ſith you ſee ẏ the end »
doth redound to your owne honor & contentaciō. Florinda,
which began to know by him the malice of other men, like
as ſhe was hard to beleue the euill wher it was, euen ſo ſhe
was more difficile to credite the good where it was not, &
ſaid vnto him I pray to God your words be true. Yet am I
not ſo ignorant but ẏ the ſtate of mariage wherein I am, »
hath made me euidently to know ẏ ſtrong paſſion of blind »
loue which hath forced you vnto this follie. For if God had »
loſed my hāde, I am wel aſſured you would not haue plu- »
ked backe ẏ bridle. They ẏ attēpt to ſeeke after vertue, do »
not take the way ẏ you do tread. But this is ſufficient if I »
haue lightly beleeued any honeſtie in you, it is time for me »
now to know ẏ truth, ẏ I may rid my ſelf frō you. And in »
ſaying ſo, Florinda went out of the chāber, & all the nighte
long, ſhe neuer left weeping, feeling ſuch great griefe in ẏ
alteraciō, as her hart had much to do, to ſuſtaine ẏ aſſaults
of ſorrow ẏ loue had made. For although reaſon thoughte
neuer to loue him againe, yet the hart which is not ſubiect
to our fācie, would not accord to ẏ crueltie. For which cō-
ſideracion, ſhe loued him no leſſe than ſhe was wont to do,
and knowing ẏ loue was the cauſe of ẏ fault, ſhe purpoſed
for ſatiſfactiō of Loue, to loue him w̄ all her hart, & yet for
the obedience & fealtie due to her honor, ſhe thought neuer
to make any ſemblance In ẏ morning Amadour departed
in this ſort, troubled as you haue harde, neuertheleſſe his
couragious heart, entred not in diſpaire, but renued a freſh
hope once againe to ſee Florinda, & to win her fauour. Thē
he toke his iourney towards the Court of Spaine (which
was at Tolledo) taking his way by ẏ Cōtēſſe of Arande,
wher late in an euening he arriued, & found ẏ Cōtēſſe ve-
rye ſicke for the abſence of her daughter Florinda. When

shee saw Amadour, shee kissed & imbraced him, as if he had beene her owne child, aswel for the loue she bare vnto him, as for the like which she doubted that he bare to Florinda, of whom very earnestly she inquired for newes, who tolde her the best that he could deuise, but not the whole truth, & confessed vnto her the loue betweene Florinda and him, (which Florinda had still conceiled & kept secrete) praying her ayde to bring him againe into her fauour: and so ỳ next morning hee departed. And after he had done his businesse with the Queene, he repayred to the warres, so sadde and chaunged in all his condicions, as the Ladies, Captaynes and all they ỳ were wonte to keepe him companie, did not know him. His apparell was all blacke, mourning for the death of his wife, wherby he couered ỳ sorrow which was hid in his hart. In this wyse Amadour passed three or 4. peres before he returned to the Court. And the Countesse of Arande which heard tell that Florinda was so much altered, as it would haue moued any hart to behold her, sent for her, hoping that she would haue come, but her expectacion was frustrate, for when Florinda vnderstode ỳ Amadour had told her mother the good will betweene them, & that her mother being so wise and vertuous giuing credite to Amadour, did beleue his report, she was in marueilous perplexitie, because of the one side she saw that her mother did esteeme him so well, & on the other side if she declared vnto her the truth, Amadour woulde cõceiue displeasure. Which thing she had rather die than to do: wherefore she thought herself strong inough to chastise him of his folly, wout helpe of frends. Againe, she perceyued that by dissẽbling the euil which she knew by him, she should be cõstrained by her mother & her frẽds, to speake & beare him good countenaunce: wherby she feared he would be the more encoraged. But seing ỳ he was far of, she passed ỳ lesse of the matter. And when the Coũtesse her mother did cõmaũde her, she wrote letters vnto him, but they were such as he might

might wel gather ẏ they were writtē rather vpō obediēce, than of good wil, ẏ reading wherof bred sorrow vnto him in place of ẏ ioye he was wonte to conceiue in her former wrytings. Within the terme of two or three yeres, after he had done so many noble enterprises as al ẏ paper of Spain could not containe them, he deuised a new inuention, not to wynne and recouer the harte of Florinda (for he demed the same quite lost) but to haue the victorie ouer his enemy, sithens she had vsed him in that sorte, & reiecting al reason & specially feare of death, into the hazarde wherof he hasted himselfe, he cōcluded and determined his enterprise in such sorte, as for his behauiour towardes the Gouernour, hee was deputed and sent by him to treate with the king of certaine exploytes to be done at Locates, sparing not to impart his message to the Countesse of Arande, before he told the same to the king, to vse her good aduise therein. And so came in poste straight into the Countie of Aranda, where he had intelligence in what place Florinda remained, and secretly sent to the Countesse one of his frendes to tell her of his comming, and to pray her to keepe it close, and that he might speake with her that night in secrete wise that no man might perceiue. The Countesse very ioyfull of his cō-ming, tolde it to Florinda, and sent her into her husbandes chamber, that she might be ready when she should send for her after eche man was gone to bed. Florinda whiche was not yet well boldened by reason of her former feare, making a good face of the matter to her mother, withdrewe her selfe into an oratorie or chappell, to recommēd her self to God, praying him to defend her hart frō al wicked affection, & therwithal cōsidered how often Amadour had prayse-d her beautie, which was not impaired or diminished, although she had bene sicke of long time before. Wherefore thinking it better to doe iniurie to her beautie by defacing it, than to suffer the harte of so honest a personage by meanes thereof wickedly to be inflamed, shee tooke vp a stone

which

whiche was within the Chappell, and gaue her selfe so great a blowe on the face, that her mouthe, eyes and nose, were altogether deformed. And to thintent no man might suspect what she had done, when the Countesse sent for her in going out of the Chappell, she fell downe vppon a great stone, and therewithall cried out so loude, as the Countesse came in & founde her in pitious state, who incontinently dressing her face, and binding it vp with clothes, conueyed her into her chamber, and prayed her to goe into her closet to entertaigne Amadour, tyll she were weary of his companie. Whiche she did, thinkyng that there had bene some body with hym But finding him alone, and the doore shut vpon her: Amadour was not so well pleased as shee was discontented. Who nowe thought eyther with loue or force to get that, whiche hee had so long tyme desyred. And after he had spoken a fewe woordes vnto her, & found her in that mynde hee lefte her, and that to dye for it shee woulde not chaunge her opinion, desperatly he sayde vnto her. By God Madame, the fruite of my labour, shall not be thus taken from me, for scruples and doubtes. And sithe that Loue, pacience, and humble desires, can not preuayle, I will not spare by force to get that, which except I haue it will be the meanes of mine ouerthrowe. When Florinda sawe his face and eyes so altered, and that the fairest die & colour of ỹ woꝛld, was become so red as fier, with his most pleasaunt and amiable loke transformed into shorrible hew and furious, & therewithall discried the very hote burning fier, to sparkle within his harte & face: and how in that fury with one of his strong fistes he griped her delicate & tender hands. And on the other side shee seeing all her defences to fayle her, and that her feete & handes were caught in suche captiuitie as she could neither run away nor yet defend her selfe: knewe none other remedie, but to proue if he had yet remaining in him any griftes of the former loue, that for ỹ honour therof he might forget his crueltie. Wherefore she

sayd

layd vnto him Amadour if now you doe accompt me for an enemy, I beseech you for the honestie of the loue which at other times I haue found planted in your harte, to geue me leaue to speake before you doe torment me. And when shee saw him recline his eare, she pursued her talk in this wyse. Alas Amadour, what cause haue you to seke after ỳ thing wherof you shall receiue no contentation, inflicting vppon me such displeasure as there can be no greater? You haue many times proued my wil and affection in the time of my youthfull dayes, and of my beautie farre more excellent than it is now, at what tyme your passion might better be borne with and excused, than nowe. In such wyse as I am nowe amased to see that you haue the harte to torment me at that age and great debilitie wherewith I am affected. I am assured that you doubt not but that my wyl and mind is such as it was wont to be. Wherefore you can not obtayne your demaunde but by force. And if you sawe howe my face is arrayed, you would forget the pleasure whiche once you conceiued in me, and by no meanes would forcibly approche nere vnto me. And if there be lefte in you yet any remnantes of loue, it is impossible but that pitie may banquiche your furie. And to that pitie and honestie wherof once I had experience in you, I do make my plaint, & of ỳ same I do demaund grace and pardon, to thintent that according to theffect of your wonted persuasiõ and good aduise, you may suffer me to line in ỳ peace & honestie, which I haue determined and vowed during life. And if the loue which you haue borne me be conuerted into hatred, & that more for reuengement than affection, you doe purpose to make me the moste vnhappy of the world, I assure you, you shall not be able to bring your intent to passe, besides that you shall constrayne me against my determination, to vtter and reueale your villany and disordinate appetite towardes her, which did repose in you an incredible affiance: by discouering whereof, thinke verely, that your lyfe cannot

" not continue without perill. Amadour breaking her talke
sayde vnto her. If I die for it, I will presently be acquieted
" of my torment. But the deformitie of your face (whiche I
" thinke was done by you of set purpose) shall not let me to
" accomplishe my will. For since I can get nothing of you
" but the bones and carcasse, I will holde them so fast as I
" can. And when Florinda sawe that prayers, reason, nor
teares could not auayle, but that with crueltie he woulde
nedes followe his villanous desire, which she had hetherto
still auoided by force of resistance, she did helpe her selfe so
long, till she feared the losse of her breath, and with a hea-
uy and piteous voice she called her mother so loude as shee
could crie, who hearing her daughter crie and cal with ru-
full voyce, began greatly to feare the thing that was true.
Wherfore she ran so fast as she could into the warderobe.
Amadour not being so nere death as he saide he was, left
of his holde in suche good time, as the Lady opening her
closet, founde him at the doze, and Florinda farre enough
" from him. The Countesse demaunded of him saying Ama-
" dour what is the matter? Tell me the truthe. Who like
one that was neuer vnprouided of excuse, with his face pa-
le and wanne, and his breath almoste spent, sayde vnto her.
" Alas Madame, in what plight is my Lady Florinda? I
" was neuer in all my life in that amase wherin I am now.
" For as I sayd vnto you, I had thought that I had inioyed
" part of her good will, but nowe I know right well that I
" haue none at all. I thinke Madame, that sithe the time she
" was brought vp with you, shee was neuer lesse wise & ver-
" tuous than shee is nowe, but farre more daungerous and
" squeimishe in speaking and talking then behoueth, and eue
" nowe I would haue loked vpon her, but she would not suf-
" fer me. And when I viewed her countenaunce, thinking ỹ
" it had bene some dreame or vision, I desired to kisse her
" hande, according to the fashion of the countrey, which shee
" vterly refused. True it is Madame, I haue offended her,

wherof

wherof I craue pardon of you, but it chaunced only for that
I toke her by the hand, which I did in a maner by force, &
kissed the same demaunding of her no other pleasure. But
the like one (as I suppose) that hath sworne my death, made
an outcry for you (as you haue heard) for what cause I
know not, except that shee were afraide I would haue forced some other thing. Notwithstanding Madame, whatsoeuer the matter be, I protest vnto you the wrong is myne,
and albeit that she ought to loue al your honest seruaunts,
yet Fortune so willeth, as I alone, the moste affectioned of
them all, is clerely exēpt out of her fauour. And yet I purpose still to continue towardes you and her, the same man
I came hither, beseching the continuaunce of your good
grace and fauour, sithens that without desert I haue loste
hers. The Countesse which partely beleued, and partelye
mistrusted his talke, went vnto her daughter, and demaūded wherfore she cried out so loud. Florinda answered that
she was afrayde. And albeit the Countesse subtilly asked
her of many things, yet Florinda would neuer make other
answere, for ẏ hauing escaped the handes of her enemy, she
thought it punishement enough for him to lose his labour.
After that the Countesse had of long tyme cōmuned with
Amadour, she lefte him yet once againe to enter in talke
with Florinda before her, to see what countenaunce shee
would make him. To whom he spake fewe wordes except
they were thankes for that she had not confessed the truthe
to her mother, praying her at least wise ẏ seing he was dispossessed out of her hart, she would suffer none other to receiue his place. But she answering his former talke, saide.
If I had had any other meanes to defend my self from you
than by crying out, she should neuer haue heard me, and of
me you shall neuer heare worse, except you doe constrayne
me as you haue done, and for louing any other man, you
shall not neede to feare. For sithe I haue not found in your
harte (which I estemed the most vertuous in al the world)

the good

"the good succesſe that I deſired, I wyll neuer beleue hereaf-
"ter that vertue is planted in any man. And this outrage
"ſhall make me free from all paſſions that Loue can force,
"and in ſaying ſo ſhe tooke her leaue. The mother which be-
held her countenaunce, could ſuſpecte nothing, and after
that tyme, ſhee was perſuaded that her daughter bare no
more affectiõ to Amadour, and thought aſſuredly that ſhe
was voyde of reaſõ, becauſe ſhe hated al thoſe things which
ſhe was wont to loue. And from that time forth there was
ſuch warre betwene the mother and the daughter, as the
mother for the ſpace of. vii. yeares would not ſpeake vnto
her, except it were in anger Which ſhe did at the requeſt of
Amadour. During which time, Florinda cõuerted ẏ miſli-
king of her huſband, into mere & conſtant loue, to auoyde
the rigour & checkes of her mother. Howbeit, ſeing that no
thing could preuayle, ſhe purpoſed to beguile Amadour, &
leauing for a day or two her ſtraunge coũtenance towards
him, ſhe counſelled Amadour to loue a woman, whiche as
ſhe ſayd, did commõly diſpute and talke of their loue. This
Lady dwelt with the Queene of Spaine, & was called Lo-
rette, who was very ioyfull and glad to get ſuch a ſeruant.
And Florinda founde meanes to cauſe a bruite of this newe
loue to be ſpred in euery place, and ſpecially the Counteſſe
of Arande (being at the Court) perceiued the ſame, who af-
terwards was not ſo diſpleaſed with Florinda, as ſhe was
wont to be. Florinda vpon a tyme heard tel that a Captain
the huſband of Loret, began to be ialous ouer his wife, de-
termining by ſome meanes or other, he cared not howe, to
kill Amadour. Florinda notwithſtanding her diſſembled
countenance, could not ſuffer any hurt to be done to Ama-
dour, and therefore incontinently gaue him aduertiſement
thereof. But he retourning againe to his former follies,
anſwered, that if it would pleaſe her to intertaigne him e-
very day three houres, he would neuer ſpeake again to Lo-
rette, whereunto by no meanes ſhee would conſent. Then

Ama-

Amadour saide vnto her, if you will not haue me to liue, wherefore go ye about to defend me from death? except ye purpose to torment me aliue with greater extremitie then a thousand deathes can do. But for so much as death doth flie from me, I will neuer leaue to seeke him out, by whose approche only I shall haue rest. Whilest they were in these tearmes, newes came that the kyng of Granado was about to enter into great warres against the king of Spain: in suche wyse as the king sent against hym the Prince his sonne, and with hym the Constable of Castile, and ye Duke of Albe, twoo auncient and sage Lordes. The Duke of Cardonne and the Counte of Arande not willing to tarie behinde, besought the kyng to geue eyther of thē a charge. Whiche hee did according to the dignitie of their houses, appointing Amadour to be their guide. Who during that warre, did sutche valiannt factes as they seemed rather to be desperatly than hardily enterprysed. And to come to the effect of this discourse, his great valiaunce was tryed euen to the death. For the Moores making a bragge as though they would geue battayle, when they sawe the army of the Christians, counterfaited a retire, whome the Spaniardes pursued, but the olde Constable and the Duke of Albe doubting their pollicie, stoode still, against the will of the Prince of Spaine, not suffering him to passe ouer the Ryuer, but the Counte of Arande & the Duke of Cardonne, (although they were cōtremanded) did followe the chase, and when the Moores sawe that they were pursued with so small a number, they returned, and at one recountrie kylled the Duke of Cardonne, and the Counte of Arande, was so sore hurte as hee was lefte for dead in the place. Amadour arriuing vpon this ouerthrowe, inuaded the battayle of the Moores, with sutche rage and furie, as hee rescued the twoo bodyes of the Duke and Countie, and caused them to be conueyed to the Princes campe, who so lamented their chaunce, as if they had bene his owne brethren.

thzen. But in searching their woundes, the Countie of Arande was founde to be aliue, & was sent home to his own house in a horselitter, where of long time he was sicke, and likewise was conueied to Cardonne the dead bodie of the yong Duke. Amadour in rescuing those two bodies, tooke so little heede to him selfe, as he was inclosed with a great number of the Moores, & because he would bee no more taken, as well to verifie his faith towardes God, as also his bowe made to his Lady, & also considering that if he were pzysoner to the kyng of Granado, either hee should cruelly be put to death, or els forced to renounce his faith, he determined not to make his death or taking, glorious to his enemies. Wherefore kissing the crosse of his swoorde, and rendring his body and soule to the handes of almighty God, he stabbed himselfe into the body with suche a blow, as there neded no second wound to rid him of his life. In this sorte died poore Amadour, so muche lamented as his vertues did deserue. The newes hereof was bruted throughout Spaine, and came to Florinda who thē was at Barselone, where her husbande in his life tyme ordeined the place of his burial. And after shee had done his honourable obsequies, without making her own mother, or mother in law priuie, she surrendred her selfe into the monasterie of Iesus, there to liue a religious life, receiuing him for her husbād and friende, whiche had deliuered her from the vehement loue of Amadour, and from a displeasaunt life so great and vnquiet as was the company of her husband. In this wise she conuerted all her affections, to pietie and the perfit loue of God, who after she had long time liued a religious life, shee yelded vp her soule in such ioye as the Bridegrom doth when he goeth to visite his spowes.

¶ The

¶ The incontinencie of a Duke and of his impudencie to attaine his purpose, vvith the iust punishement vvhich he receiued for the same.

The Liiij. Nouell.

IN the Citie of Florence (the chiefest of all Thuscane) there was a Duke that maried ỳ Lady Margaret the bastarde daughter of the Emperour Charles the fift. And bicause shee was very young, it was not lawfull for him to lye with her, but taryng till she was of riper yeres, he interteigned and vsed her like a noble gentlemã. And who to spare his wife, was amorous of certaine other Gentlewomen of the citie. Amonges whom he was in loue, with a very fayre and wyse Gentlewoman, that was sister to a Gentleman, a seruaunt of his, whome the Duke loued so well as himselfe, to whome he gaue so muche authoritie in his house, as his word was so wel obeied and feared as the Dukes him self, and there was no secrete thing in the Dukes minde, but he declared the same vnto him, who might ful wel haue bene called a second himself. The Duke seing his sister to be a woman of great honestie, had no wayes or meanes to vtter vnto her the loue that he bare her (after he had inuented all occasiõs possible) at length he came to this Gentleman which he loued so well, and said vnto him. My friend, if there were any thing in all the world, wherein I were able to pleasure thee, and woulde not doe it at thy request, I should be afraid to say my fantasie, and much ashamed to craue your help and assistance. But the loue is such which I bare thee, as if I had a wife, mother, or daughter, that were able to saue thy life, I would rather imploy thẽ, than to suffer thee to die in torment. And if thou doe beare vnto me that affectiõ which am thy Maister, thinke verely

" that I doe beare vnto thee the like. Wherefore I will dis-
" close vnto thee suche a secrete and priuie matter, as the si-
" lence thereof hath brought me into sutche plight as thou
" seest, whereof I doe loke for none amendemēt but by death
" or by the seruice whiche thou maiest doe me, in a certayne
" matter which I purpose to tell thee. The Gentleman hea-
ring the reasons of his maister, and seing his face not fay-
ned, but all besprent with teares, tooke great compassion
" vpon him and sayd. My Lorde I am your humble seruaūt.
" All the goodes and worship that I haue doth come from
" you. You may saye vnto me as to your moste approued
" frende. Assure your self, that all which resteth in my power
" and abilitie, is already at your commaundement. Then the
Duke began to tell him of the loue that hee bare vnto his
sister, which was of sutche force, as if by his meanes he did
not enioye her, his life could not long cōtinue. For he saide,
that he knew right well ỳ intreatie & presentes were with
her of no regard. Wherfore he praied him, that if he loued
his life, so well as he did his, to finde meanes for him to re-
ceiue that benefite, which without him he was in despaire
neuer to recouer. The brother which loued his sister & ho-
nor of his kindred, more than the Dukes pleasure, made a
certain reuerence vnto him, hūbly beseching him to vse his
trauaill & pain in all other causes sauing in that, bicause it
was a sute so slaūderous & infamous, as it would purchase
dishonor to his whole familie, adding further, that neither
his hart nor his honor could serue him, to consent to do that
seruice. The Duke inflamed with vnspeakeable furie, put
his finger betwene his teete, & biuing of the nayle, said vnto
" him in great rage. Well then sithe I finde in thee no frend-
" ship, I know what I haue to doe. The Gentlemā knowing
" the crueltie of his Maister, being sore afraide, replied. My
" Lorde, for so much as your desire is vehement and earnest,
" I will speake vnto her and bryngе you aunswere of her
" mynde. And as he was departing, the Duke sayde vnto
him.

hym. See that thou tender my life as thou wylt that I
shall doe thyne. The Gentleman vnderstanding well what
that woorde did meane, absented him selfe a day or twayne
to aduise what were best to be done. And amonges diuers
his cogitations, there came to his remembraunce the boũ-
den dutie which he dyd owe to his Maister, and the goodes
and honours whiche he had receyued at his handes, on the
other syde, hee considered the honour of his house, the good
life and chastitie of his syster, who (he knewe well) woulde
neuer consent to that wickednesse, if by subtiltie shee were
not surpryised, or otherwyse forced, and that it were a thing
very straunge and rare, that he should goe about to defame
hym selfe and the whole stocke of his progenie. Where-
fore hee concluded, that better it were for hym to die, than
to commit a mischief so great vnto his sister, whiche was
one of the honestest women in all Italie. And therewithall
considered how he might deliuer his countrie from sutch a
Tyrant, which by force would blemishe and spot the whole
race of his auncient stock & familie. For he knew right wel
that except the Duke were taken away, the lise of him and
his affinitie could not be in securitie and safegarde. Wher-
fore without motion made to his sister of that matter, hee
deuised how to saue his life & the reproche that should fol-
low vpon the second daye. He came vnto the Duke, & tolde
hym in what sorte he had practised with his sister, and that
although the same in the beginning was harde and diffi-
cul, yet in the ende he made her to consent, vpon condicion
that hee would keepe the same so secrete as none but hym-
selfe and he myght knowe of it. The Duke desirous and
glad of those newes, dyd sone beleue hym, and imbracing
the messanger, promised to geue him whatsoeuer he would
demaunde, praying hym with al speede that hee might in-
ioye his desyred purpose. Whereupon they appointed
a tyme. And to demaunde whether the Duke were glad
and ioyfull of the same, it were superfluous.

And when the desired night was come, wherin he hoped to haue the victorie of her whom he thought inuincible, he and the Gentleman alone withdrewe themselues together, not forgetting his perfumed coif and swete shirte wrought and trimmed after the best maner. And when eche wight was gone to bed, both they repayred to the appointed lodging of his Lady, where being arriued they founde a chamber in decent and comly order. The Gentleman taking of the Dukes night gowne, placed hym in the bedde, and sayde
" vnto hym. My Lorde, I wil nowe goe seeke her, which can
" not enter into this chamber without blushing, howebeit I
" truste before to morrowe morning she wyll be very glad of
" you. Which done, he left the Duke, and went into his own chamber, where he founde one of his seruauntes alone, to whome he sayde. Hast thou the harte to followe me into a place where I shall be reuenged vpon the greatest enemie that I haue in the worlde? Yea sir aunswered his man. Whereupon the Gentleman toke him with him so sodainly, as he had no leasure to arme him selfe with other weapon but with his onely dagger. And when the Duke heard him come againe, thinking he had brought her with hym that he loued so derely, hee drewe the curteine, and opened his eyes to behold & receiue that ioye which he had so long loked for, but in place of seing her which he hoped should be the conseruation of his life, he sawe the acceleration of his death, which was a naked sworde that the Gentleman had drawen, who therwithall did strike the Duke, which was in his shirte voyde of weapon, although well armed with courage, and sitting vp in his bedde, grasped the Gentleman about the body, and sayde. Is this thy promise whiche thou hast kept? And seeing that hee had no other weapon but his teeth & nayles, he bitte the Gentlemã in the arme, and by force of his owne strengthe he so defended himselfe, as they bothe fell downe into the flower. The Gentleman fearing the matche, called for hys manne. Who finding

ding the Duke and his maister fast together, that he wyst not whether to take, he drewe them both by the feete into ỹ middest of the chamber, and with his dagger assayde to cut the Dukes throte. The Duke who defended himselfe, till suche time as the losse of his bloud made him so weake and feeble that he was not able to contende any longer. Then the Gentleman and his man laide him againe into his bed, where they accomplished the effect of that murther. Afterwardes drawing the curteine, they departed and locked ỹ dead body in the chamber. And when he sawe that he had gottẽ the victorie of his enemy, by whose death he thought to set at libertie the common wealth, he supposed his facte to be vnperfect if he did not the like to fiue or sixe of them which were nerest to the Duke, & best beloued of him. And to attaine the perfection of that enterpryse, he bad his man to doe the like vnto them one after another, that hee had done to the Duke. But the seruaunt being nothing hardie or coragious, said vnto his maister. We thinke sir that for this time ye haue done enough, and that it were better for you now to deuise waye howe to saue your owne life, than to seeke meanes to murder any more. For if we do consume so long space of time to kill euery of them, as we haue done in murdering of the Duke, the day light will discouer our enterpryse before we haue made an ende, yea although wee finde them naked & without defence. The gentlemã whose euill conscience made him fearfull, did beleue his seruaunt, and taking him alone with him, wẽt to the bishop that had in charge the gates of the citie, and the vse of the Postes, to whom he sayd. This euening (my Lord) newes came vnto me that mine owne brother lieth at the point of death, and crauing licence of the Duke to goe se him he hath giuẽ me leaue. Wherefore I beseche you commaunde the Postes to deliuer me two good horse, and that you will sende worde to the porter ỹ the gates may be opened. The bishop which estemed no lesse his request than the cõmaundement of the

Duke his maister, incontinently gaue him a billet, by vertues wherof both the gates were opened, & the horse made ready according to his demaunde. And vnder colour and pretence of visiting his brother, he rode to Venice, where after he had cured himselfe of the Dukes bitinges fastened in his flesh, he trauailed int Turkey. In the morning the Dukes seruauntes seing the time so late before their maister retourned, suspected that he was gone forth in visiting of some Ladye, but when they sawe he taried so long, they began to seke for him in euery place. The poore Duchesse into whose harte the loue of her husbande, strongly did inuade vnderstanding that he could not be founde, was very pensife and sorowfull. But when the Gentleman which he so dearely loued, was not likewyse seene abroade, searche was made in his chamber, where finding bloud at the chãber doore, they entred in, but no man was there to tell them any newes, and following the tract of the bloud, the poore seruauntes of the Duke went to the chamber doore, where he was, which doore they found fast locked, who incontinẽtly brake opẽ the same. And seing the place all bloudy, drew the curteine, and found the wretched carcasse of the Duke lying in the bedde, sleeping his endlesse sleepe. The sorrow and lamentation made by the Dukes seruauntes, carying the dead bodye into his palace, is easie to bee coniectured. Wherof when the Bishop was aduertised, he repaired thether, and tolde how the Gentleman was gone awaye in the night in great haste, vnder pretence to goe to see his brother. Whereupon it was euidently knowen that it was he that had committed the murder. And it was proued that his poore sister was neuer priuie to ẏ facte, who although she was astonned with the sodaynes of ẏ deede, yet her loue towardes her brother was farre more increased, bicause he had deliuered her from a Prince so cruell, the enemy of her honestie. For doing whereof he did not sticke to hazard his owne life. Whereupon she persewered more and more in

vertue,

dertue, and although she was poore, by reason her house was confiscate, yet both her sister and shee matched with so honest and riche husbandes as were to be founde in Italie: and afterwardes they bothe liued in good and great reputation.

¶ One of the Frenche kinges called Frauncis the firste of that name, declared his gentle nature to Counte Guillaume, that vvould haue killed him.

The. Lv. Nouell.

IN Digeon a town of Burgundie, there came to the seruice of king Frauncis, (whiche was father to Henry the second of that name, whiche Henry was kylled by Mounsier Mõgomerie, in a triũphe at the Tilt, and Graundfather to Charles the.ix. that now raigneth in Fraũce) an Earle of Allemaigne called Guillaume, of the house of Saxon, whereunto the house of Sauoie is so greatly allied, as in old time, they were but one. This Counte for so much as he was estemed to be so comely and hardy a Gentleman as any was in Almaigne, was in suche good fauour with the king, as he tooke him not onely into seruice, but vsed him so nere his persone, as he made him of his priuy chamber. Upon a day the Gouernour of Burgundie, the Lorde Trimouille (an auncient knight and loyall seruaunt of the kyng) like one suspicious and fearfull of the euill and hurt of his Maister, had daylie espies ouer his enemies, vsing his affaires so wysely, as very fewe thinges were concealed from hym.

Among other aduertisementes, one of his friendes wrote vnto him that the Counte Guillaume had receiued certain sommes of money, with promise of more, if by any meanes he could deuise which waye to kill the king. The Lorde of Trimouile hearing of this, failed not to come to the kyng to giue him knowledge thereof, and disclosed it lykewyse to Madame Loyse of Sauoye his mother, who forgetting her amitie and aliaunce with the Almaigne Earle, besought the king forthwith to put hym awaye. The kyng prayed his mother to speake no more thereof, and sayde, that it was impossible that so honest a Gentleman would attẽpt to doe a deede so wicked. Within a while after, there came other newes of that matter, confirming the first. Whereof the Gouernour for the intire loue he bare to his Maister, craued licẽce either to expel him the countrie, or to put him in warde. But the king gaue speciall commaundemẽt that he should not make any semblaunce of displeasure, for that hee purposed by some other meanes to knowe the truthe. Upon a time when he went a hunting, he girded about him the best swoorde that hee had, to serue for all armes and assayes, and toke with hym the Counte Guillaume, whome he commaunded to wayte vpon him, the firste and chiefest next his owne persone. And after he had followed the hart a certayne tyme, the kyng seing that hi traynes was farre from hym, and no man neare him sauing the Counte, tourned hym selfe rounde about. And when hee sawe that hee was alone, in the mydde of the Forest, hee drewe out his swoorde, & sayd to the Counte. How saye you (Sir Counte) is not this a fayre and good swoorde. The Counte feling it at the point, and well viewyng the same, aunswered
cc that he neuer sawe a better in all his life. You haue reason
cc sayde the kyng. And I beleue that if a Gentleman were
cc determined to kyll mee, and did knowe the force of myne
cc armes, and the goodnesse of myne harte accompanied with
cc this swoord, he would bee twyse well aduised before hee at-

tempted

tempted that enterpryse. Notwithstãding I would accõpt
him but a cowarde, wee being alone without witnesses, if
he did not attempt that, which he were disposed to do. The
Counte Guillaume with bashfull and astonned counte-
naunce aunswered. Sir, the wickednesse of the enterpryse
were very great, but the folly in the executiõ, were no lesse.
The king with those wordes fell in a laughter, and put the
sword in the skaberd againe. And hearing that the chase
drewe nere him, he made to the same so faste as he coulde.
When he was come thether, he said nothing of that which
had passed betweene theim, and verelye thoughte that the
Cõte Guillaume although that he was a strong & stoute
gentleman, yet he was no man to do so great an enterpryse.
But the Counte Guillaume, fearing to be bewrayed or su-
spected of the fact, next day morning repayred to Robertet
the Secretarie of the kinges reuenues, and saide that hee
had well wayed the giftes and annuities which the kinge
would giue him to tarrie, but he perceiued that they were
not sufficient to interteigne him for halfe a yeare, and that
if it pleased not the king to double the same, hee should be
forced to departe, praying the sayde Robertet to know his
graces pleasure so sone as he coulde. who sayd vnto him, ỳ
he himselfe could without further commission disburse no
more vnto him but gladly without further delay he would
repaire to the king. Which he did more willingly, because
he had seene the aduertisemẽts of the Gouernor aforesaid.
And so sone as the kinge was awake, he declared the mat-
ter vnto him in the presence of Monsier Trimouille and
Monsier Bouinet Lord Admirall, who were vtterly igno-
rant of that which the king had done. To whom the kinge
said. Loe, ye haue bene miscontented for that I would not
put away ỳ Counte Guillaume, but now ye see he putteth
away himselfe. Wherefore Robertet (q the king) tell him,
that if he be not content with the state which he receiued at
his first entrie into my seruice, whereof many Gentlemen

of

" of good houses would thinke thẽselues happie, it is meete
" that he seeke his better fortune, and tell him that I would
" be lothe to hinder him, but wilbe very well contented, that
" he seeke where he may liue better, accordingly as he deser-
" ueth. Robertet was so diligent to beare this aunswcare to the Counte, as he was to present his sute to the kinge. The Coũte said that with his licence he would gladly go forthwith. And as one whom feare forced to depart, he was not able to beare his abode 24. houres. And as the king was sitting downe to dinner, saying to be sorye for his departure, but that necessitie compelled him to lose his presence, hee toke his leaue. He went likewise to take leaue of the kings mother, which she gaue him with so great ioy, as she did receiue him, being her nere kinsman and freind. Then he went into his Countrie. And the king seing his mother and seruaunts astonned at that his sodaine departure, declared vnto them the Al Arme, which he had giuen him, saying that although he was innocent of the matter suspected, soe was his feare greate y-nough he, to departe from a maister wyth whose condicions hitherto he was not acquainted.

Of a

¶ A pleasaunt discours of a great Lord to enioy a Gentlewoman of Pampelunæ.

The Lvij. Nouell.

THere was in the time of king Lewes ꝯ 12 of that name, a yõg Lord, called the Lorde of Auannes sonne to the Lorde Alebret, and brother to king Iohn of Nauarre, with whom the said Lord of Auannes ordinarely remayned. Now this yong Lorde was of the age of xv. yeares, so comely a personage, & full of curtesie and good behauiour, as hee seemed to be created for none other purpose, but to be beloued & regarded. And so he was in deede of al those ꝯ did wel behold & note his cõmendable grace & condicion, but chiefly of a woman, dwelling in the citie of Pampelunæ in Nauarre, the wife of a rich mã, with whom she liued honestly: & although she was but 23. yeres of age & her husband very nere fiftie, yet her behauior was so modest, as she seemed rather a widow thã a maried wyfe, who vsed not to frequent & haunte any mariages, banquets, or cõmon assemblies wout the company of her husbande, the vertue and goodnes of whõ she so greatly esteemed, as she preferred the same before the beautie of al others. The husband, hauing experience of her wisedome, put such trust in her, as he cõmitted al thaffaires of his house to her discretion. Upon a day this rich man w̃ his wife, were inuited to a mariage of one that was nere kinne vnto him. To which place (for the greater honor of the mariage) repaired ꝯ yõg Lord of Auannes, who naturally was giuen to daũcing & for his excellencie in daũcing, there was not his like to be foũd in his time. After dinner whẽ they prepared to daũce, the Lord of Auannes was intreated thereunto by the rich mã. The said Lord asked him with what gentlewomã hee should lead the daunce.

Hee

"He aunſweared him: My Lord if there were any one more "beautifull, or more at my commaundement then my wyfe, "I would preſent her vnto you, beſeeching you to do mee ſo "much honour as to take her by the hande: which the yong Lorde did, and by reaſon of his youthfull courage he toke more pleaſure in vaultinge and dauncinge, then in beholding the beautie of the Ladies. And ſhe whom he ledde by the hand, cõtrarywyſe regarded more the grace & beautie of the ſaid yong Lord, then the daunce wherin ſhe was, albeit for her great wiſedome ſhe made therof no ſemblãce at al. When Supper time was come, the Lord of Auannes badde the companie farewell and went home to the caſtle: whether the riche man accompanied him vppon his moile. And riding homewards togethers, hee ſaide vnto "him: My Lord this day you hane done ſo great honor vn- "to my kinſemen and mee, that it were great ingratitude if "I ſhould not offer my ſelfe with all the goods I haue to do "you ſeruice I knowe ſir that ſuch Lordes as you be which "haue nere and couetous fathers: many times do lacke mo- "ney which we by keeping of ſmal houſhold, and vſing good "huſbandrie do heape and gather together. Now thus it "is ſir that God hauing giuen mee a wyfe accordinge to my "deſire he would not in this world altogether indue mee w "beauẽly pleaſures, but hath left me voyde of one ioy which "is the ioye that fathers haue of children. I know ſir that it "is not my dutie, and belõgeth not to my ſtate to adopt you "for ſuch a one, but if it maye pleaſe you to receiue mee for "your ſeruaunt, and to declare vnto me your ſmall affaires, "ſo farre as a hundred thouſande Crownes ſhall extende, I "will not ſticke to helpe your neceſſities. The yong Lorde of Auannes was very ioyfull of this offer, for he had ſuche a father as the other had deſcribed vnto him. And after he had giuen him hartie thanckes, he called him his frendlye father. From that time forth the ſayd riche man conceiued ſuch loue in the youg Lord, as daily he ceaſed not to in-

quire

quire of his lacke and want, and hid not from his wyfe the deuocion which he bare to the said Lorde of Auannes, for which she rendred vnto him double thanckes. And after that time the said yong Lord lacked not what he desired: & many times resorted to that rich mans to drincke and eate with him, and finding him not at home, his wyfe rewarded him with his demaunde: whoe admonished her by wyse & discrete talke to be vertuous, because he feared and loued her aboue all the women of the worlde. She which had God and her honor before her eyes, was contente with his sight & talke, wherin consisted the satisfaction of his honestie & vertuous loue. In such wise as she neuer made any signe or semblaunce, wherby he might thinke and iudge ỹ shee had anye affection vnto him, but that which was both brotherlie and Christian. During this couerte amitie, the Lord of Auannes through the foresaid ayde, was very gorgious and trimme, and approching the age of xvii. yeares, began to frequent the company of Gentlewomen more thē he was wont to do: & although he had a more willing desire, to loue that wyse and discrete dame aboue other, Yet the feare which he had to lose her loue (if shee misliked his sute) made him to hold his peace, & to seeke els wher. And gaue himself to the loue of a gentlewoman dwelling hard by Pampelunæ, which had to husband a youg gentleman, that aboue all thinges loued & delighted in dogges, horsse, and hawkes. This noble gentleman begā (for her sake) to deuise a Thousand pastimes, as Torneyes, running at the Tilt, Mōmeries, Maskes, feastes and other games, at all which this yong dame was present: but because that her husband was very fantastical, & saw his wyfe to be faire & wanton, hee was ialous of her honour, and kepte her in so straite, as the sayde Lord of Auannes colde get nothing at her hands but words, shortly spoken, in some daunce, albeit in litle time and lesse speache, the sayd Lorde perceyued that there wanted nothing for full perfection of their loue,

but

but time and place. Wherfore he came to his new adopted father the rich man, and said vnto him that he was minded with great deuocion to visite our Lady of Montferrat, intreating him to suffer his houshoulde traine to remaine w̄ him, because he was disposed to go thither alone. Whereunto he willigly agreed. But his wyfe whose hart ẏ great prophet Loue, had inspired, incontinently suspected ẏ true cause of that voyage, and cold not forbeare to saye vnto the
" Lord of Auannes these woords. My Lord, my Lorde, the
" pilgrimage of the Lady whom you worshippe, is not farre
" without the walles of the Citie, wherefore I beseech you
" aboue all thinges to haue regarde vnto your health. Hee which feared her, and loued her, blushed at her woords, and without talke by his countenaunce he seemde to confesse ẏ trothe. Whereupon he departed: and when he had bought a couple of faire Genets of Spaine he clothed himself like a horsekeeper & so disguised his face as no man knew him. The gentleman which had maried that fonde and wanton gentlewoman, louinge aboue all thinges (as is sayde before) fayre horses, espyed those two Genets which the Lord of Auannes did lead, and incontinently came to buy them. And after he had bought them, hee beheld the horsekeeper which rode and handled them passing well, & asked him if he were willing to serue him. The Lord of Auannes answeared yea, & added further how he was a poore horsekeeper vnskilfull of other science but of keepinge of horse, which practize hee could do so well, as he doubted not but he should content and please him. The gentlemā very glad thereof, gaue him charge of all his horse, and called forth his wyfe vnto him, vnto whom he recommended his horse and horsekeper, and told her that he himself was disposed to go to the castel. The gentlewoman so well to please her husband as for her owne delight, & passtime, wente to loke vpon her horse & to behold her new horskeper, who seemed to be a man of good bringing vp, notwithstanding she knewe him not. He seing ẏ she had no knowledge of him, came to doe re-

do reuerence vnto her after the maner of Spaine, & takinge her by the hand kissed the same, and by kissing of her hand, he disclosed himself so much as she knew him. For in daũcing w̃ her many times he vsed the like curtesie. And then she ceased not to deuise place wher she might speake to him a part. Which she did ẏ very same euening. For being bidden to a feast wherunto her husband would faine haue had her to go, she fayned herselfe to be sicke & not able. And her husband loth to faile his frends request, said vnto her. For so much (my good wyfe) as you be not disposed to go w̃ me, I pray you to haue regard to my dogges & house that they may lack nothing. The gentlewoman was very wel contẽted w̃ that comission: howbeit w̃out chaung of coũtenance she made him answere ẏ sith in better things he would not imploie her, she would not refuse the least, to satisfie his desire. And her husbãd was no soner out of the gates, but she went downe into the stable, where she founde faulte wyth diuers things: for prouision whereof she cõmitted such seueral busines to her men on euery syde, ẏ shee remayned alone w̃ the master housekeper. And for feare least any should come vpon them vnwares, she said vnto him. Go into my garden & tarie my cõming in the litle house at the ende of ẏ alley, which he did so diligently as hee had no leasure to thancke her, & after ẏ she had giuen order to the yeomen of the stable, shee went to see the dogges, counterfaiting like care & diligẽce to haue them wel intreated: in such wise as she seemed rather a mayde of the chãber, then a maistresse of the house. Which done shee returned into her chamber, where she made herselfe to be so werie, as she went to bed, saying ẏ she was disposed to sleepe. All her women left her alone except one in whõ she reposed her greatest trust, and vnto whom she said. Go downe into the Garden, and cause him whom you shall finde at the ende of the alley, to come hither. The mayde wente downe and founde the Maister housekeeper there, whom forthwith shee brought vnto her maistresse,

maistresse. And then the gentlewoman caused her mayd to go forth to watch when her husbande came home. The Lord of Auannes seing ỳ he was alone with his maistres, put of his horsekeepers apparel, plucked from his face his false nose and beard, and not as a feareful horsekeeper, but like such a Lord as he was without asking leaue of the gẽtlewoman, boldly laied him downe beside her: where hee was of that foolishe woman receiued so ioyfully, as his estate and goodly personage did require, cõtinuing with her vntil the retorne of her husband. At whose comming putting vpon him againe his counterfaite attire, left the pleasure which by policie and malice he had vsurped. The gentleman when hee was within, hearde tell of the dilligence which his wife had vsed vppon his commaundemente, and
"thanked her very hartelie. Husband (said the Gentlewo-
"man) I do but my dutie, and do assure you that if there be
"no ouerseer to checke and commaunde your negligent ser-
"uaunts, you shal haue neyther dogge nor horse well kept &
"ordred: but forasmuche as I knowe their slouth, and your
"good wil, you shalbe better serued then you haue bin here-
tofore. The gentleman who thought that he had gotten the best horsekeeper of the worlde, asked her how she liked him. I assure you sir (q̃ she) he doth his busines so well as any seruaunt, howbeit he had neede to be called vppon, for you know seruauntes in these dayes without an ouerseer, wilbe slow and careless. Thus of long time continued the husbande and wyfe in greater amitie and loue then before, and gaue ouer all the suspicion and ialousie which hee had conceyued, because before time his wyfe louinge feastes, daunces and companies, was become intentife & diligente about her household. And perceiued that now many times she was contented in homely garmentes to go vp & downe the house, wher before she was accustomed to be 4. houres in trimming of herselfe: whereof shee was commended of her husbande, & of euery man ỳ knew not how the greater

deuill had chased awaye the lesse. Thus liued this yonge dame vnder the hypocrisie and habite of an honest woman, in such fleshlye pleasure as reason, conscience, order and measure, had no longer resting place in her. Which insaciat lust the yong Lord of delicate complexion, was no longer able to susteine, but began to waxe so pale and feeble, as he needed no visarde for disfiguring of himselfe. Notwithstanding the folish loue which he bare to that woman so dulled his sence, as he presumed vppon that force which fayled in the monstruous giant Hercules, whereby in the ende constrayned with sicknes, and councelled by his maistresse which loued not the sicke so well as the hole, demaūded leaue of his maister to go home to his frends. Who to his great griefe graunted him the same: and caused him to make promise that when he was recouered hee should returne againe to his seruice. Thus went the Lord of Auānes on foote away from his maister, for he had not paste the lenght of one streate to trauaile. And when he was come to the rich mans house his new father, he found none at home but his wyfe, whose vertuous loue shee bare him was nothing diminished for al his voyage. But whē she saw him so leane & pale, she could not forbeare to say vnto him. Sir I knowe not in what staye your conscience is, but your body is litle amended by this Pilgrimage, & I am in doubte that ỹ way wherein you traueiled in the night, did wearie and paine you more, then that vppon the daye: for if you had gone to Hierusalem on foote, you mighte perhappes haue returned more Sunne burned, but more leane and weake it had bin impossible. Now make accompt of your pilgrimage here, and serue no more such Saincte, for in place of raysinge the deade frō life, they do to death those that be on liue. Moreouer I shall saye vnto you, that if your bodye were neuer so sinfull, I see well it hath suffred suche penaunce, as I haue pitie to renewe anye former payne. When the Lorde of Auannes had heard all her

talke he was no lesse angrie with himselfe then ashamed, and saide vnto her. Madame I haue sometimes heard tell that repentaunce insueth sinne, and now I haue proued the same to my cost, praying you to excuse my youth that could not be corrected but by experience of that euill, which before it would not beleeue. The Gentlewoman chaunging her talke, caused him to lye downe vppon a fayre bedde, where he lay the space of xv. dayes, feedinge onely vppon restoratiues. And the husband and wyfe kept him so good companye, as one of theim neuer departed from him. And albeit that he had committed those follies, (suche as you haue heard) against the minde and aduise of that wyse and discrete dame, yet shee neuer diminished the vertuous loue which shee bare him, for shee still hoped that after he had spent his yonger dayes in youthly follies, he would retire at length when age and experience should force him to vse honest loue, and by that meanes would be altogether her owne. And during those fifteene dayes ẏ he was cherished in her house, she vsed vnto him womānly & cōmēdable talke onely tending to ẏ loue of vertue, which caryed such effect as he begā to abhorre ẏ follie ẏ he cōmitted. And beholdīg the gētlewomā which in beautie passed ẏ other wanton, w̄ whom he had delt before, he imprinted in minde more and more the graces and vertues that were in her, and was not able to keepe in harte the secrete conceipt of the same, but abandoning all feare he sayd vnto her. Madame I see no better meanes, to be such one, and so vertuous as you by wordes desire me for to be but to settle my harte, and giue my selfe to be holie in loue with vertue, and the qualities therunto appertinent. I hūblie beseech you therfore (good Madame) to tel me if your selfe wil not vouchsafe to giue me al your ayde and fauor ẏ you possiblie can, for thobteyning of the same. The maistresse very ioyful to heare him vse ẏ lāguage, made him answere. And I do promise you sir ẏ if you wilbe in loue w̄ vertue as it behoueth so noble

a state

state as you be I wil do you the seruice ẏ I cã to bring you thereunto with such power and abilitie as God hath plãted in mee. Well Madame said the Lorde of Auãnes, remember then your promise, and vnderstande that God vnknowen of the Christian but by fayth, hath dayned to take flesh, like to ẏ our sinful which we beare about vs, to thend that by drawing our flesh into the loue of his humanity, he may draw also our minde to the loue of his diuinitie, & requireth to be serued by thinges visible to make vs loue by fayth ẏ diuinity which is inuisible. In like maner ẏ vertue which I desire to imbrace all ẏ dayes of my life, is a thing inuisible and not to be seen but by outward effects. Wherfore needeful it is, that she now do put vpon her, some body or shape to let herselfe be knowen amonges men: which in deede she hath don by induing herself wᵗʰ your form & shape, as the most perfect that she is able to find amonges liuing creatures. Wherfore I do acknowledge & confesse you to be not onely a vertuous creature, but euen very vertue it self. And I which see the same to shine vnder the grimsling vaile of the most perfect ẏ euer was: I will honor & serue the same during my life, forsaking (for the same) all other vaine and vicious loue. The gentlewoman no lesse content then marueling to here those words dissembled so wel her contented minde as she said vnto him. My Lord I take not vpon me to aunswere your diuinity, but like her ẏ is more fearefull of euill then beleful of good, do humblie beseech you to cease to speake to me those words of prayse, ẏ is not worthy of ẏ least of thē. I know right wel ẏ I am a womã, not onely as another is, but so imperfect, as vertue might do a better acte to transforme me into her, then she to take my forme, except it be when she desires to be vnknowen to the world. For vnder such habite as mine is, vertue cannot be knowen, according to her worthines. So it is sir ẏ for mine imperfectiõ, I wil not cease to here you such affectiõ, as a woman ought or maye do that feareth God, and hath

"respect to her honour]. But that affection shal not appere,
"vntill you harte be able to receiue the patience which ver-
"tuous loue commaũdeth. And now sir I know what kinde
"of speach to vse. And thincke that you do not loue so well,
"your owne goodes, purse or honour, as I doe with all my
"hart tender and imbrace the same. The Lord of Auannes
fearefull with teares in eyes, besought her earnestly that
for her woordes assuraunce, shee woulde vouchsafe to kisse
him. Which she refused, saying that for him, she would not
breake the Countries custome. And vppon this debate the
husband came in, to whõ the Lord of Auannes said. My fa-
"ther I knowe my selfe so much bounde to you and to your
"wife, as I beseech you for euer to repute me for your sonne.
"Which the good man willingly did. And for surety of that
"amitie, I pray you said Monsier D'Auannes, that I may
"kisse you, Which he did. After he said vnto him. If it were
"not for feare to offend the Law, I would do the like to my
"mother your wyfe. The husbande bearinge him saye so,
commaũded his wyfe to kisse him, which she did although
she made it straunge, either for the Lords desire or for hus-
bands request to do the same. Then the fier (which woords
had begunne to kindle in the harte of the poore Lorde) be-
ganne to augmente by that desired kisse, so strongly sued
for, and so cruelly refused. Which done the sayde Lorde of
Auannes repayred to the Castell to the kinge his brother,
where he told many goodly tales of his voyage to Mont-
ferrat, & vnderstode there, ỳ the kinge his brother was de-
termined to remoue to Olly & Taffares, & thinking that ỳ
iorney woulde be longe, conceiued greate beaumes, which
made him to muse how he mighte assaye before his depar-
ture, whether the wise Gentlewoman bare him such good
will, as shee made him beleeue shee did: and therefore hee
toke a house in the streate where she dwelt, which was old
and ill fauoured and built of Timber. Which house about
midnight of purpose he set on fier, wherof the crye was so

great

great throughout the Citie as it was hard within the rich mans house. Who demaunding at his window where the fier was, vnderstode it to be at the Lord of Auannes, wher vnto hee incontinentlye repayred with all the people of his house, and found the ponge Lord in his shirt in the middest of the streat, whom for pitie he toke betweene his armes, & couering him with his nighte Gowne, caried him home to his house withal possible speede, & said vnto his wife which was a bed: Wife I giue you to kepe this prisoner vse him as my selfe. So sone as he was departed the sayd Lord of Auannes, who had good wil to be interteigned for her husband, quicklie lept into the bed, hoping that the occasion & place would make that wise woman to chaūge her minde, which he found to be contrary. For so sone as he lept into the bed of thone side, shee speedelie went out of the other, & putting on her night Gowne she repaired to ẏ beds head, and said vnto him. How now sir, do you thincke that occasions can chaunge a chaste harte? beleeue and thincke that as gold is proued in the Fornace, euen so an vnspotted hart in the middest of temptacion. Wherein many times an honest hart sheweth it selfe to be more strong and vertuous, then els where, and the more it is assailed by his contrary, the coulder be the desires of the same. Wherefore be you assured that if I had bin affected with other minde then ẏ which many times I haue disclosed vnto you, I would not haue fayled to finde meanes to haue satisfyed the same: praying you that if you will haue me to continue the affection which I beare you, to remoue from your minde for euer not anely the will but the thought also, for any thinge you be able to do to make me other then I am. As she was speaking of these words, her women came into ẏ chamber, whom she commaunded to bring in a colacion of all sortes of comfects and other delicats. But that time hee had no appetite either to eate or drincke, hee was fallen into suche dispaire for fayling of his enterprise: fearing that the de-

monstracion of his desire, would haue caused her to giue ouer the secrete familiaritie betweene them. The husbande hauinge ceased the fier, returned and intreated the Lord of Auannes that night to lodge in his house, who passed that night in such nomber of cogitaciõs as his eyes were more exercised with weeping, then sleeping and early in the morninge hee bad them farewell in their bedde, where by kissing the Gentlewoman hee well perceiued ẏ she had more pitie vppon his offence, then euill will against his person, which was a cole to make the fier of loue to kindle more fiercely. After dinner he rode with the king to Taffares, but before his departure he wente to take his leaue of his newe alied father and of his wyfe: whoe after the furst commaundement of her husband, made no more difficultie to kisse him then if he had bin her owne sonne. But be assured the more that vertue stayed her eye & countenaunce to shewe the hidden flame, the more it did augment and become intollerable, in such wyse as not able to indure the warres which honour & loue had raysed within her hart, (who notwithstanding was determined neuer to shewe it, hauing lost the consolacion of her sight, and forgeuen the talke with him for whom she liued) a continuall feuer began to take her, caused by a Melancholicke and couert humor, in such wyse as the extreme partes of her body waxed cold, and those within burne incessantly. The Phisitiõs (in the hands of whõ mans life doth not depend) began greatly to mistrust health by reason of a certaine opilaciõ which made her melancholicke: who counceiled the husbande to aduertise his wyfe to consider her conscience, and that she was in the handes of God (as thoughe they which be in health were not in his protection.) The husbande which intirely loued his wyfe, was wyth their woordes made so heauye and pensife, as for his confort he wrote to the Lord of Auannes, beseechinge him to take the paynes to visite them, hoping that his sight would greatly ease and relieue

the

the diſeaſe of his wife. Which requeſt the Lord of Auannes immediatly vppon the recepte of thoſe letters, ſlacked not, but by poſt arriued at his fathers houſe: at the entrye whereof hee founde the ſeruauntes and women makinge great ſorrowe and lamentacion accordinglie as the goodnes of their Maiſtreſſe deſerued. Wherewith the ſayde Lord was ſo aſtonned as he ſtoode ſtil at the dooze like one in a traunce, vntil he ſaw his good father: who imbracing him beganne ſo bitterly to weepe, that he was not able to ſpeake a worde. And ſo conueied the ſayd Lorde of Auannes, vp into the Chamber of his pooze ſicke wyfe: who caſting vp her languiſhing eyes looked vppon him. And reaching his hand vnto her, ſhe ſtrayned the ſame with all her feeble force, and imbracinge and kiſſinge the ſame made a marueylous plainte, and ſayd vnto him. O my Lord the houre is come that all diſſimulacion muſt ceaſe, and needes I muſt confeſſe vnto you the troth, which I to my greate paine haue concealed from you: which is, that if you haue borne vnto me greate affection, beleeue that mine rendred vnto you, hath bin no leſſe. But my ſorrow hath farre ſurpaſſed your griefe, the ſmarte whereof I do feele nowe againſt myne hart and will. Wherefore my Lord yee ſhall vnderſtand, that GOD and mine honour would not ſuffer mee to diſcloſe the ſame vnto you, fearing to increaſe in you that which I deſired to be diminiſhed. But knowe yee my Lorde that the woordes which ſo many tymes you haue vttered vnto mee, haue bred in me ſuch griefe, as the ſame be the Inſtrumentes and woorkers of my death, wherewyth I am contente ſith GOD did giue mee the grace not to ſuffer the violence of my Loue, to blotte the puritye of my conſcience, and renowne. For leſſe fire then is wythin the kindled harte of mine, hath ruinated and conſumed moſt famous and ſtately buildinges. Nowe my harte is well at eaſe, ſithe before I dye, I haue had power to declare myne affection, which is equall

cc vnto yours, sauing that the honor of men & women be not
cc a like. Beseechinge you my Lorde from hencefoorth not to
cc feare to addresse your selfe to the greatest and moste vertu-
cc ous Ladies that you can finde. For in such noble hartes do
cc dwell the strongest passions, and there the same be moste
cc wisely gouerned. And God graunt that the grace, beautie
cc and honestie, which be in you, do not suffer your loue to tra-
cc uell wythout fruite. Haue in remembraūce good my Lord
cc the stabilitie of my constante minde, and do not attribute ẏ
cc to crueltie which ought to be imputed to honor, conscience
cc and vertue: which are thinges a thousande times more ac-
cc ceptable, then ẏ expence and losse of transitorie life. Nowe
cc farewell my Lorde, recommendinge vnto your honour the
cc state of my husbād your good father, to whom I pray you
cc to reherse the troth of that which you doe know by mee, to
cc the intent that he may be certefied how dearely I haue lo-
cc ued God and him: for whose sake I beseech you to absente
cc your selfe out of my sight. For from hencefoorth I do meane
cc holye to giue my selfe to the contemplacion of those promi-
cc ses which God hath louingly decreed, before the constitu-
cc cion of the worlde. In saying so shee kissed him, & imbraced
him wyth all the force of her feeble armes. The sayde
Lord whose hart was dead for compassion, as hers was in
dying through griefe and sorrow, without power to speake
one onely worde, wdrew himselfe out of her sight and laye
downe vpon a bed within an inner chamber: where he fain-
ted many times. Then the gentlewomā called for her hus-
bande, & after she had giuen him many goodly lessons, shee
recommended him to the Lord of Auannes assuringe him
that nexte to his parson, of all the men in the worlde shee
had him in greatelte estimacion. And soe kissinge her
husbande shee badde him farewell. And then was brought
vnto her the holye Sacramente, which shee receyued with
such ioye, as one certaine and sure of her Saluacion, and
perceyuinge her sighte begynne to kayle, and her strength

demi-

diminiſhe ſhe pronounced aloude, In manus tuas. &c. At which crie the Lorde of Auannes roſe vp from the bedde, & piteouſly beholding her, he viewed her with a ſwete ſighe, to rendre her glorioule ghoſt to him which had redemed it. And when he perceiued that ſhee was dead, hee ran to the dead bodie, which liuing he durſt not approche for feare, & imbraced and kiſſed the ſame in ſuch wiſe, as muche a doe there was to remoue her corps out of his armes. Wherof the huſbād was very much abaſhed, for ỳ he neuer thought that he had borne his wife ſuch affection. And in ſaying vnto him, my Lord you haue done enough, they withdrew thē ſelues together. And after long lamentatiō, the one for his wife, & the other for his Lady: The Lord of Auannes told him, the whole diſcourſe of his loue, and howe vntill her death ſhe neuer graunted him not ſo muche as one ſigne or token of loue, but in place therof a rebellious minde to his importunate ſutes. At the reherſall whereof, the huſbande conceiued greater pleaſure and contentment then euer he did before: which augmented or rather doubled his ſorrow and griefe for loſſe of ſuch a wife. And all his life time after, in al ſeruices & duties he obeyed the Lord of Auannes, that then was not aboue eightene yeares of age, who returned to the Courte, and continued there many yeares without will to ſee or ſpeake to any woman, for the ſorrow which he had taken for his Lady, and more then two yeres he wore blacke for mourning apparell. Beholde here the difference betwene a wiſe and diſcrete woman, and one that was wanton and fooliſh, both which ſortes expreſſed different effectes of loue. Whereof the one receiued a glorious and commendable death, and the other liued to long to her great ſhame and infamie. The one by ſmall ſute ſone won and obteyned, the other by earneſt requeſtes & great payne purſued and followed. And till death had taken order, to ridde her from that purſute, ſhe euer continued conſtant.

¶ A

A straunge punishment

¶ A punishment more rigorous than death, of a husband towarde his wife that had committed adulterie.

The Lvij. Nouell.

KIng Charles of Fraunce, the eight of that name, sent into Germany a gentleman called Bernage, Lorde of Cyure besides Amboise. Who to make speede, spared neither daye nor nighte for execution of his Princes commaũdement. In such wyse as very late in an euening he arriued at the Castle of a Gentleman, to demaunde lodging, which very hardly he obtained. Howbeit, when the Gentleman vnderstode that he was the seruaunt of such a kyng, he prayed him not to take it in ill parte the rudinesse of his seruauntes, because vppon occasion of certain his wiues frends which loued him not, he was forced to kepe his house so straight. Then Bernage tolde him the cause of his iourney, wherein the Gentleman offered to doe to the king his maister all seruice possible. Leading him into his house where he was feasted and lodged very honorably. When supper was ready, the Gentleman cõueyed him into a parler wel hãged with fayre Tapistrie. And ỹ meate being set vpõ the table, and he required to sit down, he perceiued a woman cõming forth behind the hanging, which was so beautifull as might bee seene, sauing that her head was all shauen, and apparelled in Almaine blacke. After bothe the Gentlemen had washed, water was brought to the Gentlewoman, who when she had washed she sat down also, without speaking to any, or any word spoken vnto her againe. The Lorde Bernage beholding her well, thought her to be one of the fayrest Ladies that euer he sawe, if her face had not bene so pale and her countenaunce so sadde.

After

After she had eaten a litle, she called for drinke, which one of the seruauntes brought vnto her in a straunge cup. For it was the head of a dead man trimmed with siluer. Wher of she dranke twice or thrice. When she had supped and washed her handes, making a reuerence to the Lord of the house, shee retourned backe againe that waye shee came, without speaking to any. Bernage was so much amased at that straunge sighte, as he wared very heauie and sadde. The Gentleman who marked hym, sayde vnto hym. I see well that you be astonned at that you saw at the table. But seyng your honest demeanour, I wyll not keepe it secrete from you, because you shal not note that crueltie to be done without great occasion. This Gentlewoman whiche you see, is my wyfe, whom I loued better than was possible for any man to loue his wyfe. In such sorte as to marry her I forgat all feare of friendes, and brought her hither in dispite of her parentes. She likewyse shewed vnto me suche signes of loue, as I attempted a thousande wayes to place her here for her ioye and myne, where wee lyued a long tyme in suche reste and contentation, as I thought my self the happiest Gentleman in Christendome. But in a iourney whiche I made, the attempt whereof myne honour forced me, shee forgot bothe her selfe, her conscience, and the loue whiche shee bare towardes mee, and fell in loue with a Gentleman, that I brought vp in this house, whiche her loue vpon my retourne I perceiued to be true. Notwithstanding the loue that I bare her, was so great, as I had no mistrust in her, tyll suche tyme as experience did open myne eyes, and sawe the thynge that I feared more than death. For whiche cause my loue was tourned into furie and dispayre, so great, as I watched her so nere, that vpon a daye fayning my selfe to goe abroade, I hydde my selfe in the chamber where nowe shee remayneth. Into the whiche sone after my departure shee repayred, and caused the Gentleman to come thether.

Whome

"Whome I did beholde to doe that thing, which was alto-
"gether vnmeete for any man to doe to her, but my selfe.
"But when I sawe him mounte vppon the bed after her, I
"stepped forth and tooke him betwene her armes, and with
"my dagger immediatly did kill him. And because the of-
"fence of my wife semed so great, as ẏ doing of her to death
"was not sufficient to punish her. I deuised a torm̄et which
"in mine opinion is worse vnto her than death. For thus I
"vse her, I doe locke her vp in the chamber wherein she ac-
"customed to vse her delightes, and in the companie of hym
"that she loued farre better than me. In the closet of which
"chamber I haue placed the Anatomie of her friend, reser-
"uing the same as a precious Jewell. And to the ende shee
"may not forget him at meales, at the table before my face,
"she vseth his skulle in steade of a cup to drinke in, to the in-
"tent she may behold him (aliue) in the presence of him whō
"through her owne fault she hath made her mortal enemy,
"and him dead and slain for her sake, whose loue she prefer-
"red before mine. And so beholdeth those twoo thinges at
"dinner and supper which ought to displease her moste, her
"enemie liuing, and her friend dead, and al through her own
"wickednesse, howebeit I doe vse her no worse than my self,
"although shee goeth thus shauen: for the ornament of the
"heare doth not appertaine to an adultresse, nor the vayle or
"other furniture of the head to an vnchast woman. Where-
"fore she goeth so shauen, in token she hath lost her honestie.
"If it please you sir to take the payne to see her, I wil bring
"you to her. Whereunto Bernage willingly assented. And
descending into her chamber whiche was very richely fur-
nished, they founde her sitting alone at the fier. And the
Gentleman drawing a Curteine, whiche was before the
Closet, he sawe the Anatomie of the dead man hanging.
Bernage had a great desire to speake vnto the Ladye, but
for feare of her husband he durst not. The Gentleman per-
ceiuin the same, said vnto him. If it please you to speake

vnto

vnto her, you shal vnderstand her order of talke. Therwith-
all Bernage sayde vnto her. Madame if your pacience be
correspondent to this torment, I deme you to be the hap-
piest woman of the worlde. The Lady with teares tricke-
ling downe her eyes with a grace so good and humble as
was possible, spake thus vnto him. Sir I doe confesse my
fault to be so great, as all the afflictiõs and torment that ỹ
Lorde of this place (for I am not worthy to call him hus-
bande) can doe vnto me, be nothing comparable to the sor-
rowe I haue conceiued of myne offence. And in saying so,
she began pitifully to weepe. Therewithall the Gentlemã
toke Bernage by the hande, and led him forth. The next day
morning he departed about the businesse whiche the king
had sent him. Notwithstanding, in bidding the gentleman
fare well, he sayde vnto hym. Sir the loue whiche I beare
vnto you, and the honor and secretes wherewith you haue
made me priuie, doth force me to saye vnto you howe I doe
thinke good (seing the great repentance of the poore Gent-
lewoman your wife) that you doe shewe her mercie. And
bicause you be yong and haue no children, it were a verie
great losse and detriment to lose such a house and ligneage
as yours is. And it may so come to passe, that your enemies
thereby in time to come may be your heires, and inioye the
goodes and patrimonie whiche you doe leaue behinde you.
The Gentleman which neuer thought to speake vnto his
wife, with those wordes paused a great while, and in thend
cõfessed his saying to be true, promising him ỹ if she would
continue in that humilitie, he would in time shew pitie vp-
pon her, with whiche promise Bernage departed. And whẽ
he was retourned towardes the king his maister, hee re-
compted vnto him the successe of hie iourneyes. And
amonges other thinges he tolde him of the beautie of this
Ladie, who sent his Painter called Iohn of Paris, to bring
him her counterfaicte: which with the consent of her hus-
band, he did. Who after that long penaunce, for a desire he

had

had to haue children, and for the pitie hee bare to his wyfe whiche with great humblenesse receiued that affliction, tooke her vnto hym agayne, and afterwardes begat of her many children.

¶ A President of Grenoble aduertised of the ill gouernement of his vvife, tooke such order, that his honestie vvas not diminished, and yet reuenged the facte.

The. Lviij. Nouell.

IN Grenoble (the chiefe citie of a Countrie in Fraunce called Daulphine, which citie otherwise is named Gratianapolis) there was a President that had a very fayre wife, who perceiuing her husbande beginne to waxe olde, fell in loue with a yong mã that was her husbands Clark, a very propre and handsome felowe. Upon a time when her husband in a morning was gone to the Palace, the Clarke entred his chamber and tooke his Maisters place, whiche thing one of the Presidentes men, that faithfully had serued him the space of .xxx. yeres, like a trustie seruaunt perceiuing, could not keepe it secret, but tolde his Maister. The President whiche was a wise man, would not beleue it vpon his light report, but sayde that he did it of purpose to set discord betwene him & his wife, notwithstanding if ꝑ thing were true as he had reported, he might let him see the thing it selfe, whiche if he did not, he had good cause to thinke that he had deuised a lye to breake and dissolue the loue betwene them. The seruaunt did assure him that he would cause him to see the thing wherof he had tolde him.

And

And one morning so sone as the President was gone to the Court, and the Clarke entred into his chamber, the seruaunt sent one of his companions to tel his maister that he might come in good time, to see the thing that he had declared vnto him, he himself standing stil at the dooze to watch that the partie might not goe out. The President so sone as he sawe the signe that one of his men made vnto him, sayning that he was not wel at ease, left the audience, and spedely went home to his house, where he founde his olde seruaunt watching at the chãber dooze, assuring him for truth that the Clarke was within, and that he should with spede to goe in. The President sayd to his seruaunt. Do not tarrie at the dooze, for thou knowest ther is no other going out or comming in but onely this, except a litle closet wherof I alone doe beare the keye. The President entred the chamber, and found his wife & the Clarke a bed together, who in his shirt fell downe at the Presidents feete, craning pardon, and his wife much afraid began to weepe. To whome the President sayde. For so muche as the thing which thou hast done is such, as thou maist well cõsider, that I can not abyde my house (for thee) in this sort to be dishonored, and the daughters which I haue had by thee to be disauaũced and abased. Therfore leaue of thy weeping, & marke what I shall doe. And thou Nicolas (for that was his Clarkes name) hide thy selfe here in my closet, and in any wise make no noyse: when he had so done, he opened the dooze and called in his olde seruaunt, and sayde vnto him. Diddest not thou warrant and assure me that thou wouldest let me see my Clarke and wyfe in bedde together? And vppon thy wozds I am come hether, thinking to haue killed my wife, and doe finde nothing to be true of that which thou diddest tell me. For I haue searched the chamber in euery place as I will shewe thee. And with that he caused his seruant to looke vnder the beddes, and in euery cozner. And when the seruaunt founde him not, throughly astonned, he sayde

to his

"to his maister. Sir I sawe him goe into the chamber, and
"out he is not gone at the doze: And so farre as I can see he
"is not here. Therefoze I thinke the Diuel must nedes car-
"rie him awaye. Then his maister rebuked him in these
"wozds. Thou art a villayn, to set such diuisiõ betwene my
"wife and me, wherefoze I doe discharge thee from my ser-
"uice, and foz that which thou hast done me, I will paye the
"thy dutie, with the aduauntage. Therefoze get thee hence,
"and take hede that thou doest not tarrie in this town aboue
"xxiiii. houres. The Pzesident foz that he knew him to be an
honest and faithfull seruaunt, gaue him fiue oz sixe yeares
wages, and purposed otherwise to pzeferre him. When the
seruaunt (with ill will and weping teares) was departed,
the Pzesident caused his Clark to come out of his Closet.
And after hee had declared to his wife and him, what hee
thought of their ill behauiour, he fozbad them to shewe no
likelyhode of any such matter, and commaunded his wyfe
to attire and dzesse her self in moze gozgeous apparell, thã
she was wont to weare, and to haunt and resozt to company
and feastes, willing the Clarke to make a better counte-
naunce on the matter then hee did befoze, but whensoeuer
he rounded him in the eare and bad him depart, he charged
him after that commaundement not to tarry foure houres
in the towne. And when he had thus done, he retourned to
the palace Courte, as though there hadde no sutche thing
chaunced. And the space of fiftene dayes (contrary to
his custome) he feasted his frendes and neighbours, and af-
ter euery those banketres, he caused the minstrels to play,
to make the Gentlewomen daunce. One daye he seing his
wife not to daunce, he commaunded his Clarke to take her
by the hande, and to leade her fozth to daũce, who thinking
the Pzesident had fozgotten the tresspasse past, very ioyfully
daunced with her. But when the daunce was ended, the
Pzesident fayning as though he would haue commaunded
him to doe some thing in his house, bad him in his eare to

get him

get him away and neuer to retourne. Now was the Clark very sorowfull to leaue his Lady, but yet no lesse ioyfull he was that his life was saued. Afterwardes when the President had made all his frendes and kinsfolkes, and all the countrey, beleue what great loue he bare to his wife: Upon a faire daye in the moneth of May, he went to gather a sallade in his garden, the herbes whereof after she had eaten, she liued not aboue .xxiiii. houres after, whereof he counterfaited suche sorrowe, as no man could suspect the occasion of her death. And by that meanes he was reuenged of his enemy, and saued the honour of his house.

I will not by this Nouell (said Emarsuitte) prayse the conscience of the President, but herein I haue declared the light behauiour of a woman, and the great pacience and prudence of a man. Praying you good Ladies all, not to be offended at the truthe. If all women (quod Parlamente) that loue their Clarkes or seruauntes, were forced to eate such sallades, I beleue they would not loue their gardens so well as they doe, but woulde teare and plucke vp all the herbes bothe roote and rinde, to auoyde those thinges that by death might aduaunce the honor of their stock and ligneage. If sallades be so costly (quod Hircan) and so daungerous in May, I will prouoke appetite with other sawces, or els hunger shall be my chiefest.

Of a Ialous Gentleman.

¶ A Gentleman of Perche, ſuſpecting iniurie done vnto him by his friend, prouoked him to execute and put in proufe the cauſe of his ſuſpicion.

The. Lix. Nouell.



Eſides the countrie of Perche, there were two Gentlemen, which from the tyme of theyr youthe lyued in ſutche great and perfect amitie, as there was betweene them but one harte, one bed, one houſe, one table, & one purſe. Long time continued this perfect frendſhip: betweene whom there was but one will and one wooyde, no difference in either of them. In ſo muche as they not oñely ſemed to be two bzethzen, but alſo they appeared in al ſemblances to be but one man. One of them chaunced to mary. Notwithſtanding they gaue not ouer their frendſhip, but perſeuered in their vſual amitie as they were wont to doe. And whã they happened to be ſtrained to ſtraight lodging, the maried Gentleman would not ſtick to ſuffer his friend to lie with him and his wife. But yet you ought foz frendſhip ſake to conſider that the maried man lay in the mids. Their goodes were common betwene them, and the mariage did yelde no cauſe to hinder their aſſured amitie. But in pzoceſſe of time, the felicitie of this wozlde (whiche carieth with it a certaine mutabitie) could not cõtinue in the houſe, which was befoze right pleaſaunt and happy. Foz the maried man fozgetting the faithfull fidelitie of his friend, without any cauſe conceiued a greate ſuſpicion betwene hym and his wyfe, from whom he could not diſſemble the caſe, but ſharpely tolde her his mynde. She therewithall was wonderfully amazed. Howbeit, he commaunded her to doe all thinges (one thing excepted) and to make ſo muche of his companion as of him ſelfe. Neuertheleſſe

he foz-

he forbad her to ſpeake vnto hym except it were in the preſence of many. All whiche ſhe gaue her huſbandes companion to vnderſtande, who would not beleue her, knowyng that hee had neither by thought or deede done anye thing whereof his companion had cauſe to be offended. And likewyſe becauſe he vſed to kepe nothing ſecrete from hym, he tolde him what he had ſayde, praying hym to tell him the truthe of the matter, becauſe he purpoſed neither in that, ne yet in any other thing, to geue occaſion of breach of that amitie which of long time they had imbraced. The maried Gentleman aſſured him that he neuer thought it, and how they which had ſowē that rumor, had wickedly belied him. Whereunto his companion replied. I knowe wel enough that Ielouſie is a paſſion ſo intollerable as loue it ſelfe. And when you ſhall conceiue that opinion of Ialouſie, yea and it were of my ſelfe, I ſhould do you no wrong, for your ſelfe were not able to kepe it. But of one thing which is in your power, I haue good matter whereof to complayne, & that is becauſe you will concele from me, your maladie, ſith there was no paſſion or opinion whiche you conceiued, that before this time you kept ſecret from me. Likewiſe for my own parte if I were amorous of your wife, you ought not to impute it as a fault vnto me, becauſe it is a fier which I bare not in my handes, to vſe at my pleaſure. But if I kepe it to my ſelfe from you, and indeuour to make youre wife knowe it by demonſtration of my loue, I might then be accōpted that vntruſtieſt frend that euer liued. And for me I doe aſſure you that ſhee is a right honeſt and a good woman, and one that my fanſie doth leſt fauour (although ſhe were not your wife) of all them that euer I ſawe. But nowe ſithens there is no cauſe, I do require you that if you perceiue any ſuſpicion, be it neuer ſo litle, to tell me of it, becauſe I would ſo vſe my ſelf, as our frendſhip which hath indured ſo long tyme, might not bee broken for a woman. And if I did loue her aboue any thing in the worlde, yet

surely I would neuer speake worde vnto her, bicause I doe esteme our frendship better then the greatest treasure. His companion swore vnto him very great othes that he neuer thought it, praying him to vse his house as he had done before. Whereunto he aunswered. Sithe you will haue me so to doe, I am content. But I praye you hereafter you doe, conceiue any sinistre opinion in me, not to dissemble the same, which if you doe I will neuer continue longer in your companie. In processe of time, liuing together according to their custome, the maried Gentleman entred againe into greater Ielousie than euer he did, cõmaunding his wife to beare no more that countenaunce towards him that she was wont to doe. Whiche commaundement she tolde her husbandes companion, praying him after that time to forbeare to speake vnto her, for that she was forbidden to doe the like to him. The Gentleman vnderstanding by wordes and certaine countenaunces, that his companion had not kept promise, he sayd vnto him in great choler. To be Ialous (my companion) is a thing naturall. But bicause thou diddest sweare vnto me by othes not to dissemble, I can by no meanes forbeare any longer. For I did euer thinke that betwene thyne harte and mine, there could be no let and interruption: but to my great griefe and without anye fault on my part, I doe see the contrarie. For as muche as thou art not only very ialous betwene thy wife & mee, but also thou wouldest dissimulate and couer the same, so that in the ende thy maladie and disease continuing so long, is altered into mere malice: and lyke as oure loue hath bene the greatest that hathe bene seene in oure tyme, euen so our displeasure and hatred is nowe moste mortall. I haue done so mutche as lyeth in mee, to auoyde this inconuenience, but sithe thou haste suspected me to be an ill man, and I haue still shewed my selfe to be the contrary, I doe sweare, and therwithal assure thee, by my faith, that I am the same thou thinkest me to be, and therefore from hence-

forth

forth take heede of me. For ſince ſuſpicion hath ſeparated the from my loue and amitie, deſpite ſhall deuide me from thine. And albeit that his companion would haue made him beleue the contrarie, and that hee miſtruſted hym nothing at all, yet he withdrewe his part of his moueables & goodes that before were common betweene them, ſo that then both their hartes and goodes were ſo farre ſeparated as before they were vnited and ioyned together. In ſuche wyſe as the vnmaried Gentleman neuer ceaſſed till he had made his companion Cockolde, according to his promiſe.

Of a Gentleman that died of loue.

¶ The piteous death of an Amorouſe Gentleman, for the ſlacke comfort geuen him to late, by his beloued.

The Lx. Nouell.

BEtwene Daulphine and Prouence, there was a Gentleman, more riche & better furniſhed with beautie, vertue, and good condicions, then with the goodes of Fortune. Who fell in loue with a gentlewomã that for this time ſhall want a name, for reſpecte of her parentes that are come of honorable houſes, & the Gentlemans name alſo ſhalbe vntolde, for like reſpecte, although altogether not ſo honorably allied, as the Gentlewoman that he loued, and yet the hiſtorie very certen and true. And bicauſe his degree was not ſo highe as hers, hee durſt not diſcouer his affection. For the loue which he bare her, was ſo good and perfect, as rather would he haue bene tormented with ꝟ panges of death, then couet the leaſt aduauntage that might redounde to her diſhonor. And ſeing his ſtate to

baſein reſpecte of hers, had no hope to marry her. Where-fore he grounded his loue vpon none other foundation and intent, but to loue her with all his power ſo perfectlye as was poſſible, which in the ende came vnto her knowledge. And the Gentlewoman knowing and ſeing the honeſt amitie, which he bare her, to be ful of vertue, ioyned with chaſt and comly talke, felt her ſelfe right happie to be beloued & had in prize, of a perſonage ſo well condicioned practiſing dayly cherefull countinaunce towardes him (whiche was the beſt rewarde he pretended to haue) whereof he conceiued great eaſe and contentment. But malice the cancred enemy of all reſte and quiet, could not long abide this honeſt and happie life. For ſone frowning at his good happe, (as malice euer accompanieth a well diſpoſed mynde) tolde the mother of the mayden, howe they marueiled that the Gentleman ſhould bee ſo familiar in her houſe, inferring therewithall that the beautie of her daughter was the only cauſe, with whom they ſawe him many times to vſe ſecrete and priuat ſpeach. The mother which by no meanes doubted the honeſtie of the Gentleman, no more then ſhee did of her own children, was very ſorie to vnderſtand that ſome ſhold be offended at ỳ their familiarity. She thought therfore to ſhunne the cauſe of their offence. And at length, (fearing that ſlaunder might be raiſed of malice) ſhe required the Gentleman for a tyme to haunt no more her houſe, as he was wont to doe. A thing to him of harde digeſtion, knowing his own innocencie, & leſſe deſert to be eſtranged from the houſe, for reſpect of the honeſt talke he vſed to the yonge Gentlewomã. Notwithſtanding, to ſtoppe the rage of malicious tongues, he withdrew himſelf, till he thought the brute was ceaſed, and then retourned after his wonted maner: Whoſe abſence nothing abridged his aunciẽt good will. And he began no ſoner to be familiar there again, but he vnderſtode that the mayden ſhould be maried to a gentleman, that was not ſo ritche and noble (as ſemed to hym)

and

and therfore he thought he should receiue great wrong, if she were bestowed vpon that Gentleman, and not on hym, that had bene so long a suter. And thereupon conceiued corage to preferre hym selfe in playne tunes, if choyse were geuen to the maiden. Howebeit, the mother and other of her kynne, sollicited and chose the other Gentleman because (in dede) he was more welthie. Whereat the poore Gentleman fretted with displeasure, seing that his Ladie should for worldly mucke be defrauded of her greatest ioye, by little and little without other maladie, began to languishe, and in litle tyme was so altered, as in his face appeared the visage of death. Neuertheless he could not forbeare the house of his beloued, but continually from time to time made his repaire thether to fede himselfe with the baulme of that beautie, which he thought would prolong his dayes, but it was the onely abridgement. In thende the poyson he sucked by the viewe of that beautie, consumed his strength, and force failing him, was constrained to kepe his bedde. Whereof he would not aduertise her whome he loued, for greuing her, knowing well that she would bee tormented with the newes. And so suffring him selfe to to runne the race of past recourye, lost also his appetite to eate or drinck, and therewithall his slepe and rest fayled, in suche plight as within short space he was consumed in visage and face, as it grewe to bee vglie and cleane out of knowledge. Brought to this lowe estate, one of his frends certified the mother of his mistres, that was a very charitable and kinde Gentlewoman, and loued so well the man, as if all their parentes and kinne had bene of hers, and the maydens opinio they would haue preferred the honestie of him, before the great substãce of the other. But the frendes of the fathers side by no meanes would consent vnto it. Yet the good gentlewoman & her daughter (for all the others frowardnes) vouchsafed to visit ỹ poore gẽtlemã whõ they

kounde, rather declining towards death, thē in hope of life. And knowing his ende to approche, he was shriuen and receiued the holy Sacrament, purposing of present passage by panges of death, neuer to see any of his frendes againe. Being in this case and yet seing her, whome he counted to be his life and saufkie, felte suche soudden recouerie, as hee threwe hym selfe aloofte his bedde and spake these wordes vnto her. What cause hath driuen you hither (Mistres myne) by takyng paines to visite him, who hath one of his feete alreadie within the graue, the other stepping after with conuenient speede, for execution whereof you bee the onely Instrument. Howe so sir sayde the mother. Is it possible that hee, whome we so derely loue, can receiue death by our offences? I pray you sir to tell me, what reason leadeth you to speake these wordes. Madame sayde he, so long as I could, I dissembled the loue, that I bare to my deare Mistres your daughter: So it is that my parentes and frendes speaking of a mariage betwene her and mee, haue clattred thereof moe nedeles woordes then I desired, by waying the mishap that might insue, and nowe doth happe past all hope not for my particular pleasure, but bicause I knowe with none other she shalbe so well intreated nor beloued as she should haue bene with me. The benefit which I see that she hath lost, is the most perfect frende & best affected seruaunt that euer shee had in this woorlde, the losse wherof sommoneth death to arrest the carcase, that should haue bene imployed for her seruice, which intierly was cōserued and should haue bene for her sake. But sithe nowe it can serue her to no purpose, the simple losse, shall redounde to greatest gaine. I meane my selfe (good Ladies) bothe that lieth bewrapped in death before your faces, whose withered clammes hath catched ẏ same within her reach, and hath warned the clocke to tolle the dolefull bell for his poore louyng ghoste, nowe stretchynge out for the winding shete to shrowde his maigre corps, all forworne

with

with the watche and toile, that such poore men (affected w̄ like care) do feele. It is my selfe, that erst was rouing a- mid the troupe of Courtlie knightes decked with comely face, whose hewe dame nature stayned with the colours of her golden art. It is I ẏ of late was loued of ẏ Nymphe, and earthie Goddesse, who with courtinge countenaunce imbraced the place where I did stande, and kissed the steps wherein I trode. It is my selfe I saye, that whilom in paineful blisse, did bath my selfe, and fedde mine eyes with the happie viewe of the heauenliest creature ẏ euer God did make. And by forgoing of those ioyes by to to much mi- shap, and sacred famine of cursed mucke, I am thus pined as ye see, and wrapte in hopeles state. The mother and doughter hearinge this complainte, did their indeuour to cheere him vp, and the mother saide vnto him. Be of good courage sir and I promise you my fayth, that if God giue you health, my doughter shal haue none other husband but you, and behold her here, whom I commaund to make you present promise. The mayden weeping with a virginall shamefastnes, cõsented to her mothers hest. But knowing when he was recouered, that he should not haue her, and ẏ the mother was so liberal of her fayre woords, to recomfort him and allaye if she might restore him. He said vnto them, that if those woords had bin pronoũced three monethes past, he had bin the luckiest & most happie gentlemã of Fraũce: But helpe offred so late, was past beliefe and hope. But when he saw, that they went about to force him to beleeue it, he said vnto them. Now that I see ye go about to pro- mise the good tourne which can neuer chaunce vnto mee, yea although cõsent ioyned with vnfayned promise desires the effect, for respect of the feeble state wherein I am. Yet let me craue one thing at your hands, farre lesse then that yee offer, which hitherto I neuer durst be so bolde to aske. Whereunto they both assented and swore to performe it, intreating him not to be ashamed to requyre it. I humbly

beseech

" beseech ye (quoth hee) to deliuer her into mine armes whō
" yee haue promised to be my wife, and commaunde her to
" imbrace and kisse me. The mayden not vsed to such priuie
sutes, ne yet acquainted with such secrete facts, made some
difficultie, but her mother gaue her expresse cōmaundemēt
to doe it, perceyuing in him no likelihode or force of a man
to liue. The maiden then vpon that commaundement, ad-
uaunced herselfe vppon the bedde of the poore pacient, say-
ing vnto him. Sir I beseech you to be of good cheere. The
languishing creature, so hard as he could for his extreeme
debilitie, stretched forth his faint consumed armes, and w̄
al the force of his body imbraced the cause of his death, and
kissinge her with his colde and wanne mouth, helde her so
" long as he could. And then spake vnto the mayden. The
" loue which I haue borne you hath bin so great, and ꝑ good
" will so honest, as neuer (mariage excepted) I wished anye
" other thinge of you, but that which I presentlye haue,
" throughe the wante whereof and with the same I will ioy-
" fully render my spirite to God, who is the parfaicte Loue,
" and truest Charitie, whoe knoweth the greatnes of my
" loue & the honestie of my desire: humblie beseeching him,
" (that nowe I hauing my desire betweene mine armes,) to
" interteigne my ghost w̄in his blessed bosome. And in say-
ing so he caught her againe betweene his armes with such
vehemencie, as ꝑ feeble hart not able to abide that assault,
was abandoned of all powers and mouinges: For the in-
stant ioye so dilated & stretched forth the same, as the siege
of the soule gaue ouer, making his repaire & flighte to his
Creator. And because the senceles bodye rested withoute
life, it gaue ouer his holde. Howbeit the loue, which the
Damosell had still kept secrete, at that time shewed it self
so stronge and mightie, as the mother and seruauntes of ꝑ
dead gentleman had much a do to seperate that vnion: but
by force they haled away the liuing, almost deade with the
deade. And the funerall was done wyth honourable exe-

quies

quies: but the greatest triumph was spent in teares, weepinges and crpes, specially by the gentlewoman, which so much more were manifeste after his death, as before in his like time they were dissembled, bestowinge them as an expiacion or sacrifice, to satisfie the wrong she had done vnto him. And afterwards (as I haue heard tell) she was maried to one, for mitigaciō of her sorow, that neuer was partaker of the ioye of her harte. See here good Ladies an Image of perfect loue, that so muche had seazed vpon thaffections of this amorous Gentlemā, as the pange neuer gaue ouer, till death (the rest of all troubles) had deuided life from the body. Yet some perchaūce for the desperate part of this hopeles louer, will terme him to be a fonde louing foole: and say that it is not meete that they should neglecte theyr liues for womens sakes, which were not created but for their helpe and comforte. And that being true as verifyed and auouched by Scriptures, there is no cause of feare to demaunde that of them, which God hath enioyned them to giue vs. In deede a sensuall loue, and such as is grounded to satisfye beastly lust, is a thinge horrible to Nature, and abhominable in the sight of him that made both those creatures, whom he fraughted with reason and knowledge, for refusall of those vices, which are onely to be applied to beastes voyde of reason. But loue founded in the soyle of Uertue, for auoyding carnall lust exercized in the state of Wedlocke, or first begonne and practized for that ende, is very ciuil and to be honoured. And if that loue attaine not equall succesle, through parents default or vnkindnes of frendes or other humane accidents, if that loue so perce the hart, or otherwyse afflict the pacient with dispaire of helpe, and so occasioneth death, it is not to be termed follie or dotage, but to be celebrated with honourable titles. The honest amitie then of this gentleman, borne lōg time to this gentlewomā, meriteth euerlasting praise.

For

For to finde such great chastitie in an amorous hart, is rather a thing deuine then humaine. A mocion moued aboue amongs the heauenly route, and not an Act wrought in ꝑ grosenes of mans infirmitie.

¶ A Gentlewoman of the Courte, very pleasauntly recompenced the seruice of a kinde seruaunte of hers, that pursued her with seruice of loue.

The 61. Nouell.

IN the Courte of king Fraunces, the first of that name, not longe sithens Frenche king, the graunde father of Henry the 3. of that name now raigning. There was a Gentlewomã of good grace and interteignment, wanting not both minde and witte, such as the like of her sexe, are not to seeke, vnder what climate, soeuer they be borne & bred, whose comly demeaner, curteous behauiour, and eloquent speache, was agreeable to her other qualities of natures giftes: whereby she gayned the hartes and good minds of nombers of seruauntes, with whom shee was cunning ynough to spend her time, (hauing respect to the saufie and saufgard of her honor, which she preferred before all other solace) by such delectable consumptiõ of time, as they that could not tell howe els to imploie their leasure, thoughte themselues most blessed, if they might attaine the delightfull presence of this well nourtered Dame. For they that made greatest assuraunce of her fidelitie, were in dispayre, and the most desperat were yet in some hope to winne her. Howbeit in decepuing the most nomber, she could not forbeare intirely to loue one, who for his part was not able to plaie the counterfait, to colour the substance of his longe

pursute

purſute. But as nothing is ſure & ſtable, their loue tourned to diſpleaſure, and by frequent renewing of what was well knowen, the hole Court was not ignorant, what deuocion thone did beare to thother. One day the Gentlewoman, aſwell to let him know that his affection was not beſtowed in vaine, as to make him to feele ſome ſmart and paine for his louing ſeruice, the more louingly to forde him on, with preety morſells of her diſſembling concept, made ſhow vnto him of greater fauour, then euer ſhe did before. For which cauſe he ẏ was faultles either in deedes of armes, or in proweſſe of loue, begã liuely & valiãtly to folow her, to whom long before with gentlenes and humilitie he had many times bin a ſuppliante. Who fayning that ſhee was not able any longer to reſt obſtinate, made ſemblance of a womanly pitie and accorded to his demaund. Telling him that for reſpect of his tedious trauaile, ſhe was nowe diſpoſed to go to her chamber, (which was in a Gallerie of the Caſtell where that time the kinge did lie) where ſhee knew was none, that could hinder, what they two intẽded. Willing him not to fatle but ſo ſone as he ſaw her depart the place ſhe was in, to folow after to her chamber, where he ſhould finde her alone, tarying for him with good deuocion. The gentleman beleeuinge her appointmente, was readie to leape out of his ſkinne for ioye: and therewithall began to dalye and ſport with other Ladies, attending the time of her departure. She wanting not the practize of any fine ſleight or ſubtile pollicie, moſt pregnaunte in birds of her Ayrie, called two of the greateſt Ladies to the preſent chamber window and ſaid vnto them. If it may pleaſe you good Ladies, I will diſcouer vnto you the pretieſt paſtime of the world. They which hard the grief of Melãcholie, beſoughte her to tell what it was. Thus it is (q ſhee) Such a gentleman, whom you know very well, to be both honeſt and vertuous, hath longe time (as partlie you haue by to much experience ſeene,) gone about diuers wayes to

winne

winne that, which he shall neuer get. For when I began to applie my fancie towards him, he (vncõstant) ceased not to couet and folow other Ladies with like pursute hee did me: whereat I conceyued such, more then spitefull hatred, as notwithstanding my outwarde semblaunce, I coueted reuenge. Nowe therefore Maistresse, Occasion hath lente me a portion of opportunitie, to be requited of his vaine and fickle sute. Which is, that hauinge appointed him to come to my chamber, whither he meaneth presẽtly to follow me, it maye please you to giue heedefull eye and watch: and ỹ when hee hath passed alonge the Galerie, and is gone vp the stayers, that both of you wil recline your heads out of this window to helpe me singe the holding of the Caroll, ỹ I meane to chaunte vnto him. And then shall you see the raging choler of this Gentleman, that at other times presumed to be a quiet Suter: wherat perhaps through his malapert boldnes, it cannot dash his blushles face, but yet if he do not deale vnto me like spiteful reproch in open hearing, I know full well in hart he will wishe me x. M. mischifes. This cõclusion was not spoken wout treble laughter. For there was no gentleman in all the Courte, ỹ had warred so much with the woman kind as hee, & yet welbeloued & esteemed of euery one, that listed not to be intrapped within his daunger. Therfore these Ladies thinking to carie awaye some part of the glorie, which one alone hoped to atchieue vpon this gentleman, were contente to assent to the others liking. So sone then as they saw her depart, that purposed this enterprise, they began to espie the countenaunce of the betrayed partie, who pausèd not lõg, before he exchaunged the place. And when he was oute of the chamber, the Ladies trayned after, to lose no part of ỹ sport, and went the faster that he might not be out of theyr sight. And he that doubted not the successe, threw his cape about his necke to hide his face, & went downe the staiers out into the Court, and afterwards mounted vp againe.

But

But perceyuing some approche which he was loth should be a witnes, he wēt downe againe, returning another way on the other side. All which the Ladies sawe, vnknowen to him. But when he came to the stayers where he beleeued verely, ỳe might surely enter into his Maistres chāber: ỳ two Ladies put theyr heads out of the window, and incontinently percepued the gentlewoman aloft, crying out a lowde, A theefe, a theefe: Whervnto they two below aū- swered with so vehement voyce, doubling the others outcrie, as all the castell ronge of it. I leaue for you to consider, in what despite this gentleman fled to his lodginge, but not so closely, but that he was ouertaken by those that knew this misterie: who afterwards oftētimes reproched this fact vnto him, speciall she that had deuised ỳ reuenge. But hee had armed himselfe with aunswers and defences so readely, as he told them that he foreknew their deuise, and mente nothing by his pilgrimage but to solace his beloued. For of her loue long time before he was out of all hope, as hauing reasonable proofe by his longe pursute and seruice. Howbeit the Ladyes would not hold his excuse for a veritie, which euen to this day hangeth in suspence.

Of Ro-

Of Rolandine the chaſte.

¶ The honeſt and maruellous loue of a mayden of noble houſe, and of a gentleman that was baſe borne, and howe a Queene did impeche and let their mariage, with the wiſe aunſwere of the mayde to the Queene.

The 62. Nouell.



Here was in Fraunce a Queene, who in her company & traine brought vp many maydens, ỹ were iſſued of great and honourable progenie. Amonges other that ſerued this Queene there was one named Rolandine, which was nere kinne to the Queene. But ſhe for a certaine diſpleaſure conceyued againſt her father, bare vnto the ponge gentlewoman no greate good will. This Maiden, although ſhee was none of the fayreſt, yet ſo wyſe and vertuous as many great Lords and perſonages made ſute to her for mariage, to whom ſhe rendred for earneſt ſutes, cold aunſweares: becauſe ſhee knew her father to be more bent to keeping of money, then to thaduaunce-ment of his children. And her Maiſtreſſe (as is before ſaid) bare vnto her ſo little fauour as they which eſteemed the Queenes good grace, would neuer make anye ſute vnto her. Thus by fathers negligence and Maiſtres diſdaine, ỹ poore gentlewoman remayned long time vnmaried. And as ſhee that forcibly was payned, not ſo much for griefe of mariage, as for that ſhee was not required or ſued vnto, be-came ſo werie of worldly life, as deuoutly ſhe bent herſelfe to GOD, and by forſakinge the toyes and brauerie of the Courte, paſſed her time in prayer, or els in other vertu-ous exerciſe. And by withdrawing herſelfe to this kinde of life, ſhe ſpent her youth ſo ſoberlie & deuoutly as was poſ-ſible for a woman to do. When ſhe approched nere ỹ age of xxx. yeares, there was a gentleman a baſtarde borne, of

right

right honorable houſe euery curteous & honeſt perſonage, whoſe riches & beautie was ſuch, as no Lady or gentlewoman for pleaſure would haue choſen him to huſbād. This poore gentleman was voide of frends for maintenaunce of lyuing, & vnhappie in mariage ſutes, although he purſued many, till at length he borded this poore Gentlewomā Rolandine: for their Fortunes, cōplexions & condicions were very like, & by vſe of ſeuerall complaints made one to another, ech of them fell in erneſt loue with the other. And being both thrall vnto miſhap, they ſought deſired cōforte by vertuous & honeſt talke. And by ẏ vſe & frequētaciō greater loue increaſed & grew betwene them. Thoſe which had ſeene ẏ maiden ſo ſtraungly retired frō wonted demeanor, as ſhe would ſpeake to none, now marking her continuallie to interteigne the baſtard gentleman, incontinently cōceiued ill opinion of her, & told the mother of ẏ Queenes maids (called Modeſta) ẏ ſhe ought not to ſuffer ſuch familiaritie betweene them. Which report Modeſta reuealed to Rolandine, ſayinge ẏ diuers perſons did ſpeake euill of her, for ẏ ſhe vſed to talke wō the baſtard, that neither was of ſufficient abilitie for her to marie, ne yet of beautie worthie to be beloued. Rolandine which daily was more rebuked for her auſteritie of life, thē for worldly toyes, ſayd vnto Modeſta her gouernelle. Alas, mother you ſee ẏ I cānot » haue a huſband according to the worthines of my bloud, & » that dailye I haue auoyded thoſe which be beautifull and » ponge: for feare to incurre the inconuenience wherinto I » haue ſeene other to fall. And now hauing choſen this wiſe » and vertuous gentleman, who preacheth vnto me words » that be good and godly, what wrong do they to me ẏ make » this report, ſith in this honeſt order I do receiue conſolaci- » on of my griefes: The good old Lady who loued the mai- » den (which ſhe called maiſtreſſe) as herſelfe ſaid vnto her. » I ſee well, that you are worſe dele withall at your father » and maiſtres handes then you deſerue. Howbeit ſith ſuch »

cc repoꝛt is made of youꝛ honoꝛ, you ought to refuſe to ſpeake
cc vnto him, although he were youꝛ naturall bꝛother. Rolan-
cc dine weeping ſaide vnto heꝛ: Mother foꝛ ſo much as you
cc adꝛiſe me theꝛunto, I wil peꝛfoꝛme youꝛ requeſt, although
cc it be veꝛy ſtraunge ẏ without ſlaunder, a woman can haue
cc no comfoꝛt oꝛ ſeeke fꝛeedome without miſꝛepoꝛt. The ba-
ſtaꝛd gentleman, as he was befoꝛe accuſtomed, came to vi-
ſite heꝛ, but ſhe told him (a faꝛre of) thoſe woꝛds which heꝛ
gouꝛneſſe had ſaid vnto heꝛ. And with teaꝛes pꝛayed him
to ꝛefꝛaine foꝛ a time to ſpeake vnto heꝛ, vntill the bꝛute &
ꝛumoꝛ were ſomewhat appaiſed: which thing he did at heꝛ
requeſt. But duꝛing this long time, eithꝛeꝛ of them hauing
loſte theiꝛ conſolacion, began to feele ſuch toꝛment within
themſelues, as ſhee foꝛ heꝛ paꝛt neuꝛ felte the like. She
ceaſed not fꝛom pꝛaying vnto God, fꝛom goinge on pilgri-
mage, and faſting: foꝛ this vnacquainted loue, bꝛought heꝛ
to ſuch diſquiet as ſhe could not ꝛeſt the ſpace of one houꝛe.
Wheꝛewith the noble baſtaꝛd was no leſſe toꝛmẽted. But
he, which had alꝛeadie minded in haꝛt to loue heꝛ and puꝛ-
ſue heꝛ till maꝛiage, and hauing ꝛeſpecte (foꝛ loue ſake) to ẏ
honoꝛ he ſhould acquiꝛe by the ſame, thought to finde mea-
nes to declaꝛe his minde vnto heꝛ, & aboue al things to get
the good wil of heꝛ gouꝛneſſe: which he did, declaring vn-
to heꝛ the miſeꝛie wheꝛein heꝛ pooꝛe maiſtreſſe ꝛemayned,
which was voide of al comfoꝛt & other fꝛendſhip. Then the
pooꝛe old Lady Modeſta, gaue him thankes foꝛ the honeſt
affection that hee bare to heꝛ maiſtreſſe. And deuiſed mea-
nes, how the two louers might impaꝛt theiꝛ minds toge-
theꝛ. Rolandine fayned heꝛſelfe to be ſicke of a Mygꝛim &
paine in heꝛ heade, the bꝛute of whoſe maladie was feaꝛed
to be gꝛeateꝛ then it was, and ſo concluded betweene them
that when heꝛ companion weꝛe gone into ẏ chambeꝛ, they
two ſhould ꝛemaine togetheꝛ alone to ſatiſfie eth otheꝛ w̃
mutuall talke. The baſtaꝛd Gentleman was veꝛy glad,
and ꝛuled himſelfe holy by the counceil of the Gouꝛneſſe,
in ſuch

in such sort as when he liste, he spake vnto his louer & vertuous Lady: but this contentacion did not indure. For the Queene who loued her but a little, inquired what Rolandine did so long in her Chamber, and one made aunswere that it was by reason of her sickness. Albeit there was another which knewe to well the cause of her absente, sayde vnto her, that the iope which Rolandine had to speake vnto the bastard was able to ease her Mygrim. The Queene which found out the veniall sinnes of other, by mortall offences in herselfe, sent for her, & forbad her in any wyse not to speake vnto the bastard, except it were in the hall or within her owne Chāber. The Gentlewoman made as though she vnderstode her not, but mildlie aunswered that, if shee knew any talke betweene them might offend her maiestie, she would neuer speake vnto him againe. Notwithstanding she determined to finde out some other secret meanes that ỳ Queene should not know of their meeting. Which was this. The wednesday, fridaye and Saturday, the gentlewomā vsed to fast, & for that purpose kept her Chamber w̄ her Gouernesse Modesta, where she had leysure to talke (whilest the reste did suppe) with him whom she began so earnestlie to loue. And as cōstrainte of time did force their talke to be shorte, the greater was their affection in vtteraunce of the same: because for the doing therof they stole time, as the theefe doth his desired praye. This order of their contentacion could not proceede so secretely, but that a certaine barlet a yeoman of the Chamber, chaūced to see him resort vnto her vpō a fasting day, & told it in such place wher of some hearer it was disclosed to ỳ Queene herselfe, who was so sore offended as neuer after ỳ time ỳ poore bastard gentlemā durste once attēpt to go into ỳ maidēs chāber againe. And to thintēt ỳ he might not lose ỳ cōmodity of talke w̄ her, whō he so derely loued, oftentimes he fayned himselfe to go on pilgrimage, & in ỳ euening returned to ỳ Church & chapell of the Castel, in the habite of a frier.

or Iacobin (so wel disguised & altered, as no creature could know him) and thither repaired the gentlewoman Rolandine, with her Gouernesse to enterteigne him. He marking the great loue that she bare him, feared not to say vnto
"her: Madame, you see ẏ daunger which I hasard for your
"seruice, and the warnings that the Queene hath giuen for
"our talke. You see on thother side what a father you haue,
"who careth not after what sort he bestow you in mariage.
"And you hauinge refused so many greate states and noble
"men, I know not one, either farre or neare, that is minded
"to haue you. I confesse my selfe to be but poore, and that
"you may marie diuers gentlemen of greater reputacion &
"richesse, then I am. But if loue and good wil were deemed
"treasure and richesse, then woulde I presume to be the ri-
"chest gentleman of the world. God hath indowed you with
"great plentie of goodes, and you are yet in choise to haue
"more: And if I were so happie as you would vouchsafe to
"chose me for your husband, I would accompt my selfe to be
"vnto you both husband, frend and seruaunt, all the dayes of
"my life. And againe, if you should take one equall to your
"nobilitie (a thinge very harde to finde) he woulde rule and
"gouerne ouer you, and haue more respecte to your goodes,
"then to your person, to your beautie then to your vertue: &
"in triumphinge with dispence of that you haue, hee maye
"chaunce to intreate you otherwise then you deserue. The
"desire of this contentacion, and the feare that I haue, least
"you should graunte it to some other, do force me to beseech
"you, that by one only meanes you would make me happie,
"and your selfe the most contented & best intreated womã ẏ
euer was. Rolandine giuing eare to ẏ cõmunicatiõ which shee herselfe ment to haue pronounced, aunswered him w̃ stoute courage. I am very glad & wel pleased ẏ you haue
"begunne ẏ sute your selfe, which I of long time haue deter
"mined to breake vnto you: for which cause these two yeres
"past as you know, I haue not ceased to thincke and deuise

all

all the reasons and arguments for and against you, that I could inuent. But in thende for so much as I do meane to take vpon me the state of Matrimonie, it is time that I begin to chose such husbande, with whom I shall in my conscience like to liue at rest and quiet, all the dayes of my life. And amidde all the troupe of my thoughts in choise, I cãnot finde anye one, were he neuer so faire, riche or noble, w̃ whom my hart and minde can so well agree and match as with you. I know ꝑ by marying of you I shall not offende God, but rather do the thinge that hee cõmaundeth. And touching my Lord my father, he hath had so litle consideracion of my preferment, & so often refused it, as the law now will suffice, that I giue my selfe in mariage withoute his consent, and therefore cannot disenherite me, or worthely thincke ill of me. And by hauing a husband (a thing appertinent to women kinde) such as you be, I shall esteeme my selfe the richest woman of the worlde. As for the Queene my maistresse, I ought not to take any care or remorse of conscience by displeasing her, to obey God: for she hath not ceased to hinder that aduauncement, which in my youth I mighte haue had, and by paine and diligence towardes her did well deserue. But to thend you may vnderstand, that ꝑ loue and good will which I beare you, is founded vppon vertue, and honor, you shall promise me, ꝑ if I doe accorde this mariage, you shall neuer purchase or require the consũmacion thereof, vntill my father be deade, or els do finde some meanes to make him consente hereunto. Which the bastard gentleman willingly did graunt: and vppon these promises & termes, either of them gaue eche other a ringe in the name of mariage, and did kisse together in ꝑ Church before God, whom they toke to witnes of their assurance, & neuer after betwene them was any other priuie fact cõmitted, but only kissing. This litle easemẽt of mind did greatly satisfie ꝑ harts of these 2. perfect louers: & were a great while wout seing eche other, liuing only by this assurance.

There was no place where honour might be gotten, but thereunto the bastarde made his repaire with so great delight, as he thought he could neuer be poore for respect of that riche wife which God had prouided for him. Which wyfe in his absence, did euer continue her absolute amitie towards that gentleman. And although many made sute, yet they receyued none other aunswere from her but denial, and for that she had remayned so long time vnmaried, she was minded neuer to take vppon her that state. This her aunswere was so generall as the Queene heard of it, and asked her for what occasion shee was so determined. Rolandine saide vnto her, that it was to obey her: for that shee knew shee would neuer suffer her to marie, because in time and place where she might haue bin honorablie matched to her well liking, she denied the same, and that ỹ vertue of pacience, had taught her to content herselfe with the state wherein she was. And still as she was sued for in mariage, she rendred like aunswere. When the warres were ended, and the bastarde returned to the Courte, shee neuer spake vnto him in open presence, but wente alwayes into some Church to interteigne him vnder colour of Confession: for the Queene had forbidden both him and her, that they should not talke together, vnlesse it were before companye vpon paine of losse of their liues. But honest loue, which feareth no defence, was more prest to find meanes, for their mutuall talke, then their enemies were ready to seperate the same: and vnder the habite or colour of all the religions they could deuise, they cõtinued that honest amitie, vntil the king remoued into a house of pleasure, not so nere as ỹ Ladies were able to go on foote to that Church, as they were to the Church of the Castell, which was not situate in such conueniente wyse for their purpose, as they could secretely repaire (vnder colour of confession) to talke together: notwithstanding if on the one side occasiõ fayled, loue found out another for their cõtentment. For there ar-

riued

riued a Lady to the Court, to whom the baſtard was very nere kin. This Lady wᵗʰ her ſonne were lodged in the kings houſe, & the chamber of this yong prince was far beyond ẏ body of the lodging, where ẏ king himſelfe did lie: but ſo nere vnto Rolandines Chamber as he might both ſee and ſpeake vnto her for their windowes were properlie and directly placed at either corner of the houſe. In which chamber (being ouer the hall) were lodged al ẏ Ladies of honor, the cõpanions of Rolandine. Who beholding many times the yong king at ẏ window, cauſed the baſtard to be aduertized therof by her gouerneſſe: who after he had well beholden the place, made as though he had great delighte to read vpon a booke of the knightes of the Round Table, ẏ lay in the chamber window of the yong king. And when euery man was gone to dinner, he prayed the yeomã to ſuffer him to make an end of the hiſtorie, & to ſhut him within the chamber. The other which knew him to be the kinſmã of his maiſtres, & an aſſured mã, ſuffred him to read ſo lõg as he liſte. On thother ſide Rolandine came vnto her window, who to find occaſion to tarrie there the lõger, fayned to haue a paine in her leg, & dined & ſupped in ſo good time, as ſhe wẽt no more to ẏ ordinarie of the Ladies. Wher ſhe began to ſet herſelfe a worke about the making of a bed of Crimſon ſilke placing her worke vpon the window, as deſirous to be alone. And whẽ ſhe ſaw no mã to be there, ſhee interteigned her huſbãd, to whõ ſhe might ſpeake in ſecret wiſe, ſo as none was able to vnderſtande them. And when any perſon came nere, ſhe coughed & made a ſigne ẏ the baſtard might withdraw himſelfe. They ẏ were appointed to watche them, thought vndoubtedlie ẏ their loue was paſt and ended, becauſe ſhe went not out of the Chamber, wher ſafely he coulde not ſee her, for that hee was forbidden the ſame. Vppon a day the mother of the yong Prince being in her ſonnes Chamber, repaired to the windowe where that great booke did lie, and ſhee had not ſtaied there long, but one of Rolandines fellowes which was within her

Chãber ſaluted her. The Lady aſked her how Rolandine did, who ſayd ẏ ſhee might very wel ſee her, if it were her pleaſure. And cauſed her to come to the window wyth her night geare vppon her head. And after they had talked a while of her ſickneſs they withdrew themſelues. The other Ladie eſpying the great booke of the Round Table, ſayde to her yeoman of the Chamber. I do marueile much why
" yong men do imploie themſelues to read ſuch follies. The
" yeoman made aunſweare, ẏ he marueled much more, why
" mẽ of good yeres, coũted & eſteemed wiſe & diſcrete, ſhould
" haue greater delight in reading of ſuch trifles, thẽ thoſe ẏ
" were yong. And to iuſtifie ẏ maruel hee told her how her
" coſin ẏ baſtard did ſpend 4. or 5. houres in a day to read vp-
" pon the ſame. Upon which words by and by ſhe conceyued the cauſe of his deepe ſtudie, & charged him to hide himſelf in ſome place to mark what he did. Which cõmaũdemẽt ẏ yeoman performed, & perceiued ẏ the booke which the baſtard read vpon, was the window out of which Rolandine talked with him: and therewithal called to remembrance many words of the loue which they thought to keepe very ſecreete. The next day he reherſed the ſame vnto his maiſtreſſe, who ſent for her coſin the Baſtard, & after many tales told him, ſhe forbad him to reſorte thither any more, & at night ſhe gaue like warning to Rolandine, threatninge her ẏ if ſhe continued in her fond & fooliſh loue, ſhe woulde tell the Queene the whole circumſtaunce of her lighte demeaner. Rolandine (nothing aſtonied wt thoſe woords) did ſweare ẏ ſith the time ſhe was forbidden by her maiſtreſſe the Queenes maieſtie, ſhe neuer ſpake vnto him: the troth whereof ſhee might learne aſwel of the gentlewomen her companions, as of other ſeruauntes of the houſe. And touching the window whereof ſhe ſpake, ſhe boldly auouched that ſhe neuer talked with the Baſtard there. Who (poore gentleman) fearing that his affayres would be reuealed, kept himſelf farre out from daunger, and longe time after

did

did not retourne to the Courte. Howbeit, he wrote many times to Rolandine by such secret meanes as for all the espiall that the Queene had put, there passed no weeke but twise at least shee hearde newes from him: and when one meanes did fayle hym, hee deuised another, and many tymes sent a litle Page clothed in colours (so often altered and chaunged as hee was sent) who staying at the gates when the Ladies passed by, delyuered his letters priuelye in the middest of the preasse. Upon a time as the Queene for her pleasure walked into the fieldes, one which knew the Page and had charge to take heede vnto those doings, ranne after him: But the Page which was a fine boye, doubtinge leaste hee should be searched, conueyed hym selfe into a poore womans house, where spedelie he burnt his letters in the fier, ouer whiche a potte was boyling with meate for her poore familie. The Gentleman that followed him stripped him naked & searched his clothes, but when he sawe that he could finde nothing, he let him goe: & when he was departed, the olde woman asked him wherefore he searched the boye. Who aunswered, to finde letters which he thought he had about him. Tush (quod she) serch no more, for he hath hidden them very well. I praye thee tell me (quod the Gentlemã) in what place, hoping to haue recouered the same. But when hee vnderstode that they were throwen into the fire. He well perceiued that the boye was craftier then him selfe. All whiche incontinently hee tolde the Queene, notwithstanding from that time forthe, the bastard vsed no longer the Page, but sent one other of his olde seruauntes, whom he faithfully trusted, & he (forgetting feare of death whiche hee knewe well the Queene threatned on them that had to doe in those affaires) tooke vpon him to carrie his maisters letters to Rolandine. And when hee was entred the Castell, hee wayted at a certen doore placed at the foote of a paire of staiers, by whiche the ladies passed to and fro: where he had not taried long, but

a yeoman

a yeoman which at other times had sene him, knewe him and thereof tolde the maister of the Queenes house, who sodainly made searche to apprehende him. The fellowe which was wise and politique, seing that diuers loked vpō him a farre of, retourned towardes the wall (as though he would haue made his water) tearing his letters in so many small peces as he could doe for his life, and threw them behinde an olde gate: who had no soner done the facte, but hee was apprehended and thronghly searched, and when they could finde nothing about him, they made him sweare whether he had brought any letters or not, vsing him partly by rigor, and somewhat by faire perswasion to make him confesse the truthe. But neither through promise or threate, they could get any thing at his handes. Report hereof was brought to the Queene, and one of the companie gaue aduise that searche should be made behind the gate: where he was taken. In which place they founde nothing but litle peces of letters. Then they caused the kinges Confessor to be sent for, who recouering the peces layd them vpon a table, and red the lettre throughout, where the veritie of the mariage (so much dissembled) was throughly discifered, for the Bastard in those letters called her nothing els but wife. The Queene not meaning to conceale the fault of her kinswoman (which she ought to haue done) fil into a great rage and storme, cōmaunding that the poore man by al meanes possible, should be forced to cōfesse the true tenor of that letter, to thintent that the same by his affirmacion might not be denied. But doe what they could, they were not able to
" make him alter his former tale. They which had commis-
" sion to examine him, brought him to the Riuerside and did put him into a sack, saying that he did lie before God and ꝯ Queene, and against an approued trothe. He that had ra-
" ther lose his life then accuse his Maister, prayed them to
" suffer him to haue a ghostly father that like a Christian he
" might ende his life, and so entre the ioyes prepared for all

repentant

repentant sinners, & after that he had clered his conscience, »
he said vnto them. Maisters, tell my Lorde and maister the »
Bastarde, that I recommend vnto him the poore estate of »
my poore wife and children, trusting his honour will haue »
consideration of thē for my sake, for so mutch as with good »
and loyall harte, I doe imploie my life for his honor and »
suretie. And with me doe what you list, for you get nothing »
at my handes that shall redounde to his hurt and prejudice. »
Then to put him in greater feare, they bounde him within »
the sacke & threwe him into the water crying vnto him, if »
thou wilt tell ỹ trouth thou shalt be saued. But they seing »
that he would make no aunswer drew him out againe, ma- »
king reporte to the Queene of his faith & constancie. Who »
then sayd, that neither the king nor she were so happy in ser »
uauntes as the Bastarde was, that had not wherewith to »
recompence such fidelitie. The Quene did what she coulde »
to get him from his seruice, but the poore fellowe would in
no wise forsake his maister. Notwithstanding in thende by
his said maisters leaue, he was put into the Queenes ser-
uice, where he liued many happy dayes. The Queene after
she vnderstode by the Bastardes letters the trouth of the
mariage, sent for Rolandine, and in great rage, called her
caitife and miserable wretche, in stede of cosin, reciting vn-
to her the disparagement of her noble house, and the villa-
nie she had committed against the honorable race whereof
she came, & against the will of her which was her Queene,
kinswoman and maistres, by cōtracting mariage without
the licence of the king and her. Rolandine, whiche of long
time knewe the small deuocion that her maistres bare vn-
to her, vsed her with like affection, and bicause she was we-
rie of the Quenes displeasure, thinking that her correctiō
vttered in presence of many proceded not of loue, but rather
to make her ashamed, abandoned feare, and conceiuing cou-
rage, when she sawe the Queene in her chiefest rage, with
gladsome & firme countenaunce answered her in this wise.

Madame,

" Madame, if you can not conceiue the malice of your owne
" harte, I will ſet before your eyes the rancour and diſplea-
" ſure of the ſame, which malice of long time you haue borne
" towardes the Lorde my father and me: whereof madame,
" I doe feele the ſmarte, to my great loſſe and griefe. For if it
" had pleaſed you to haue borne vnto me that good will which
" you doe to thoſe that are not ſo nere about you as I am, I
" had before this tyme bene placed and preferred in mariage
" as well to the likyng of your honour as to my greate ſatiſ-
" faction: But you haue regarded mee as one forgotten,
" and cleane out of fauour, in ſuch wyſe as all the noblemen,
" with whome I might haue bene matched, haue contemp-
" ned me, as well through the negligence of my Lorde my fa-
" ther, as for the like eſtimation and accompt that you haue
" made of me: by meanes whereof I fell into that diſpaire
" which if my health could haue ſuſteined the order and ſtate
" of Religion, I would willingly haue taken it vpon me, to
" haue ſeuered my ſelfe from the continuall hatred and enuy
" which your grace ful rigorouſly hath ſhowen vnto me. And
" being in this diſpaire, I chaunced to finde out him, that is
" proceded of ſo noble a houſe as my ſelfe. If the loue of twoo
" perſones is to be regarded, that meane to accompliſhe the
" holy ſtate of wedlock. For you knowe that his father in no-
" bilitie farre excelled myne. He hath of long time loued me,
" and made great ſute vnto me, but you madame, whiche ne-
" uer pardoned me for any ſmall offence, ne yet prayſed anye
" good acte of myne (although you know by experience, that
" I haue not vſed to talke of matters of loue or other world-
" lie affaires, and that I minded aboue all thinges to leade a
" more religious life then any other) doe make it an hainous
" matter that I ſhould talke with a Gentleman (ſo infortu-
" nate as my ſelfe) by whoſe loue, I thought or ſought for
" nothing els but the eaſe and comfort of my minde. And ſe-
" ing my ſelfe voyde and fruſtrate of mine expectatiō, I ſhall
" imploie indeuour ſo well to ſeeke my reſt and quiet, as you

haue

haue gone about to diſpoyle me of the ſame. And then will
celebrate the mariage which is already aſſured by promi-
ſes and by a ring. Wherefore Madame I thinke that you
doe me great wrong by terming me to be a wicked womã,
ſithe that in ſo great & perfect amitie I might haue founde
occaſion (if I would) to haue committed euill: But there
was neuer betwene him and me any priuie fact, other then
that is honeſt, hoping that God wil ſhewe me ſuch fauour,
as before the mariage be conſumat, I ſhall obtaine the fa-
uour and good will of my Lorde my father. Wherby I do
neither offende God, nor my conſcience: for I haue taried
till the age of. xxx. yeares, to ſee what you and my father
would doe for me. I haue kept my ſelfe ſo chaſt and honeſt,
as no man liuing is able to laye the cõtrarie to my charge.
And with that reaſon wherewith God hath indued me, be-
ing olde and voyde of hope, to finde a huſbande agreable to
my nobilitie, I am determined to marie ſutche a one as I
like beſte, not for the pleaſure or ſatiſfaction of the eye (for
you knowe he is not faire) nor for luſt of the fleſh (for there
hath bene no carnall fact committed) ne yet for pryde, and
couetouſnes (for he is but poore and of litle eſtimation) but
I haue a ſincere reſpecte and pure regarde to his vertue,
honeſtie and good grace, for whiche the worlde doth geue
him praiſe, and the great loue alſo that he beareth me, ma-
keth me hope to finde with him great reſt and quiet. And
after I had deuiſed and conſidered the good and euill that
might inſue by this my choiſe, I ſtill perſiſted in that mind,
and haue well wayed and pondered the ſame theſe twoe
yeares paſt, being throughly reſolued to waſte and ſpende
the reſt of my dayes with him: which I meane ſtill firmely
to kepe in deſpite of all the tormentes and cruelties, that
the greateſt enemies I haue, be able to make my poore bo-
die ſuffre, no not death it ſelfe ſhall force me to refuſe hym.
Wherefore Madame, I beſeech you to accept this my rea-
ſonable excuſe, whereunto your ſelfe is nowe made priuie,

and ſuf-

" and suffer me to liue in that peace, whiche I hope for euer
" through him, in these mine elder to finde. The Queene wel
" marking her stoute wordes and countenance, and knowing
" the same to be very true, was not able to aunswere her a-
" gaine with reason: but continuing her rebukes and taun-
" ting checkes began to waste, and at length fell out into this
" rage. Ah presumptuous drabbe, and caitife wretch, in stede
" of humbling thy selfe and repenting thine offence, thou car-
" pest boldly without dropping or sheading any teare, wher-
" by thou doest manifestly declare ỳ stubbornes and hardnes
" of thy harte. But if the king, and thy father, would follow
" mine aduise, they should put thee into a place, where force
" should make thee to vse other language. Madame said Ro-
" landine, because you haue accused me of bolde talke & pre-
" sumptuous speache, I meane from henceforth to holde my
" peace, except you geue me leaue to make mine aunswere: &
" when she was cõmaunded to tell forth her mynde, she said.
" It is not my part Madame boldly or without ductifull re-
" uerence to speake before your maiestie (whiche is my mai-
" stresse, and the greatest Princesse in Christendome.) The
" wordes which I haue said, be not spoken (Madame) of pre-
" sumption but to declare, that I haue none other aduocate
" to pleade for me, but the trouth of my cause. And therefore
" am bolde without blushing feare to disclose the same, ho-
" ping that if your grace did knowe the secret concept of my
" poore faithfull harte, you woulde not iudge mee to be that
" woman which you terme me to be. I doe not doubt that a-
" ny mortall creature vnderstanding my behauiour in those
" matters wherwith I am charged, would blame me, for my
" liberall speache, sithe I am sure that God and myne honor
" in no point I haue offended. The cause which maketh me
" thus without feare to saye my minde is, because I am assu-
" red that he whiche seeth my harte, is the geuer of my life
" also, and remaineth with me. If then such a Iudge & Guide
" doe order and dispose my life, why should I be afrayd of the

that he

that be ſubiect vnto his iudgement? And why then Madame, ſhould I wayle or wepe, ſithe mine honor and cõſcience without remorſe or grudge do wel like of theſe my doings, which if they were newly to begin, I would not repent me to doe the ſame againe. But it is you (Madame) that hath good cauſe to wepe, as well for the great diſpleaſure, euer borne me from my youthfull dayes, as for the wrong you doe me nowe by reprehending me before the face of all the worlde for a faulte, whiche ought rather to be imputed vnto you, then vnto me. For if I had offended God, the king, or you, my parentes, or my conſcience, I were well worthy to be counted very obſtinate, if with great repentaunce I did not lament the ſame, but for a dede that is right good and vertuous, I ought not to wepe, whereof there was neuer other rumor ſpred but verie honorable, except the ſlaũder which your ſelfe hath raiſed, wherby your deſire to increaſe my ſhame and dishonor appeareth to be greater then the reſpecte you haue to conſerue the nobilitie of your houſe, or kindred wherof you come. But becauſe it pleaſeth you Madame, ſo to vſe me, I purpoſe not to withſtand you. For when you ſhall ordeine that puniſhment for me, which you like beſt, I ſhal reioyſe no leſſe to ſuffer the ſame without deſert, then you be willing to beſtowe it vpon me without cauſe. Wherefore Madame, commaunde my Lorde my father to put me to what torment you will, for the executiõ wherof you ſhall not finde him vnwilling. And I ſhall not be altogether without ioy, to ſee him preſt and redie to obey your wilfull mynde. But I haue a father in heauẽ, who (I am ſure) will geue me ſuche pacience, as I ſhall be able to abide & indure, what afflictiõ ſoeuer you prepare for me, in whõ only is al my hope & truſt. The queene ſo angrie as ſhe could be, commaunded her out of her ſight, and to be ſhutte into a chamber alone, that none might ſpeake vnto her. In which impriſonment ſhee was not depriued from the companie of her gouerneſſe, by whoſe meanes ſhe let the Baſtarde

ſtarde vnderſtande all her fortune, and ſhe likewiſe vnderſtode what he thought beſt for her to doe. Who thinking that the ſeruice which he had done to the king, would ſtand him in ſome ſtede, came vnto the Court with all ſpede, and founde the king in the fieldes, to whome hee rehearſed the trouth of the facte, beſeching his Maieſtie that vnto him (who was a poore Gentlemã) he would ſhewe ſuch fauour and grace as the rigor of the Queenes maieſtie might be appeaſed, and the mariage fully conſumat and ended. The king made him none other aunſwere, but ſaide: Is it true that thou haſt maried her? Yea ſir ſaide the Baſtarde, by wordes only as yet: but if it pleaſe your maieſtie, the ſame may be throughly made perfit. The king nodded his hed, and for that time geuing him none other aunſwere, hee returned ſtraite to the Caſtell, & when he was almoſt there, he called the Captaine of his Guarde, and cõmaunded him to apprehend the Baſtarde. Notwithſtanding one of his frendes which knew the kinges countenaunce, willed him to abſent himſelfe, & to retire to one of his houſes, and if the king made ſerche after him (as he ſuſpected) he would incontinently aduertiſe him thereof, that he might auoyde the Realme: and when the kinges diſpleaſure was pacified, he would ſend him worde. The Baſtarde beleued him and vſed ſuch diligẽce, as the Captain of the Guarde could not finde him. The king and the Queene counſelled together what they might doe with this poore damſell, whiche was their kinſwoman, and by the Queenes aduiſe it was concluded, that ſhe ſhould be ſent home to her father, with the true aduertiſement of the whole matter. But before ſhe was ſent, diuerſe Diuines & learned men of the Clergie, were demaunded their opiniõs of the priuat mariage, and the Counſell alſo did ſit vpon the ſame, who concluded that for ſo muche as the mariage was not celebrated but by wordes, it might eaſely be vndone, vntill one of them had acquited the other. Which the king commaũded to be

perfor-

perfoꝛmed foꝛ the honoꝛ of the house wherof she came. But she made them aunswere, that in all thinges she was redie to obey the king, except it were in matter againſt her con- »
ſcience, ſayinge, that thoſe whome God had coupled toge- »
ther by heauenly aduiſe, could not bee ſeparated by mans »
decree, pꝛaying them not to attempt a thing ſo vnreaſona- »
ble: Foꝛ if loue & good will founded vpõ the feare of God, »
were the true & ſure knot of mariage, then she was ſo wel »
bounde & tied, as neither Iron, fier, oꝛ water coulde bꝛeake »
that band, but death alone. Wherunto, & to none other con- »
ſtitutiõ, she was determined to rendꝛe her ring & othe, pꝛay- »
ing them not to ſpeake, do, oꝛ pꝛoceede, to any thing ẏ were »
contrarie vnto that. Wherin she was ſo ſtedfaſtly reſolued, »
as she had rather die by keping her faith, then liue to denie »
the ſame. The cõmiſſioners, retoꝛned to the king & Queene »
the conſtant anſwere of the Gentlewoman, and when they ſawe no remedie could be found to make her renounce her huſband, they conueyed her home to her father, in ſuch pitiſull ſoꝛte, as by the way she paſſed, eche man and woman la- mented her foꝛtune: And albeit shee had offended, yet the puniſhement & affliction she ſuffred, was ſo great & her cõ- ſtãcie ſo firmely bent, as she made her fault to be eſtemed a vertue. The father receiuing thoſe pitifull newes, would not ſee her, but ſent her to his caſtell that ſtoode in a foꝛeſt, which he had befoꝛe time builded foꝛ an occaſion, woꝛthy to be reherſed hereafter, & there kept her in pꝛiſon a lõg time, ſending woꝛde vnto her, that if shee would foꝛſake her huſ- band, he would take her foꝛ his doughter, and ſet her at li- bertie. Who foꝛ all that offer was firme and conſtant, and loued her pꝛiſon the better by obſeruing the bond of ma- riage, then al the libertie of the woꝛld, without the hauing of her huſband. And it ſemed by her countenaunce, that al the paynes she had indured were moſt pleaſaunt paſtimes, foꝛ that she ſuffred the ſame foꝛ his ſake, whome she loued beſt. What ſhould I ſpeake of men? This Baſtarde at

length became vnmindeful of her, and fled into Alemaine, where he had many frendes. Whose inconstancie afterwardes appeared so manifest, as the vertue of true & perfit loue outwardly seming to remain in him, was conuerted into the vice of odible ingratitude, whereby it was euidēt, that the causes that made him so hotte a Suter, were the vglie monsters of Auarice and Ambition, where he fill in loue with an Almaine Ladie, he forgetting to visite her w̄ letters, that for his sake had susteined so great and manifold tribulations. For what rigor or affliction soeuer Fortune offred, coulde neuer before that tyme put awaye the meanes from writing one to an other, but onely the vices before named, and the foolish & wicked loue wherin he suffred him selfe to fall. Which sudden and newe loue so perced the hart of Rolandine, and so fiercelie assailed the same, as she could no more content and rest her self. Afterwards vpon the viewe of his wrytinges and letters, seing him to be so chaunged and altered from his accustomed stile: what tormentes then she suffred, they doe knowe that haue felte and tasted the bitter cup of like passions. And yet her perfecte loue would not suffer her to fire certaine iudgement vpon this aduertisement, and therefore deuised secretly to sende one of her seruauntes whome shee trusted best, to espie, and priuely make serche whether the same were true or not. Whiche her seruaunt being retourned, bee truely tolde her, howe the Bastarde Gentleman, was in loue with a Ladie of Almaine and howe the brute was, that he made great sute vnto her for mariage, because shee was very ritche. These newes brought sutche extreme sorrowe and grief to the harte of poore Rolandine, as being not able to abide the bruntes thereof, she fill very sicke. Those whiche vnderstode the originall of her disease, sayde vnto her (in the behalfe of her father) that for so muche as nowe she knewe the great villanie of the Bastarde, shee might iustly forsake hym: persuading her thereunto with the

greatest

greateſt reaſons they could deuiſe. But for all thoſe perſuaſions, no remedie could be founde to make her chaunge opinion. In whiche her laſte tentacion ſhee declared the great conſtancie wherewith ſhe was affected. For like as loue was decreaſed in him, ſo the ſame augmented in her, whiche remained and perſiſted in deſpite of all the malice of the worlde. For that loue, whiche fayled, and was fledde from him, tourned and retired into her: and when ſhe perceiued her ſelfe alone fully poſſeſſed with that whiche before was deuided betwene them bothe, ſhee determined to obſerue the ſame vntill death had made an ende of her fatall dayes. Wherefore the goodnes of God (which is perfect charitie and true loue) had pitie vpon her ſorrowe, and regarded her pacięce in ſuch wiſe, as within few daies after the Baſtarde died in the purſute of the other Ladies loue. Whereof Ralandine being aduertiſed by thoſe which ſaw him buried, prayed thē to trauell with her father by hūble ſute, ỳ he would vouchſafe to giue her leaue to ſpeake vnto him. Who at their requeſt, (although he neuer ſpake vnto her before, during the tyme of her impriſonment) incontinently was pleaſed ſo to doe. And after that he had herde the diſcourſe of her iuſte reaſons, in place of rebukes, and his promiſe made to kill her (which many times he threatened by woordes) he cleped her betweene his armes, and bitterly weping ſayde vnto her. Daughter I wel perceiue »» your vertue and conſtant mynde, which farre ſurmounteth »» any thing that is good in mee, for if there be any faulte or »» lacke of conſideration of your eſtate, I am the principal oc- »» caſion thereof. But ſith the goodnes of God hath thus or- »» deined it, I wil make ſatiſfactiō for mine offence paſt. And »» afterwardes he ſent her home to his houſe, where he vſed & interteigned her like his dereſt and eldeſt daughter. In the ende ſhe was demaunded in mariage by a Gentleman of name and armes, to her eſtate and bloud not inferior. Who was bothe wiſe and vertuous, and ſo louingly regarded

Of Rolandine the chaſte.

Rolandine (whome he many times viſited) as he attributed vnto her the prize of prayſe for that, which others accõpted worthy of rebuke: knowing that her intent of former loue was grounded vpon the foundation of vertue. The mariage was well liked of her father, was acceptable to Rolandine, & was forthwith concluded. True it is that a brother she had, the only inheritour of her fathers landes, who would not agree that she should receiue her childes portiõ, obiecting ỳ she had diſobeied her father. And after ỳ death of the good old man (her father) her brother vſed her very rigorouſly & cruelly. For her huſbande was but a ponger brother, & had wherewithal ſcarce able to liue. For which want, God bountifully prouided, For ỳ brother, whoſe gredie minde did craue in one daie to be poſſeſſor of al, by ſodain death was depriued, as well of his ſiſters portion as of al ỳ reſt. By whoſe death she remained the whole inheritor of ỳ honorable houſe. And afterwardes liued an honorable and ſtately life, in great wealth & pleaſure, & was welbeloued & duetifully intreated of her huſband. Finally hauing by her huſbãd two goodly ſonnes, she very vertuouſly brought thẽ vp, & finiſhing her aged dayes, she ioyfully rẽdred her ſoule vnto him, in whom of long time she had repoſed her onely truſt & cõfidence. Now good ladies let thẽ come forth ỳ be the cõmon diſplaiers of womẽs incõſtancie, & let thẽ bring forth in preſence, ſo good & perfect a huſband as this was a good & conſtant woman, indued with ſemblable faith & vertue. I am ſure to bring this to paſſe, the matter wilbe very difficult. And therfore I had rather diſcharge them of this my chalenge, then put them to payne to trauell and ſeeke for ſuch a one. Whoſe vertuous loue and godlye continuance of the ſame, is worthye to bee ſounded by Trompe of fame to the extreame partes of the Earth. And yet I would aduiſe ponge Ladies and Gentlewomen to beware how they be inamoured, and purſue the trade of loue: contrarie to the will of parentes, who ought in time of infancie

to be

to be their guide, and alſo in riper yeares to procure them mariage according to their worthines: which they may & better and ſoner do, if by vertuous education they arme & inſtruct their tender and youthly age.

The wiſe Gouernement of of a Gentlewoman.

¶ The VViſedome of a woman to withdrawe the fooliſhe loue of her huſband, vvherwith he vvas tormented.

The 63. Nouell.

MAny yeares are not yet expired ſithēs there was a Gentlewoman of noble houſe (whoſe name I maye not diſcloſe,) ſo wiſe and vertuous as ſhee was wel beloued and eſteemed of her neighbours: Her huſband (not without good cauſe) truſted her in all his affaires, which ſhe ordred and gouerned ſo wiſely, as her houſe by her meanes grew to be one of the richeſt and beſt apparelled, that was in the countrie wherein ſhe dwelled. Liuing thus a long time with her huſbande, by whom ſhee had many goodly children, their happie ſtate and felicitie (after which daily inſue their contraries) began to decaie, becauſe that he, defatigated with to much quiet, abandoned reſtfull life, to ſeeke after troubleſom trauell: and had gottē a cuſtome whē his wyfe was a ſleepe to riſe from her ſide, & not to returne vntill it was very nere morning. The gentlewoman miſliking this maner of life, became very ielous of her huſbād, and yet made as though ſhe miſtruſted nothing. But that ſpiteful paſſiō

entred her stomacke so farre, as in thende shee forgot thaf-fayres of her house, the diligence of her person, and good gouernment of her familie, like vnto one that verely sup-posed that (do what shee could) she had lost the fruite of her paine & labour, which was the great loue of her husband, for continuance whereof shee spared no trauaile or toile. But losinge altogether as shee manifestly perceiued, shee grew to be so careless of her household state & huswiferie, as speedelie appeared the fruites of slouth and negligence. For her husband for his part spent without order, and she staied her trauell frō matters of household: In such wise as the same was growen to so great penurie, as the highe and stately woodes were felled downe to the stubbe, & the goodly maners deliuered into the handes of sir Mathevve Morgage. One of the gentlewomans frendes and kinse-men which knew her disease, tolde her of her fault, and re-buked her for that careless life: Sayinge, that if loue of husband could not make her to haue respecte of household profite: zeale and regarde of poore childrens state, ought to moue her thereunto. This good councell of her frende tou-ched her very nere, and the pitie of her childzen at length made her to recouer her spirits, and to assaie by all meanes possible to wynne againe her husbandes loue. See here the nature of honestie, and condicion of well disposed life: This Gētlewomā was infected w̄ the plague of Ielousie (an or-dinarie disease in women,) and not without iust cause. For what Grisilde could suffre her wedded husband, assembled in bedde, in depthe of slepe, to rise and runne a straie like a wylde horse, neying after the straied female kinde of that sorte? This good Gentlewoman I saye almoste besides her wittes for alienation of her deserued loue, nowe growen careles of worldly thinges, as you haue heard, is vpon the louing admonicion of her nereste frend, pricked with natu-rall regarde of Infantes: launching forth that festred sore of Ialosie, serched meanes by policie to wynne that which Ialousie could not get, whiche was her husbandes loue,

whom

whom with curteouse wincly shame not before assemblie of neighbours, or straungers audience, by huy and crye as many doe, but in domesticall boundes, within the compas of housholde, and within the circuit of secret chambre, shee made him blushe from former life, and to deteste all filthie and beastly factes in future time. Suche be the frutes of a right matrones life. Suche be the gaines of the milde and quiet wife. Such a wife I say, is the honor of her husbands name, the onely vpholder and restoratife of his renowme & fame. But turne we againe to the experienced wisedome of this Gentlewoman. The next day she diligētly watched by falle slepe, the time of his vprising from her. And when he was gone, shee rose likewyse, putting her night gowne about her, causing the bedde to bee made, and saying her prayers, she waited the retourne of her husband, who being retired into his chambre, she came before him to kisse hym, and brought him a basen with water to washe his handes. And musing at the vnaccustomed order of his wife, he tolde her that he was come but from the priuie, and therfore needed not to washe. Whereunto she answered, that although it were no great matter, yet cleanly and honest, to washe ỹ handes, being come from an vncleane and stinking place, by which wordes she was desirous to let him understande his follie thereby to hate his dishonest and filthie life. But for all that wyse and pretie taunte hee amended nothing at all: Howbeit she continued that order the space of one yere. And when she sawe, that her diligence could not reforme his vsuall trade of lyfe, on a tyme wayting for her husbād, whiche taried longer then he was wont to doe, shee was desirous to seeke hym out, and went from chamber to chamber, till at lengthe shee founde hym a bedde in a back chambre and a sleepe with the moste ill fauoured, foule and filthiest Slutte of her house, such a homely pece and durty beaste, as the lyke was not to be founde in a countrie.

The gentlewoman beholding this manerly sight, thought to teache him a lesson howe to remembre the difference betwene the sweete and pleasaunt lodging, with a fayre and duetifull wife, and the vncleanly couching with a stinking and lothsome Queane. Wherupon she caused a burden of Strawe and worne rushes to be brought vnto her, setting the same on fier in the middes of the chamber, but when she sawe her husband almoste choked with the great smother, she waked hym, and plucked him out of the bed by the
" armes, crying fier, fier. If the husbande were ashamed, and offended with him selfe to be founde a bedde, with such an vncleanly matche, by his faire and honest wife, I referre the iudgement to all indifferent men, that be coupled with
" like wiues. Thē his wyfe said vnto him Sir I haue assaied
" the space of one whole yeare, to withdrawe you from this
" vile and wicked life, by gentlenes and pacience, and shewed
" exāple by washing you without, that you might also clense
" your selfe within. But when I sawe myne endeuour could
" take no place, I attempted to helpe my selfe with the ele-
" ment that shall ende and consume vs all. Assuring you
" sir that if this doe not amende you, I cannot tell if the se-
" conde time, I be able likewise to ridde you from the daun-
" ger that may happen. I praye you sir to thinke and consi-
" der that there is no greater dispayre or dispite, then that
" whiche is conceiued of loue. And had I not set before mine
" eyes the feare of God, I could not haue practised suche pa-
" cience, as I haue done. The husband very glad, that he had escaped that misfortune, promised her, neuer to geue occasion, that shee should take like payne to bring him to order. Whiche promise the Gentlewoman very willingly beleued, and with her husbandes consent, she expelled out of her house, that which did displease her moste. And frō that time forth, they louingly liued together, and the former faultes for this reformed life, was an increase of ioyful, and mutuall delightes. I beseche you Gentlewomen (if there be any

in the

in the place where this Nouell is redde) if God doe geue you such husbandes to beware of dispaire, vntill ye haue assayed all possible meanes to reduce them to good ordre. For there be in the daye. xxiiii. houres, in euery of whiche houres, a man may chaunge opinion. And a woman ought to accompt her selfe moste happie, if by pacience and long suffraunce she wynne her husbande, excepte Fortune and frendes haue procured one that is alreadie perfecte. This example, therefore maye serue al sortes of maried women. Let her take example that list (quod Dame Partelot) For it is impossible for me to vse suche long pacience. But let Dame Partelot, speake her pleasure, I would aduise all husbandes to lyue honestly with their honest wiues, and doe praie to God to plant mo such wiues to store the barren worlde that neuer or seldome bryngeth forth such increase.

The pol-

The policie of a good wife.

¶ The notable charitie of a vvoman of Tours towards her husbande.

The 64. Nouell.



Another Hystorie of like example I thincke meete to bee annexed: which telleth howe in the Cittie of Tours in Fraũce, there was a fayre and honest wyfe which for her vertues was not onelye beloued, but also feared and esteemed of her husband. So it was ỹ he followinge the fragilitie of those men, which be wearie of delicate fare, fell in loue with a woman of the Countrye that kepte his house there, and many times departed from Tours to visite his countrie woman, where he commonlye taried ii. or iii. dayes before his retorne. And when he came home againe to Tours, he ordinarely did take cold, whereof his good wife had much a do to recouer him. And so sone as he was hole, hee failed not to returne to the place, where pleasure made him forget all his former griefe and sicknes. His wife which aboue all thinges loued his life & tendred his health, seinge him commonly brought into so poore estate, went into the Countrye, where she found out the yong woman that her husband loued. Unto whom (not in choler but with smilinge cheere and countenaunce) shee
« sayd: How she knew well that oftentimes her husband re-
« paired thither to visite her, and that she was not well con-
« tent that she vsed him no more carefully, for when he came
« home from her he toke so great cold as long time after she
« had much a doe to recouer him. The poore woman as wel for the reuerẽce of the Dame, as for the trouth of the matter, could not denie the facte, and therefore falling downe vppon her knees, asked her forgiuenes. The maistresse required to see the bedde and chamber, where her husbãd

lais,

late, which she perceiued to be so cold, ill fauoured, and out of order, as she pitied and lamented the case. Wherefore incontinently she sent for a good bedde furnished with shee-tes, blanquets and Coueriet, accordingly as she knew her husband loued, causing the chãber to be repaired, hanged, and dressed vp, after ẏ best maner. She gaue her also plate and vessell to serue her husband at meales, together with a punchion of wyne, spice, and other confections. And then prayed the woman to sende home her husbande, no more so sicke, but to interteigne and cherishe him after the most de-licate and carefull maner she could. The husband taried not long at home, but after his olde custome wente againe into the countrie to visit his woman, and marueiled much to finde her poore lodging so trimlye garnished, but much more he wondred when callinge for drincke he sawe her to bringe him a siluer potte, asking her where she had gotten all those goodes. The poore woman sayde vnto him wee- ,,
ping, that it was his wife, which hauing so great pitie vp ,,
pon his ill intreatie, had furnished her house, and had com- ,,
mitted vnto her the charge and regard of his health. Shee ,,
seing the greate humilitie and goodnes of his wyfe, and ẏ shee for ẏ vnkindnes he shewed vnto her, had requited him with that curtesie and louing kindnes, well pondering and regarding his owne frailtie, & the honeste demeanor of his wyfe, afterwards rewarded the poore womã with money, and perswaded her from that time forth to liue an honest life. And then returned home to his wyfe, confessing vnto her the negligence of his dutie, and ẏ excepte she had vsed ẏ kinde of curtesie and goodnes towards him, it had bin im-possible for him to forsake and giue ouer his vngodlye life. And afterwardes vtterly abandoning his behauiour past, they liued together in great rest & quietnes. Beliue me if ye list (to you good wiues I speake) ẏ there be verye few ill husbands, whom the paciẽce & loue of ẏ wyfe, is a-ble at lengthe to winne, or els they be more harde then

stones

stones, which ỳ soft & feble water by cõtinuance of time, is able to weare & make holow. For when the wiues lenitie shall enter his careless stomacke, & her pacient sufferaunce renew remembraunce of dutie, then doth conscience bite, & gnaw ỳ cancred cord ỳ tyeth vp the good consideracion of his office, and regarde to maried life. Then doth age abhorre the lewdnes of former life, and commeth home to cherish ỳ holsome Nourice, of his pleasant state. Then regardeth he the bande wherewith Matrimonie hath bound him, and both at bedde and borde obserueth the ful perfections of the same.

A Miracle at Lions.

¶ The simplicitie of an old vvoman, that offered a burning candle to S. Iohn of Lions.

The. 65. Nouell.

IN ỳ Church of S. Iohn at Lions, there was a verye darke Chappell, and within the same a Tombe made of stone, erected for great personages, with pictures liuely wrought, and about the same Tombe there doe lie manye worthie knightes of great fame & valiãce Upon a hote Sõmers day, a souldiour walking vp and downe the Church had great delight to sleape, & beholding that darcke chappell which was colde and fresche of ayre, thoughte to reste vpon the Tombe as other did, besides whom he layed him downe to sleepe. It chaunced that a good old woman very deuoute, came thether when the souldior was in the depth of his sleepe. And after shee had sayd her deuociõs, wyth a

waxe candle in her hand, she would haue fastened the same vpon the Tombe, and repayring nere the place where the souldiour lay, desirous to sticke it vppon his forehead, thinking it had been ỳ stone, the waxe would take no hold The old woman, which thought ỳ cause that her candle would not cleaue was the coldnesse of the Image, she warmed ỳ souldiors forehead with the flame of the candle, to sticke it faste. But the Image which was not insensible, beganne to crye oute, whereat the poore woman was so afraide, as like one straught of her wittes, she brake into exclamacion crying. A miracle, A miracle. They within the Church bearing an outcry of a miracle, ranne in heapes as though they had been madde, some to ring the belles, and some to see the miracle. Whom the good woman broughte to see the Image, which then was remoued. Wherat many began to laughe. But diuers priestes not willing so to giue ouer so great a Miracle, determined afterwards to vse ỳ tombe in reuerence, therby to get money.

A Doctour

A Doctor of the Lawes.

¶ A Doctor of the Lawes boughte a cup, who by the subtiltie of two false varlets, lost both his money and the cuppe.

The 66. Nouell.



TO conclude our nomber of Nouels, I haue thought good (gentle reader) to bringe in place a Doctour and his wyfe, to giue thee a merye farewell: because thou haste hitherto so frendly and pacientlye suffred thy selfe to be stayed in reading of the reste: Wherefore with a pleasaunt Adieu in a shorte & merie tale, which discloseth the subtiltie of two falle knaues to beguile a poore Doctor and his wyfe, I meane to end. And therfore do saye, that in the Citie of Bologna in Italie, there was a worshipful Doctor of the Lawes, called Maister Florien, which in other thinges sauing his profession, was but a slouen, and of so ill behauiour as none of his facultie the like. Who by sauing of many crustes, had layed vp so good store of Crownes, as he caused to be made a very great and costly Cup of siluer, for payment of which Cup he went to the Goldsmithes house, and hauinge payed for the siluer, the guilt, and for the fashion, being without his Clarke to carie it home, he prayed the Goldsmith to lend him his man. By chaūce there were newly come to the Citie, two yonge men that were Romaynes, which ranged vp and downe ỳ streates with eares vpright, to viewe & marke euery thinge done in the same, bearing about them counterfait Jewels and lingots, guilt of S. Martines touche, to deceiue him ỳ would play the foole to buy them. One of them was called Liello, and the other Dietiquo. These two Marchātes being at good leasure to wander the streates, beholding the passangers to and fro, by fortune espied the Goldsmithes man,

man, who (to set forth the workemanship and making of ꝯ cup) caried the same open. These Gallants bearing a spite to the cup, more for the siluer than for other malice, purposed to inuent some sleight to get the Cuppe, and a farre of with slie pase, followed the Goldsmithes man, of whom they craftelie inquired of the owner of the Cup, and where hee had lefte maister Florien. When they had concluded vppon their enterprise. Liello (the fineſt boye of them both) wēt straight to buy a Lamprey of great price, and hiding ꝯ same vnder his cloake, repayred directly to Maister Doctours house. Where finding his wyfe of semblable wit & behauiour that her husband was, with vnshamefast face & like grace, said vnto her. Maistresse, Maister Florien your husbande hath sent you a fishe, and prayeth you to dresse it, and to make dinner readie, because he bringeth a company of other Doctours with him. In the meane time he requireth you, to retorne vnto him the Cuppe againe, which hee sente you this morning, by the Goldsmithes man, because he had forgotten to stampe his armes vppon it. The womā receyuinge the fishe, franckly deliuered him the Cup, and went about to prepare dinner. Liello (which hunted after gaine but better caught his pray) hied him a pace, and conueyed himselfe with speede to the house of one of his Countriemen, and there reioyced with his companiō, attending for the comming of the Royster Dietiquo, who taried in ꝯ Towne, waiting and viewing what pursute was made after his fellowe. Sone after Maister Florien retourned to his house, and finding his dinner more delicate thā it was wont to be, marueyled, and asked his wyfe who was at all that coste. His wyfe very scornefully aunswered: Why sir, haue you forgotten that you sente me word this morning, that you woulde bring home with you diuers Gentlemen to dinner? What (quoth the Doctour) I thincke you be a foole. I am not (sayd shee) and for better witnesse you sent mee this fishe, that I would you had been better aduised

"sed before you had bestowed such coste. I assure the (quoth
"he) I sent thee no fish, but belike it was some folish knaue
"that had forgotten his arrant and mistaken the house. But
"howsoeuer it was wyse, we at this time will be content to
"fare well at other mennes charge. Why sir (sayd his wife)
"call your selfe to better remēbraunce. For he that brought
"the Lamprey, came to me for your Cup by this token, that
"you would haue your armes engrauen vppon the same. At
those woords the poore Doctour, after he had discharged
three or foure Canōs laden w̄ haile shot of scolding woords,
wente out into the streate, running hither and thither, de-
maunding of al thē he met, if they saw none carrie a Lam-
prey home to his house. And you would haue said if you had
seen the Doctour wyth his hode hanging at one side, that
he had been out of his wittes. Dietiquo stode still in a cor-
ner, and beheld the Doctours frantike order, & albeit that
he was sure the stealinge of the Cuppe, by Liello his com-
panion was impossible to be knowen, yet being sorye that
the Lamprey cost so much, determined also to play his part,
and seinge the Doctour stayed from making further com-
plaintes & pursute, he went home to the Doctours house,
where smiling with a good grace and bould cōtenaunce,
"saide vnto his wyfe. Maistresse Doctour good newes,
"the cup is founde. One whom you know, caused the same
"to be done in sport, to bring your husband Maister Florien
"in a choler, who now is amonges diuers of his frendes, ie-
"sting at the pleasaunt deceipt, and hath sent mee hither to
"fetch their dinner, wherein they praye you to remember
"the Lamprey, and to come your self to take part of ꝑ same,
"bicause they purpose to be merry. The womā toyful of those
newes, began some what to complaine of the griefe which
she had taken for losse of the cup, & deliuered to Dietiquo
the rosted Lamprey with the sause, betwene two platters,
who incontinently hid the same vnder his cloke, and wyth
so much speede as he could, went to seeke out his compani-

an

on Liello, and their countrimen, which all that while had taried for him. And God knoweth whether those good fellowes did laugh and mocke the poore Doctor and his wife or not. And when she had made herself gay and trimme to go eate part of the Lamprey, as she was going out she met Maister Florien lookinge lowringlie vppon the matter, to whom she said (smiling like a frumenty pot) how now sir, come they hither to dinner? I haue sent you that Lamprey ready dressed. Then Maister Doctor after faire talke, beganne to discharge his double Cānons, calling his wyfe, Whore, bitch and beaste, and vnderstandinge that he was twice begiled and could not tell by whom, for spite & despayre he tare of his beard and the heare of head. Which bruted and knowen in the Citie, the Iesters and pleasaunt felowes bent themselues, to laugh and deuise pastime at the poore begiled Doctour and his wyfe.

FINIS.

A briefe rehearſall of the Argumentes of euery Nouell conteyned in this firſt Tome of the Palace of Pleaſure.

THe Romaines and Albanes beinge at warres, for iniuries mutually inferred. Metius Suffetius, ꝑ Albane Captaine, deuiſeth a way by a combate to ioyne both ꝯ Cities in one. Victorie falling to the Romaines, the Romaine victor kil leth his ſiſter, who notwꝫſtanding is condempned to die. Afterwards vppon his fathers ſute he is deliuered.

The firſt Nouel. Folio 1.

¶ Sextus Tarquinius rauiſheth Lucrece who bewayling the loſſe of her chaſtitie killeth herſelfe.

The ij. Nouel. Folio. 5.

¶ The ſiege of Rome by Porſenna, and the valiaunt deliuery thereof by Mutius Scæuola.

The iij. Nouell. Folio 7.

¶ Martius Coriolanus going about to repreſſe the common people of Rome by dearth of corne, was baniſhed. For reuenge whereof, he perſwaded Accius Tullius, king of the Volſciãs to make warres vppon the Romaynes, and hee himſelfe in their ayde, came in his owne perſon. The Citie brought to great miſerie t he fathers deuiſed meanes to deliuer the ſame, and ſente into the Volſcian Campe, the mother, the wyfe and children of Coriolanus, vppon whoſe complaints Coriolanus withdrewe the Volſcians. And the Citie was reduced to quietneſſe.

The iiij. Nouell. 9.

¶ Appius Claudius one of the Decemuiri of Rome, goeth aboute to rauiſhe Virginia a yonge maiden, which indeuor of Appius when her father Virginius vnderſtoode, being then in the warres he repaired home to reſcue his daughter. One that was betrouthed vnto her, claimed her, whereuppon roſe great contencion. In the end her owne father, to ſaue the honor of his ſtock, killed her with a Butchers knife, & commeth into the Forum, cryinge vengeãce vppon Appius. Then after much contencion and rebelliõ, the Decemuiri were depoſed.

The v. Nouell. 12.

Candaules

¶ Candaules king of Lydia, shewing the secretes of his wiues beautie, to Gyges one of the Guarde: was by counsaile of his wyfe, slaine by the sayde Gyges, and depriued al his kingdome.
The vj. Nouell. 18.

¶ Kinge Cræsus of Lydia reasoneth wyth the wyse man Solon of the happie life of man. Who litle esteeming his good aduise, vnderstode before his death that no man (but by vertue) can in his life attaine felicitie.
The vij. Nouell. 20.

¶ Of a father that made sute, to haue his owne sonne put to death.
The viij Nouell. 22.

¶ Water offered of good will to Artaxerxes the king of Persia, and the liberall reward of the king, to the giuer.
The ix. Nouell. 23

¶ The loue of Chariton and Menalippus.
The x. Nouell. 24.

¶ Kinge Cyrus perswaded by Araspas, to dispose himselfe to loue a Lady called Panthea, entreth into a prette disputacion and talke, of Loue and beautie. Afterwards Araspas himself falleth in loue wyth the sayd Lady, but she indued with great chastitie, auoydeth his earnest loue. And when her husband was slaine in the seruice of Cyrus, she killed herselfe.
The xj. Nouell. 25

¶ Abdolominus is from poore estate, aduaunced by Alexander the great, through his honest life to be king of Sydone.
The xij. Nouell. 31.

¶ The Oracion of the Scythian Ambassadours to Alexander the great, reproouing his ambicion, and desire of Empire.
The xiij Nouell. 32

¶ The wordes of Metellus of Mariage, and wyuinge, wyth ꝯ praise and dispraise of the same.
The xiiij. Nouell. 34.

¶ Of Lais and Demosthenes. The xv. Nouell. 35

¶ C. Fabritius and AEmilius Consulles of Rome, beinge promised that kinge Pyrrhus for a somme of money shoulde bee slaine (whoe was a notable ennemye to the Romaine state) aduertised Pyrrhus thereof by letters, and of ther notable thinges, done by the same Fabritius.
The xvi. Nouell. 36.

¶ A Scholemaister, trayterously rendring the noble mennes sonnes

of Faleria, to the hands of Camillus, was well acquited & rewarded, for his paynes and labour.

The xvij. Nouell. 37.

¶ The hiſtorie of Papirius Pretextatus.

The xviij. Nouell. 38.

¶ How Plutarche did beate his man. And of prette talke touchinge ſignes of anger. The xix. Nouell. 39

¶ A prette tale of AEſope, of the Larke.

The xx. Nouell. 40.

¶ A mery teſt vttered by Hanniball to king Antiochus.

The xxj. Nouell. 41.

¶ The marueylous knowledge of a Lion being acquainted with a man called Androdus. The xxij. Nouell. 41.

¶ A proper diſputacion of ỹ Philoſopher Phauorinus, to perſwade a woman, not to put forth her child to Nurſe, but to nouriſh it her ſelfe with her owne milke.

The xxiij. Nouell. 42.

¶ Of Sertorius a noble Romaine Captaine.

The xxiiij. Nouell. 45.

¶ Of the bookes of Sybilla. The xxv. Nouell. 46.

¶ A difference and controuerſie betwene a Maſter and a Scholer, ſo ſubtil, that the Judges could not giue ſentence.

The xxvj. Nouell 47.

¶ Seleucus King of Aſia, gaue his wyfe to his own ſonne in marriage, beinge his mother in lawe: Who ſo feruently did loue her, ỹ hee was like to die. Whiche by a diſcreete and wyſe inuencion was diſcouered to Seleucus by a Phiſicion.

The xxvij Nouell. p. 54. 48.

¶ Of the ſtraunge and beaſtly nature of Timon of Athens enemy to mankind, with his death, buriall and Epitaph.

Tge xxviij. Nouell. 54.

¶ The mariage of a man and woman, he beinge the huſbande of xx. wiues: and ſhe the wyfe of xxii. huſbands.

The xxix. Nouell. 55.

¶ Howe Melchiſedech a Jewe, by telling a prette tale of three Ringes, ſaued his life.

The xxx. Nouell. 56.

¶ One called Guglielmo Borſiere vnto certaine wordes well placed, taunted the couetous life of Ermino Grimaldi.

The xxxj. Nouell. 57.

¶ Maiſter

¶ Maister Alberto of Bologna by a pleasaunte aunsweare, made a Gentlewoman to blushe, which had thought to haue put him out of countenaunce, in telling hym that he was in loue wyth her.
The xxxij. Nouell. 58.

¶ Rinaldo of Asti beyng robbed, arriued at Castell Guglielmo and was succoured by a widow: and restored to hys losses, retourning safe home to hys owne house.
The xxxiij. Nouell. 60.

¶ Three yong men hauing fondely consumed all ỹ they had, became very poore, whose nephew (as he retourned out of Englande into Italye, by the waye) fell in acquaintaunce with an Abbot, whom (vpon further familiaritie) he knew to be the kinge of Englands daughter, whych toke him to her husband. Afterwards she restored his vncles to all theyr losses, and sent them home in good state and reputacion The xxxiiij. Nouell 63.

¶ Landolfo Ruffolo being impouerished: became a Pirate, and take by the Geneuois, was in daunger of drowninge, who sauing himselfe vppon a little Coafer full of rich Jewelles, was receaued at Corfu, and being cherished by a woman, retorned home very rich.
The xxxv. Nouell 68.

¶ Andreuccio of Perugia being come to Naples, to buy horse, was in one night surprised, with three marueylous accidents. All which hauinge escaped, wyth one Rubie he retorned home to his house.
The xxxvj. Nouell. 71.

¶ The Earle of Angiers beyng falsely accused, was banished out of Fraunce, and lefte hys two sonnes in sondry places in Englande, and retourning (vnknowen) by Scotland, founde them in greate authoritie, afterwardes he repayred in the habite of a seruaunt to the French kings army, and being knowen to be innocent, was againe aduaunced to his first estate.
The xxxvij. Nouell 78.

¶ Giletta a Phisitians daughter of Narbona, healed the Frenche king of a Fistula, for reward whereof, she demaunded Beltramo, Cõtie of Rosiglione to husband. The Cũtie being marted against his wyll, for despite fledde to Florence, and loued an other. Giletta, his wyfe, by policie found meanes to lye wyth her husbãd in place of his Louer, and was begottẽ wyth child tõ two sonnes. Which knowen to her husband, he receyued her againe, and afterwards shee liued in great honor and felicitye.
The xxxviij. Nouell 87.

¶ Tancredi Prince of Salerne caused his doughters louer to be slain and sent his harte vnto her in a cup of Golde: which afterwardes she put into poysoned water, and drinking thereof dyed.

The xxxix. Nouell Folio 92.

¶ Mahomet one of the Turkishe Emperours, executeth cursed crueltie vppon a Greeke mayden, whom he toke prisoner at the winning of Constantinople.

The xl. Nouell 98.

¶ A Ladye falsely accused of adultrye, was condempned to be deuoured of Lions, the maner of her deliuery, and how (her innocencie being knowen) her accuser felt the paine for her prepared.

The xlj. Nouell 103.

¶ Didaco a Spaniard is in loue with a poore Mayden of Valentia, and secretly marieth her, afterwards lothinge his firste mariage, because shee was of base parentage, hee maryeth another of noble birth. His first wyfe by secreete messenger prayeth his company, whose request he accõplisheth. Being a bed, she & her maide killeth him. She throweth him into the streat. She in desperate wise cõfesseth the fact before the Maiestrates, and is put to death.

The xlij Nouell 114.

¶ Wantones and pleasaunte life being guides of Insolencie, dothe bringe a miserable ende to a fayre Ladye of Thurin, whom a noble man aduaunced to highe estate. Wherin he executeth great cruelty vppon his sayd Lady taken in adulterie.

The xliij. Nouell. 127

¶ The loue of Alerane of Saxon, and of Adelasia the daughter of the Emperour Otho the third of that name. Their flight and departure into Italy, & how they were knowen againe, and what noble houses of Italy descended of their race.

The xliiij. Nouell- 132.

¶ The Duchesse of Sauoye being the king of Englands sister, was in the Duke her husbãds absence, vniustly accused of adultrie: by a noble man, his Lieutenaunt. And should haue bin put to death, if by ỹ prowesse and valiaunt cumbate of Don Iohn di Mendozza (a Gentleman of Spaine) she had not bin deliuered. With a discourse of maruellous accidents, touching the same, to the singuler prayse and commendacion of chaste and honest Ladies.

The xlv. Nouell 153.

¶ A king of Englande, loued the doughter of one of his noble men, which was Cõtesse of Salesburie, who after great sute to achieue

that

that he could not winne, for the intire loue he bare her, & her great constancie, made her his Queene and wyfe.

The xlvj. Nouell Folio 182.

¶ A Gentlemã called Galgano lõg time made ſute to Madonna Minoccia, her huſbãd (not knowing the ſame) diuers times prayſed and commended the ſayd Gentlemã to his Lady: by reaſon wherof in the abſence of her huſband, ſhee ſente for him and yelded herſelf vnto him, telling him what good words her huſband had ſpoken of him, for recompence wherof, he refuſed to diſhonor her.

The xlvij. Nouell 199.

¶ Bindo a notable Architect, and his ſonne Ricciardo wyth all his family, from Florence, came to dwel at Venice, where being made Citizẽs for diuers monumẽts by them erected there, through his inordinate expences was forced to rob the Treaſure houſe. Bindo being ſlaine by a pollicie deuiſed by the Duke and the ſtate, Ricciardo by fine ſubtelties deliuereth himſelfe from foure daungers. Afterwards the Duke by his owne confeſſion) vnderſtandinge ẏ ſleight, giueth him his pardon and his doughter in mariage.

The xlviij. Nouell 202.

¶ Philenio Siſterno a Scholer of Bologna being mocked of 3. faire Gentlewomen at a banket made of ſet purpoſe, was reuenged vpon them all. The xlix. Nouell. 208.

¶ The pitious and chaſte death of one of the Muliters wiues of the Queene of Nauarre. The L Nouell. 214

¶ A king of Naples abuſing a Gentlemans wyfe, in ẏ end did wear the hornes himſelf. The Li. Nouell. 216

¶ The raſhe enterpriſe of a Gentleman againſt a Princeſſe of Flãders, and of the damage and ſhame that he receaued thereof.

The Lij. Nouell. 219.

¶ The loue of Amadour and Florinda, wherein be contayned many ſleightes and diſſimulations together with the renowmed chaſtitie of the ſayd Florinda.

The Liij Nouell. 223

¶ The incontinencie of a Duke and of his impudencie.

The Liiij. Nouell. 240.

¶ One of the French kinges called Fraunces the firſt of that name declared his gẽtle nature to Counte Guillaume, that would haue killed him. The Lv. Nouell. 243.

¶ A pleaſaunt diſcourſe of a great Lord to enioye a Gentlewoman of Pampelunæ. The Lvj. Nouell. 245.

¶ pu-